

Chapter 1001 - Sect Leader Yao and Mr. Nie

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The beautiful demoness with three fox tails had the bloodline of both the divine fox clan and human race. She was the sect leader of the Tianluo Sect, Yao Ji.

The Tianluo Sect was one of the top sects of the Evil Way in Tiantai State. They had more than one million disciples and were spread among the 36 counties.

Yao Ji naturally had extraordinary tactics to be able to sit in the sect leader seat. She wasn't anyone average. She may look young, but she'd actually lived for 300 years. She was from the same era as Ling Feiyu.

Whoosh—

White saintly light shimmered on Yao Ji. It formed rings of waves that rippled outward. Her broken tail soon regrew. However, the new one was half the length of the other two tails.

“Zhang Ruochen, I appreciated you and wanted to invite you into the Tianluo Sect. I didn't expect you to be so cruel and break my tail. In this case, I'll have to dig out your heart as compensation.”

Yao Ji was out for blood, but her beautiful features still carried a charming smile. Her red lips curled upward and white lotus-like arms reached out. She looked extraordinarily tender.

A faint yet abnormal fragrance surged from her and moved out. It smelled like peach blossoms.

With one whiff, ambiguous and lustful scenes appeared in Zhang Ruochen's mind. He couldn't control his body and he grew hotter as if he'd swallowed a strong sex drug.

He immediately held his breath and sealed all his pores. Even so, his expression still turned dazed and his footsteps slowed down. Finally, he stopped completely and stared at Yao Ji, mesmerized.

“Hehe.” Yao Ji smiled proudly after seeing that Zhang Ruochen was enchanted. She stepped forward gracefully. Smiling, she murmured to herself, “Little boy, you thought that I used medicine to enchant you, but it's actually to mislead you. What I actually used is a hallucination. Even if your combat ability is in the Saint Realm, your Spiritual Energy still can't be compared to a Saint. How can you counter the hallucination's spiritual attack?”

Yao Ji's attainment in hallucinations actually wasn't very strong. She'd only cultivated with a Hallucination Saint for three months and then studied by herself with books.

Her Spiritual Energy was only at the 47th level. She hadn't reached the level of a Spiritual Saint. Of course, her Spiritual Energy was still much higher than a martial Saint.

With her Saint Realm cultivation and attainments in hallucinations, a typical person below the Saint Realm didn't dare to offend her.

Yao Ji's skin was translucent like snow. Her five fingers, slender and soft, touched Zhang Ruochen's neck and ran down to his heart.

Zhang Ruochen's body is very strong—strong enough to be compared with the nine Heirs. If I eat his heart, it can possibly help me cultivate a fourth tail and improve my cultivation.

Excited, she licked her lips and her eyes gradually turned red. Her jade-like fingers sharpened into claws.

“Sect Leader Yao, you're indeed powerful. That Zhang Ruochen killed two Demonic Sect Saints in a row, but you could take him easily. I am impressed.”

An ancient voice came from the distance. Black Death Qi surged from the forest.

An elder with red light in his face walked out of the Death Qi. He wore a loose gray robe and emanated with a disgusting smell.

At the same time, four seven-meter-tall skeletons followed him out of the forest. The skeletons were very heavy. They were casually standing on the ground, but their feet were buried in the dirt.

A cold aura came out of them, causing the grass to wither. Some yellowed while others turned black.

Seeing the elder and four skeletons, Yao Ji immediately grew guarded. She continued to maintain the hallucination but didn't dig out Zhang Ruochen's heart immediately.

Yao Ji flashed to behind Zhang Ruochen while giggling. "Oh, it's Mr. Nie from the Ancient Necromancer Race. I didn't think that you would be in Tiantai State too. However, I captured Zhang Ruochen first. I'm sure Mr. Nie won't fight with me, right?"

Mr. Nie chuckled. "Zhang Ruochen has two saintly sources, one Heir Stamp, and one Thousand-pattern Saint Weapon. He might even have the Taotian Sword and sarira that he hasn't shown yet. Can Sect Leader Yao and the Tianluo Sect take it all?"

Yao Ji's thin purple robe danced in the wind, showing two slender legs. She smiled charmingly. "Naturally, yes. No need for you to worry. The Tianluo Sect is part of the Black Market. Even if the Ancient Necromancer Race is filled with strong cultivators, I won't be afraid."

Mr. Nie's eyes turned cold. Taking out a wooden cane, he held it in his left hand and waved it lightly. The Spiritual Qi in the sky shook violently.

"We of the Ancient Necromancer Race do not wish to become enemies with the Black Market nor offend a Saint. However, I must have Zhang Ruochen and am willing to fight. I should be able to make you give up on Zhang Ruochen with this cane

made out of ten thousand-year-old Serene Heart Wood and four Saint Battle Skeleton Kings, right?”

The Serene Heart Wood could counter hallucinations. With this cane, Mr. Nie didn't fear Yao Ji's hallucination at all. If Yao Ji could only use her martial power, she clearly wasn't Mr. Nie's match.

With the addition of the four Saint Battle Skeleton Kings, Mr. Nie had a 70 percent chance of killing Yao Ji.

Defeating a Saint and killing a Saint were two entirely different concepts.

Earlier, Zhang Ruochen could kill the two Demonic Sect Saints because they'd miscalculated his abilities. They'd died without understanding why. If they knew Zhang Ruochen's true abilities and were more careful, Zhang Ruochen wouldn't have been able to kill them at all.

This was why it had shocked the Evil Way Saints so much that Zhang Ruochen had killed two.

A Saint had to have a big difference in cultivation to kill another Saint. Of course, three or four Saints working together could also kill another Saint.

Now, Mr. Nie had the ability to kill Yao Ji. This was a powerful threat. He believed that Yao Ji would definitely surrender.

How could a powerful Saint risk their life like this?

Yao Ji chuckled. “If I'd come alone, I would definitely surrender. However, I have a powerful helper today who can fight with you. Zhang Ruochen, go kill Mr. Nie.”

Whoosh.

Like a puppet, Zhang Ruochen raised the Abyss Ancient Sword and rushed out. He was so fast that the air popped and formed a pillar of Qi.

In an instant, Zhang Ruochen and Mr. Nie were only 300 feet apart. Like a ricocheting cannonball, Zhang Ruochen brought the sword down.

The sword's clang hurt both Mr. Nie and Yao Ji's eardrums.

Mr. Nie immediately activated his Holy Qi and inserted it into the Serene Heart Cane. Controlling the Spiritual Qi within a radius of thousands of miles, he blocked upward.

Dark green saint clouds flooded out of the cane. They formed a shield, interwoven with gold lines.

Boom.

The Abyss Ancient Sword and Serene Heart Cane crashed. The shockwave forced the four Saint Battle Skeleton Kings a mile back.

Mr. Nie's feet kept sinking into the ground. With a boom, he actually created a canyon. Yellow dirt shot into the air.

Zhang Ruochen held the ancient black sword. He stood in the air with his long hair flying. He radiated with an aggressive aura.

“Cough... What a powerful kid...”

Mr. Nie's body rushed out of the smoking canyon like a black dot. He stood on the broken ground. The arm holding the Serene Heart Cane shook uncontrollably.

Right now, his eyes were in shock. He finally realized that Zhang Ruochen hadn't killed the two Saints only because they'd underestimated him. He was truly terrifying.

Yao Ji's eyes also gleamed, feeling surprised. Zhang Ruochen's combat abilities seemed to be beyond her expectations.

“I'm a bit tempted. I really don't want to kill you now. If only I could keep controlling you with the hallucination.”

Yao Ji knew that she was dreaming. Someone like Zhang Ruochen was destined to be extraordinary. With her hallucination skills, she could control him for now but not for a lifetime.

When Zhang Ruochen escaped from her control, it would be her time to die. Thus, Zhang Ruochen had to die.

Of course, she had to use him to kill Mr. Nie first.

With a cruel and heartless expression, Yao Ji turned into a purple streak and attacked the four Saint Battle Skeleton Kings. If she could destroy them, Mr. Nie would lose four strong helpers. Then he'd have to retreat and not compete with her for Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen subtly glanced at Yao Ji. His lips curled a tiny bit.

Yao Ji's hallucination spell was indeed powerful, but Zhang Ruochen's Spiritual Energy wasn't weak. He was only a bit weaker than she was.

Earlier, Zhang Ruochen had only lost his mind for a bit. Then he'd recovered and pretended to be enchanted. This was to make Yao Ji lower her guard so he could kill her with one strike.

If Zhang Ruochen had acted, Yao Ji would have followed the other two Saints and lost her life to this ground long before Mr. Nie had arrived. However, Zhang Ruochen didn't attack because he'd discovered Mr. Nie was approaching.

Otherwise, he may possibly be surrounded by Mr. Nie and the four Skeleton Kings now. He would be in a dangerous and passive situation.

It was different now. The control was in Zhang Ruochen's hands.

It'll be two hours in 15 minutes. I must kill Mr. Nie quickly and then kill Yao Ji.

Sharp light flashed past Zhang Ruochen's eyes. His arm shook and he stabbed his sword forward.

His sword had become one with his body. As a streak of light, it fell from the sky, aiming at Mr. Nie's head. Three rings of brilliant Sword Qi formed.

At the center of the three rings was a beam of bright light. It blinded Mr. Nie's eyes as he called out, "Is it Sword Three?"

Chapter 1002 - The Return of the Immortal Vampires

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen's last move had reached the state of Sword Three.

The power of Sword Three, which was displayed by a saint, was surely very different from the rest.

Mr. Nie threw the Saint Meditation Cane upwards, and the wood-elemental power gushed out from it to become a blurring shadow of a towering old tree.

Clank.

It was the shadow of the Saint Thousand-Years Meditation Tree, shaking the space slightly with the power of life, tenacity and destruction. Ripples were seen.

That's right.

The space was shaking.

The power of a saint was strong enough to break the Rules of the Heaven and the Earth, which naturally could affect the stability of the space.

When the power of a saint was strong enough, he might even be able to shatter the space.

The reason why Mr. Nie had used his whole strength to ripple the space was that he wanted to suppress Zhang Ruochen's power of space.

Once the space was disturbed, even the Time and Space Descendant would find it hard to control the power of space,

and could even be hurt by it.

Boom. The Saint Meditation Cane hit hard on the Abyss Ancient Sword.

The blurring shadow of the towering saint tree shattered all of the sword Qi. Both Mr. Nie and Zhang Ruochen retreated several kilometers away simultaneously.

Mr. Nie rubbed his beard and laughed. “Zhang Ruochen, I have suppressed your power of space. What can you do now? Young man, you have no idea of the real power of a saint.”

Zoom.

Mr. Nie grabbed and wielded his Saint Meditation Cane. The giant blurring shadow of the saint tree swayed with it, slightly shaking the space within several kilometers again.

The giant blurring shadow of the saint tree brought about a deafening sound of wind and thunder. And it pressed down to cover Zhang Ruochen up like a green divine cloud.

The Saint Meditation Cane was a treasure on the Hundred-pattern Saint Weapon List. Its power could compare with a Thousand-pattern Saint Weapon. Such a powerful weapon used by a saint could erase everything in an expansion of several kilometers.

Yao Ji looked at Zhang Ruochen with concern. The cultivation of Mr. Nie was beyond her expectations.

“Zhang Ruochen, hang in there. As long as I can suppress the four Saint Battle Skeleton Kings, we will still win.”

Yao Ji accelerated her attack. She used a Saint Spell on a Saint Battle Skeleton King and pushed it into the earth. As most of its bones melted, it could no longer fight.

The four Saint Battle Skeleton Kings were all puppets made of saints' corpses, which could be controlled by rune scrolls and inscriptions.

Although they only had 10% to 50% the strength of a real saint, they were troublesome. Ordinary attacks could not destroy them.

Now, Yao Ji was impatient. If Zhang Ruochen failed to defend himself from Mr. Nie's attack, and was killed first, she would be put in great danger.

Zhang Ruochen appeared to be calm, facing the attack of the saint tree's blurring shadow. He used his Eye of the Deity Print to find several spots where the space shook the least.

With a flash, Zhang Ruochen used the Spatial Move to move seven times in a row. Each time he had landed on a spot where the space shook the least.

When he moved for the sixth time, he crossed the blurring shadow of the saint tree to appear on the top of Mr. Nie's head.

When he moved for the seventh time, he entered the Saint Soul Territory of Mr. Nie. With a fizz, he stabbed his heart.

The bright red saint blood gushed out from Mr. Nie's heart with the burning flame.

Zhang Ruochen stared at Mr. Nie's old face closely, and said in a low voice, "You have no idea the real strength of the Time and Space Descendant, either."

"You...did not...lose your mind..."

Mr. Nie enlarged his pupils and finally came to the realization that Zhang Ruochen had never been controlled by Yao Ji. He was awake the whole time.

Mr. Nie had warned himself that he would not make the same mistake made by the two saints of the Demonic Sect. He would not underestimate Zhang Ruochen.

But now he realized that he had.

Mr. Nie shouldn't blame himself, since anyone else would have made the same mistake.

Although Zhang Ruochen would not look down on his opponents, he would also have different mind states fighting a Ninth Level Half-Saint from fighting a First Change of the Fish-Dragon Realm monk.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen sensed a dangerous strand of Qi gushing from Mr. Nie.

“Is he going to implode his Saintly Source?”

Zhang Ruochen’s whole body broke out with goosebumps. He pulled the Abyss Ancient Sword back.

If Mr. Nie did implode his Saintly Source, the area of dozens of kilometers around would be totally destroyed.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t need to escape. There would be no time for him to open the Scroll World, not to mention to run away. He had no chance of survival.

But Mr. Nie obviously didn’t have the courage to implode his Saintly Source. He just concealed the meridian to his heart and made a handprint to throw Zhang Ruochen back for hundreds of meters.

Then Mr. Nie flew backwards. He used a secret escaping spell and flew away at a speed five times as fast as his original one. Within a blink, he had disappeared from the horizon.

Zhang Ruochen pressed his splitting and pained chest. A little blood came out from his mouth. “The life of a saint is really strong. I have crushed his heart, and yet he lives. I have to keep this in mind, otherwise it will be dangerous for me.”

And the escaping spell surprised Zhang Ruochen as well. The speed must have become several times faster than before. Even a person with ten times his cultivation would fail to catch up with him.

Such a secret escaping spell would surely cost greatly. He wouldn’t have used it unless it was necessary.

It’s really hard to kill a saint, Zhang Ruochen said to himself.

Saints were strong living creatures. Even if their heads were chopped off, they might still survive. And most saints were also masters of escaping spells. Even if they couldn’t defeat their rivals, they would still be able to run for their lives.

More importantly, saints could threaten to implode their own Saintly Sources. If the saints weren’t killed with one strike, their opponents would fear that they had to die together.

It was lucky of Zhang Ruochen to have killed two saints of the Demonic Sect. With such a record, he would be valued by all

saints in the world.

As Mr. Nie escaped with the severe wound, the other two Saint Battle Skeleton Kings, other than the two which had been disposed of by Yao Ji, retreated as well. They rushed into the woods with deadly Qi.

Yao Ji didn't chase them, but stared at the young man who was holding a sword with admiration. The more she looked at him, the handsomer he became, and the less she wanted to kill him.

If such a powerful talent could listen to her words, Tianluo Sect would have become one of the most influential sects in Tiantai State in less than 100 years.

Why not make him her man?

But it was all imagination. Yao Ji didn't think that she was able to control Zhang Ruochen forever.

“Zhang Ruochen, Zhang Ruochen! I do like you more and more. I hate it that I have to kill you. But you are a rare talent. I'm afraid I can't control you in the future. You don't look like a man who doesn't hurt women. If you killed me in the future, whom would I complain to?”

A soft finger of Yao Ji rubbed Zhang Ruochen's jaw gently. Her eyes gradually turned red. She stopped smiling and put on a cold face.

She pinched her hand into a claw to cause a whirlpool of Qi, and was going to grab Zhang Ruochen's heart.

Zoom.

All of a sudden, the still Zhang Ruochen stabbed her before she could reach him.

The Ancient Abyss Sword was sharp enough to have penetrated the palm of Yao Ji.

“Since you know that I'm a man who hurts woman, you should have left me alone.”

Zhang Ruochen moved his finger, and the Ancient Abyss Sword rotated quickly with it. It gave out black blades and chopped up Yao Ji's right arm.

“You weren’t controlled by my enchantment!”

Shock appeared on Yao Ji’s beautiful face. She activated her escaping spell immediately to become a strand of dim purple light, wanting to run away.

“Wanna run away?” Zhang Ruochen shouted.

“Four Changes of Scale One.”

The burst of the Scales Sword Technique slowed down the speed of time in the surrounding space.

But the speed of Zhang Ruochen’s sword move went up. With a long and blinding Qi of blade, it chopped Yao Ji who was flying in midair.

Fizz.

Saint blood fell from the sky.

Yao Ji moaned. Three snow-white fox tails fell as well.

“Zhang Ruochen, you cut off three of my tails today. I will make you pay more in the future!” The voice of Yao Ji was heard from hundreds of kilometers away.

“The escaping speed is quick.”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t reply to her. He used his moves to arrive at the top of the snow mountain. Then he carried the stone beauty, who was in the Shooting Star Invisible Cloak, on his back and rushed away.

Closer to the two hours’ due, Zhang Ruochen felt clearly that his power was gradually fading away.

He must run away immediately to somewhere safe.

Zhang Ruochen believed that, with his last fight and inflicting heavy losses on Mr. Nie and Yao Ji, the saint of the Evil Way in the Black Market wouldn’t dare to catch up with him in a short time.

Yao Ji stood at the side of a stream with no tails. Her bottom was full of blood. As a powerful saint, and the Sect Founder, she felt somewhat pathetic and ashamed.

She looked at the way where Zhang Ruochen gone. Anger appeared on her pretty face. “What a hateful person! One day I will eat your heart.”

Then she stuck her tongue out to lick her crystal-clear and red lips.

Then Yao Ji sniffed the smell of blood. Her pretty face lost color. She looked up to the sky and found it had become totally bloody red.

Vast blood clouds flew over the sky. The scary Qi made her shudder.

They were after Zhang Ruochen.

“It’s the Blood King of the Immortal Vampires. No, there is more than one.”

Yao Ji took out an Invisible Bead to conceal herself. After the blood clouds went by, she walked out again and sighed, “The Blood Kings must have come for the Taotian Sword. I’m afraid Zhang Ruochen won’t survive today.”

Chapter 1003 - Met an Old Friend in a New Place

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The rain had stopped.

But the clouds were still in the dark sky. And it was a little cold.

Zhang Ruochen's power dispersed quickly, and the Buddhist Light died out. He soon fell back to the state of a Fourth Level Half-Saint.

In addition, a strong feeling of exhaustion passed on to his whole body. All the Holy Qi in his lower abdomen and meridians disappeared in just one second.

Zoom.

Zhang Ruochen couldn't go on flying anymore. He landed slowly from midair at the bank of an old wide river, carrying the stone beauty.

The old river was wide and misty. Water flowed slowly but smoothly in it. It was hard to see the opposite bank, as if it was a sea.

Zhang Ruochen's legs started to shake. It was hard for him to support himself.

The exhaustion and his wounds almost pressed him down on the ground.

Now, a soldier at the Heavenly Realm would have probably beaten him, not to mention powerful saints.

Luckily, the saints of the Evil Ways in the Black Market didn't catch up with him. Otherwise, Zhang Ruochen would hardly survive.

“Put me down! No saints are after us. You are in a bad condition. If you don't treat yourself quickly, you might be left with incurable chronic diseases,” the stone beauty said attentively and softly with concern.

Zhang Ruochen was surprised. He put her down and observed her eyes closely.

Her eyes were no longer dark and vague like a stone statue, but expressed some human kindness like a lively beauty.

To be accurate, the stone beauty had changed slightly when they left the Black Market.

But Zhang Ruochen was then occupied by the fights with the elder from the Qi Family of the Demonic Sect and the saints of the Evil Ways in the Black Market, so he didn't have the time to ask.

“You've recovered your will?” Zhang Ruochen's face lit up.

The stone beauty's eyes were like still water. She stared at Zhang Ruochen directly and shook her head. She fell into silence. It seemed that she was thinking about something, or comprehending something. But her eyes turned dumb gradually.

Zhang Ruochen worried that she might turn into a cold and silent stone beauty, so he said immediately, “I don't think that we are out of trouble. We have to keep moving. The further, the better.”

The stone beauty stared at Zhang Ruochen with concern. She said, “You are severely wounded. You'd better stop and have a rest.”

Zhang Ruochen was severely wounded indeed. His face had lost color, like an ordinary patient beyond recovery.

Besides, as he had used up the power of the Third Seal of the sarira, he was weakened even more. He could hardly stop himself from falling down.

The stone beauty had to help him, so that he wouldn't fall down on the ground.

Zhang Ruochen took in a Withered Pill. Before he could begin to refine it, all of a sudden, he raised up his head and looked at the sky. He said gloomily, "It's...the army of the Immortal Vampires..."

The bright red color appeared on the horizon. A bloody cloud rolled in, carrying a scary Qi with it.

It was not just one Immortal Vampire. It was an army, which might have come for the Taotian Sword.

Zhang Ruochen planned to call the Elephant-swallowing Rabbit out from the Scroll World to take them away, but now it seemed needless.

There were more than one Saint Blood King in the army of the Immortal Vampires.

Elephant-swallowing Rabbit's speed was the top among the Half-Saints, but was thousands of times slower than that of the Saint Blood Kings.

Even if they could hide in the Scroll World, the Saint Blood Kings would find the Universe Spiritual Map by tracing Zhang Ruochen's Qi.

Once the Universe Spiritual Map fell into the hands of the Immortal Vampires, things would become worse.

Zhang Ruochen thought that he had never been put in a deadlier situation before. Dangerous as they might have been, he always had a way out. But now, he had no way out.

Zhang Ruochen appeared to be calm. He smiled and gave a stare at the stone beauty. He said, "We will die today, one way or the other. How about we make something big before we die?"

"What do you mean?" The stone beauty wondered.

Zhang Ruochen said, "Although you've lost all your cultivation, you still have the Saintly Source inside your body. I can give you a hand to explode it. Then we can die together with the Immortal Vampires. I look forward to seeing how

powerful the explosion of a Sword Saint's Saintly Source can be."

The Stone Beauty softened her eyes, and nodded in agreement.

But an elegant female voice was heard from the riverside nearby. "Junior Brother Zhang, will you get on the boat for a talk?"

Zhang Ruochen looked to the old river, and saw a green wooden boat, which was more than 30 meters long, stopping beside the bank.

An elegant and refined woman in white stood at the bow like a Fairy Lingbo, making people feel like they were in fairy land.

Zhang Ruochen was a little lost and a little surprised. He said, "Senior Sister Apprentice Luo, what are you doing here in the Central Region?"

The woman on the boat was Luo Shuihan. She, Huang Yanchen and Mu Lingxi together were called the "Three Demons in the West Yard."

But Zhang Ruochen had left the Eastern Region Saint Academy later and went on a different path to the saint state, so he hadn't seen Luo Shuihan in years.

He never thought that they would ever meet again in this life, and yet he ran into her in such a special situation.

To Zhang Ruochen's surprise, Luo Shuihan had reached the state of Half-Saint. She didn't fall back.

While they were back in the Eastern Region Saint Academy, Luo Shuihan was the best student. Her talent was above that of Huang Yanchen or Mu Lingxi.

And, like Zhang Ruochen, her body kept building up and making progress, as if she had unlimited potential.

Her adventures in the recent years might compare with Mu Lingxi and Huang Yanchen. Her being a Half-Saint at such a young age was the best proof of it.

Luo Shuihan was still like graceful poetry or drawings. She said, "I'm here for both of you. Or I should say, it's the other

person on the boat who would like to meet you.”

“Us?”

Zhang Ruochen wondered who should have connections with both him and Ling Feiyu.

Zhang Ruochen wanted to tell Luo Shuihan that an army of the Immortal Vampires was coming this way, and they should run away.

But since he could see them coming with his poor state, how could Luo Shuihan miss it?

Why was she still calm?

Could it be...?

Zhang Ruochen looked at the inside of the green boat, and made a wild guess.

Could it be that he was in the boat?

Zhang Ruochen and the stone beauty got on the boat, and entered the cabin under Luo Shuihan’s guidance.

In the cabin, there was a monk in green robes, who was around the age of 30, and an old man, whose hair was half white and half black.

A scroll was placed on the table before them both, which was drawn with Chinese ink. It’s hard to tell what the drawing was about.

The looks of the monk in green robes was average. But he looked clean and neatly dressed. Each of his hairs was combed in place.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen and the stone beauty walking inside, the two men stopped talking about the drawing and raised their heads.

But the monk in green robes looked at Zhang Ruochen first.

And the old man with half white hair and half black hair stared at the stone beauty with curiosity.

The monk in green robes smiled and said, “I had heard from Shuihan that a rare talent born in the Yunwu Commandery of

Heavenly Devil Mountain was in the Eastern Region Saint Academy, so I wanted to meet you. But I worried that the Principal Xuanji would mistake my intention for attempting to steal his student, so I waited. I didn't know that so many things could happen, and that I wouldn't see you until today.”

Zhang Ruochen had a guess of the monk in green robes' identity, so he held his fists and bowed. “Greetings, my elder.”

The old man now stared at Zhang Ruochen as well, and said, “No wonder the Empress commanded your capture. You, the reckless boy, are truly bold to have killed two saints of the Demonic Way in a row. If you keep messing around, the already disordered Kunlun's Field would have more uprisings.”

Zhang Ruochen started to observe the old man with half white hair and half black hair.

The old man had a high spirit with a pair of flashing eyes. He appeared to be about the age of 50, not very old.

Most importantly, he was in the clothes of the Way of Confucius.

The Way of Confucius had close connections with the Imperial Court. Many outstanding scholars were officials of the court. Those great scholars and saint scholars were in high positions of the court. Some even joined the Six Ministries and the Cabinet, making policies for the First Central Empire.

If the man were truly a senior official of the government, Zhang Ruochen had to watch out.

The old man in the clothes of the Way of Confucius was unhappy that Zhang Ruochen had put on his guard. He scolded with rage, “Why do you put me on guard? I'm not with the government! I'm just a painter who draws!”

The monk in green robes stared at Zhang Ruochen, and said peacefully, “He isn't an official of government. He will not hurt you. Sit down, don't answer him.”

Before Zhang Ruochen sat down, the old man in the clothes of the Way of Confucius raised his jaw, and said proudly, “Although I'm not an official of the government, my student is

the governor of the Tiantai State. And a grand-student of mine is the new bangyan, second place at palace examinations, this year.”

Zhang Ruochen frowned and wondered, why did the old man at such an old age brag this way in front of a young man? What’s the meaning of it?

Zhang Ruochen didn’t bother to answer him. He sat down directly.

The old man in the clothes of the Way of Confucius saw Zhang Ruochen sit down, and became even more enraged. He seemed to believe that Zhang Ruochen’s status was too low to sit together with him.

Unscholarly, disrespectful, having no manners...

Were it not for the monk in green robes, maybe the old man in the clothes of the Way of Confucius would have already left in anger.

Now the monk in green robes stared at the stone beauty instead. He put on a complicated expression, and said, “Palace Ruler Ling, actually, I’m here to meet you.”

The stone beauty smiled in sorrow. “You are here to take revenge, like her?”

Zhang Ruochen put on a curious face near them. He wanted to know the past stories between these two leading figures of the Kunlun’s Field in different ages.

The old man in the clothes of the Way of Confucius also listened carefully with interest.

The monk in green robes shook his head, and said, “I know that she hates you and unleashed on you. Your mind state was hurt by the fight with Blood Emperor Qingtian. And she found you. Maybe she used the past to attack you, attempting to destroy your will, so that she could seek revenge and make you pay for what you did in the past.”

He added, “I’m here to stop her, and to tell you: I never blamed you for the past. You did nothing wrong. You don’t have to blame yourself.”

Hearing this, the look of the stone beauty changed.

Chapter 1004 - Seven Lives and Seven Deaths

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The monk in green robes and the stone beauty were talking about their mysterious past.

Zhang Ruochen listened quietly, sitting beside them.

“Thank you, Senior Sister Luo.”

Zhang Ruochen received the Zizhu Teacup passed from Luo Shuihan, and took a sip.

It was sweet. After the sip, his blood flow sped up and his whole body was refreshed.

It was no ordinary tea.

The exhaustion inside Zhang Ruochen’s body was largely alleviated. And his wounds recovered quickly.

Zhang Ruochen would have gone through at least 3 to 4 days of exhaustion, and his cultivation would have dropped to the bottom. But after he took a sip, Zhang Ruochen believed that he would pass the exhaustion period in one more day.

The old man whose hair was half white and half black stared at Zhang Ruochen, and he sneered, “The Ancient Tea of Saintly Way was taken from the ancient tea tree, which was planted by Ruzu himself. I gave it to Principal Luo as a gift. I didn’t know that you, a young boy, would have the honor to drink it!”

Zhang Ruochen regarded the old man in the scholar robes as an old fogey, who thought too highly of himself and valued his

position too much in the hierarchy of generations. Besides, he was obsessed with bragging and showing off.

Was it necessary?

But his words did shock Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen heard about the four ancient tea trees 800 years ago. They were planted by four Elders of Confucianism, who were called Ruzu. They'd lived for more than thousands of years and were extremely old.

But the Catastrophe at the end of the Middle Ages had destroyed the three of them, turning them into dust. Only one survived till today.

And few tea leaves would mature every thousand years.

Only Saints of the Way of Confucius were entitled to share a few leaves.

The old man in scholar robes claimed that he had picked the tea leaves from the tree by himself, which Zhang Ruochen found hard to believe. He thought that he was bragging, trying to present himself as the one with high prestige and universal respect.

The old man in scholar robes shook his head and sighed. "Ancient Tea of Saintly Way could help monks comprehend the Rules of Saintly Way, improve their spiritual power, stabilize their mind states and saint souls, and refine their Saintly Sources. An innocent child takes a sip, he will become a prodigy in just a second. Ancient Tea of Saintly Way works best for monks of Spiritual Power. It's really a waste to have you drink it..."

Before the old man in scholar robes could finish his words, a snap was heard inside Zhang Ruochen's body.

Then a strong strand of Spiritual Power gushed out from Zhang Ruochen's body.

Drinking the Ancient Tea of Saintly Way had helped Zhang Ruochen's Spiritual Power to get through the bottleneck and reach the 47th level.

Apparently, the old man in scholar robes noticed the strong wave of Spiritual Power. He was static for a moment, surprised to find that a young man who practiced in martial arts should have practiced his Spiritual Power to such a high level.

When he was about Zhang Ruochen's age, he had just become a Half-Saint of Spiritual Power, far from reaching the 47th level.

But the old man in scholar robes soon recovered from the shock. He pretended to be calm, and said, "Your Spiritual Power is just so so. You can't compare with my grand-student. He has reached the 49th level, and is about to become a saint."

"Is he the new Second Place in the Royal Examination?"

"Yes."

The old man in scholar robes raised his jaw and stroked his beard, looking proud and content.

"He's not the first," Zhang Ruochen murmured.

The old man in scholar robes saw that Zhang Ruochen didn't understand the value of the Second Place, and he rounded his angry eyes and turned back, not wanting to exchange any more words with this disrespectful young man.

A young boy who was about 20 years old, didn't bow to him respectfully, did not put on a humble look, and even sat together with him. He was enraged.

He reminded Zhang Ruochen constantly that he should show him some respect, but Zhang Ruochen didn't understand him and remained sitting there haughtily.

The old man in scholar robes thought to himself that he would find a chance to teach the young man with bad manners a lesson, in case he would step on a wrong road and turn evil.

Zhang Ruochen didn't know that an old man like him would quibble about the details. He was contemplating quietly.

The old man in scholar robes called the monk in green robes "Principal Luo," which confirmed Zhang Ruochen's guess.

The monk in green robes must be one of the ten Principals of the Eastern Region Saint Academy, Luo Xu.

He was the best among the talents in the Kunlun's Field 200 years ago, and had reached the Peak Realm of the Heavenly Realm. Meanwhile, he was the first well-known saint born in the Heavenly Devil Mountain.

As the stone beauty and Luo Xu's conversation carried on, Zhang Ruochen got to know their story.

It had to trace back to 200 years ago.

The Demonic Sect wanted to expand its influence and enter the Eastern Region in order to contend for interest with the Martial Market Bank, the Black Market and the Imperial Government.

The Demonic Sect had chosen the Qi Family, the famous ancient family, as their first stop in order to establish it in the Eastern Region.

So the Demonic Sect Founder commanded the Saintess at that time, Lin Suxian, to marry the first son of the Head of the Qi Family, Qi Xiangtian.

But Luo Xu and Lin Suxian had already fallen in love with each other.

Luo Xu had intruded in the headquarters of the Demonic Sect to fight against it by himself. He had killed several powerful figures of the Demonic Sect. Blood had flowed in more than 6 kilometers long. And Luo Xu even killed a saint with his cultivation of a Half-Saint.

But Luo Xu was alone and failed to take his lover back. He had witnessed her marry into the Qi Family in the Eastern Region.

By that time, Ling Feiyu, as the First Saintess, was the one who had defeated Luo Xu.

Zhang Ruochen came to the understanding that the woman in palace dressings yesterday must have been the first beauty in the world 200 years ago, Lin Suxian.

But now, Lin Suxian had become the Vice Palace Ruler of the Saintess Palace of the Demonic Sect. She had a high status in the Saintess Palace, coming only next to Ling Feiyu.

Zhang Ruochen sighed. It was hard to tell who was right and who was wrong.

After all, Ling Feiyu had made great efforts and saved Luo Xu's life during the fight.

If it had been another powerful figure of the Demonic Sect, Luo Xu would have been killed at the headquarters of the Demonic Sect 200 years ago.

From the third person view, Ling Feiyu did nothing wrong. On the contrary, she had shown kindness for Luo Xu and Lin Suxian.

After all, Luo Xu and Lin Suxian by then had no power to oppose the whole Demonic Sect. After Luo Xu had been killed, Lin Suxian would have probably killed herself as well.

The ending was the best for them.

But, as the person involved, Lin Suxian didn't think so. She unleashed all of her grudge on Ling Feiyu.

She named her daughter "Feiyu." Wasn't it the way that she used to remember the grudge?

Ling Feiyu's cultivation was too high to be beaten by Lin Suxian, so she kept waiting. After Ling Feiyu had been severely hurt from the fight with Blood Emperor Qingtian, Lin Suxian sought her chance to take revenge.

It was not enough to satisfy her by killing Ling Feiyu.

She would torture Ling Feiyu and make her lost forever.

Many grudges in this world were all because of this one word, "love".

The reason that Luo Xu could forgive Ling Feiyu was partly with the help of time, and part of his own open mind. He didn't get lost in the hatred and could still tell the right from the wrong.

It seemed that getting Luo Xu's pardon had recovered Ling Feiyu's mind state a little. Sharp lights could be seen in her eyes.

Luo Shuihan passed a cup of Ancient Tea of Saintly Way to Ling Feiyu. She accepted it and took a sip.

Luo Xu said, "With the help of the Ancient Tea of Saintly Way and the Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map, Palace Ruler Ling's mind state and will may be able to get a full recovery. I just hope Palace Ruler Ling won't hate her. It's all my fault. I will make up for everything that she has done wrong."

The old man in scholar robes looked at the scroll on the table, and rolled it up with a sudden realization. He said, "Luo Xu, Luo Xu, I've been fooled by you. You are a liar. You said you wanted to study the Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map with me, but you want it to save another's life! Don't you know that the Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map is the sect treasure of the Painting Sect? I took a high risk to take it out!"

Luo Xu laughed, "Brother Ju..."

"Don't call me that! Although I'm one of the Four Saint Gentlemen, 'Mei Lan Zhu Ju,' I was fooled by the other three!"

The old man in scholar robes bit his teeth with hatred.

"The old man is the Saint Painter of the four Saint Gentlemen?" Zhang Ruochen was shocked.

There was more than one painter who became a saint because of his paintings and drawings. But there was only one called the Saint Painter.

The man was the Sect Leader of the Painting Sect, Chu Siyuan, who was also called Mr. Ju. Together with the Saint Guqin, a seven-stringed plucked instrument in some ways similar to the zither, the Saint Chess, and the Saint Book, they were called the Four "Mei Lan Zhu Ju" Saint Gentlemen.

Mei, Lan, Zhu, Ju were symbols of noble characters and virtues, which were often used by previous saints and ancient sages of the Way of Confucius to represent themselves.

But Chu Siyuan hadn't thought it through. He had just found that the Four Gentlemen title served him well, so he had agreed to it.

After he returned to the Painting Sect, he realized that he had picked a funny title.

But it was impossible for him to change his title then.

Luo Xu said gravely, "Brother Chu, Palace Ruler Ling's fight with the Blood Emperor Qingtian contributed greatly to all human beings. Were it not for her, the Blood Emperor Qingtian would have released the Pluto. And now, Palace Ruler Ling is severely hurt because of that fight, a noble man like you would like to give her a hand, wouldn't you?"

The old man in scholar robes nodded in agreement. He found the word "noble man" extremely true.

The old man in scholar robes stroked his beard, and said contentedly, "After Palace Ruler Ling enters the Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map, she must experience seven lives in it. And there must be another person with her, chaperoning her, helping her concentrate on her will, revising her mistakes and guiding her on the path of practicing."

Luo Xu asked, "What are the requirements of the chaperon?"

"First of all, he must be someone who she trusts. Otherwise, the chaperon might hurt her in the scroll, leaving vital impacts."

"Second, his spiritual power must have reached the 45th level or above."

And the old man in scholar robes explained, "They have to experience seven lives in the scroll, encountering all kinds of affairs. If the person had a low spiritual power, once he got out of the scroll world, he would find it hard to store all those memories and have a breakdown."

"Third, the man must have reached the state of the Human Sword."

"The main spiritual power of the Palace Ruler Ling is about the Way of the Sword. Only people who are in the high state of

Way of the Sword have the ability to guide her to retrieve her Spiritual Power about the Way of the Sword.”

The old man in scholar robes sighed. “Only a person who meets all three requirements is qualified to be her chaperone and guide her through the seven lives.”

Even Luo Xu frowned. It was too hard to find such a person who met the three requirements.

By that time, the sky above the green boat was fully covered by the blood cloud. Dense shadows of the Immortal Vampires were shown from the cloud.

The army of the Immortal Vampires also surrounded the banks of the river. They had formed layers of Battle Formations, in case Zhang Ruochen tried to run away.

People inside the cabin were clear about the situation outside, but they didn't pay attention to it. They went on thinking about the suitable chaperone.

Zhang Ruochen perceived something, so he lifted his head to stare at Ling Feiyu.

He saw her eyes.

Did Ling Feiyu regard him as a reliable person?

Zhang Ruochen found it hard to believe. After all, he hadn't known her for a long time. And Ling Feiyu should trust him?

Before he could think more, a thick voice sounded outside the cabin. “Zhang Ruochen, I'm here to take the Taotian Sword, as commanded by the Blood Emperor. Come out and show yourself!”

The terribly cold Qi landed from the sky as the cold voice was heard. And it had frozen the whole wide old river.

Chapter 1005 - The Legendary Luo Xu

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Both Zhang Ruochen's wounds and strength had recovered a little, so he got up and went out of the cabin, supporting his tired body.

He looked around, standing at the bow.

The wide old river had been completely frozen by the cold Qi. The river surface was perhaps thicker than an iron slab.

Red snowflakes fell from the sky, turning the world into one of ice and snow.

The army of 100,000 Immortal Vampires gathered with powerful influence. With the battle flags flying, shadows moving, they had completely blocked the sky and the ground.

A fly wouldn't be able to get out, not to mention a person.

Zhang Ruochen held his arms in front of his chest, and looked up. He laughed, "Such a great scene to just capture me! Don't your Immortal Vampires value me too much?"

It was surely costly to send an army of 100,000 soldiers and several Blood Kings to capture a Half-Saint. Common people would never do that.

"Zhang Ruochen, you are truly powerful to have killed two saints of the Demonic Sect in a row, which has caught my sight. But, if that's all you've got, you will have no opportunity to run away today and are surely going to die."

A man in blood armor stood about 300 meters above the ground. Two pairs of dozens of meters long blood wings were

on his back, like four pieces of blood clouds.

He was big and more than four meters tall. He held a bronze battle axe and looked at everything with disdain. He was like Mars, giving out terrible Saint Might.

“Were you sent by Blood Emperor Qingtian?” Zhang Ruochen found a seat at the bow.

“No. I’m with Blood Emperor Qitian. I’m sure you’ve heard my name, King Zhiyu,” King Zhiyu said proudly.

Zhang Ruochen pondered for a while and shook his head. “Never heard of it.”

Zhang Ruochen had only dealt with the Immortal Vampires from Blood Emperor Qingtian’s tribe, and had little connection with figures from other tribes.

The Immortal Vampires’ army had disturbed many elders of the Evil Ways. They all raced here to investigate the movements of the Immortal Vampires.

Different from Zhang Ruochen, those saints of Evil Ways who hid afar were astonished by the name King Zhiyu.

Yao Ji stared at Zhang Ruochen who was sitting on the green boat, standing afar. She laughed, “Zhang Ruochen, the young boy, doesn’t he know about King Zhiyu, or did he really want to piss him off?”

She knew clearly that King Zhiyu was a bloodthirsty and ruthless figure. During the Immortal Vampires’ fight with the Imperial Government’s fight in the Northern Region, King Zhiyu once killed a very powerful Saint of War.

King Zhiyu had a terribly strong power to have killed a Saint of War.

After the Immortal Vampires had left Manji Island, they had landed on the Northern Region to start take cities and seize territories. They had raised the Northern people in pens and slaughtered them. Countless human sects and families had been exterminated by them.

Half of the Northern Region were in chaos.

At the same time, some names of the Blood Saints among the Immortal Vampires had been circulated in the Kunlun's Field. King Zhiyu was one of them.

King Zhiyu had wiped out an influential family of saints and dozens of sects of all sizes, taken nine counties and kept billions of people in the Northern Region for the Qitian Tribe.

Yao Ji never expected that such an evil spirit would have come to the Tiantai State in the Central Region.

“You don't know that you will soon be killed.”

Yao Ji shook her head, thinking that Zhang Ruochen had no chance to survive.

250 kilometers away, Kong Hongbi, Saint General Gui Gu and the other saints of the Sacred Central Crypt were all looking to where King Zhiyu was at.

Saint General Gui Gu put on a solemn look and he felt a little scared. “The cultivation of King Zhiyu is much higher than Yao Ji or Mr. Nie. It's unbelievable that he has come to capture Zhang Ruochen in person.”

The saint of the Sacred Central Crypt said, “Not only has King Zhiyu come. I've found that there are other strong strands of Qi in the army of the 100,000 Immortal Vampires. They can be Blood Kings as well. Zhang Ruochen can't run away today. Young Master, we'd better leave now, in case accidents happen.”

Kong Hongbi shook his head. “Wait a second. I'd like to find out whether Zhang Ruochen has the Taotian Sword or not. If the Immortal Vampires took the Taotian Sword away, they would have completed collecting the six saint swords to open the Underground Spirit Prison and release Pluto.”

“It would surely be a catastrophe for humans once Pluto was released,” said Saint General Gui Gu.

Kong Hongbi laughed, and said, “If we, the Sacred Central Crypt, can take the Taotian Sword from the Immortal Vampires, our reputation will go up greatly. With this sword, won't we be able to command the rest of the world?”

The saint of the Sacred Central Crypt was encouraged. Light flashed in his eyes. He nodded, and said, "OK. Let's wait."

Red snowflakes fell from the sky above the frozen river, like feathers.

King Zhiyu stared at Zhang Ruochen. He didn't feel angry, but gave a laugh. "It doesn't matter. You are a dead person already. I don't have to waste time with you."

King Zhiyu lifted his battle axe. Mighty power gushed out from it, even revolving around the blood Qi of the sky and the ground.

Rays of lightning flew out from the giant whirlpool of blood Qi to connect with the Bronze Battle Axe.

"Wait a second. Are you sure that I have the Taotian Sword on me?" Zhang Ruochen raised his voice.

Hearing this, King Zhiyu pulled back his strength and might a little. He didn't use the axe to chop, and instead, he shrank his eyes and said, "What do you mean?"

Zhang Ruochen appeared to be relaxed, and showed no fear. He said, "Why should I keep the Taotian Sword on me. I must have hidden it in a secret place. If you kill me, nobody will ever find it. Without the Taotian Sword, how could you rescue Pluto?"

King Zhiyu fell silent. He stared at Zhang Ruochen for a long time, and laughed. "Zhang Ruochen, you are still too young! You think you can keep your life in this way? To tell you the truth, as long as I drank up all your blood and refined your saint soul, your memory would all come to me. Would it be difficult for me to find the Taotian Sword?"

King Zhiyu put the battle axe away, and landed on the green boat from the air. He reached out a bloody claw to capture Zhang Ruochen.

When Zhang Ruochen was about to be caught by King Zhiyu, a monk in green robes walked out of the cabin, and threw a fist.

Bang.

Nine circles of energy ripples gushed out from his fist, making the sound of gushing currents, and surf pounding on the rocks.

Two explosions were heard.

The blood armor and the saint body of King Zhiyu crushed at the same time, becoming the bloody mist.

Pit-a-pat!

The Bronze Battle Axe and the pieces of the blood armor fell from midair to land on the surface of the frozen river.

The Bronze Battle Axe was so heavy that it had smashed the river surface with a boom, leaving thick patterns on it.

And King Zhiyu didn't leave a bone behind.

Both his spirit and body had disappeared.

Luo Xu held a fist-sized spinel in his hand. It gave out dazzling brilliance in the color of blood.

It was the Saintly Source of King Zhiyu.

One fist and the notorious King Zhiyu was turned into blood powder.

Such terrible strength astonished all Immortal Vampires on site. They found it hard to believe.

Afar, the old creatures of the Evil Ways were astonished as well. The sound of gasping was widely heard among them.

There could be such a scary figure in this world?

Saint General Gui Gu opened his eyes wide, and found it hard to calm himself down. "Who's this? The power of his fist has smashed a saint of the Immortal Vampires into dust?"

Kong Hongbi's face lost color. His heart beat violently.

The monk beside Zhang Ruochen, who was in green robes, was terribly scary. One of his fists could break everything in this world.

The saint of the Sacred Central Crypt put on a solemn face, and exhaled a long breath. "He's Luo Xu."

"Luo Xu? It's him?"

Both Kong Hongbi and Saint General Gui Gu held their breath, and stared at the monk in green robes.

They had heard about the name of Luo Xu more than once before. This man was definitely a legend in the Kunlun's Field. He was revered and worshipped by many people.

“Since Luo Xu showed up, it wouldn't be enough even if the Immortal Vampires sent 100,000 more troops. How lucky is Zhang Ruochen!”

Even the proud Kong Hongbi had to admit the power of Luo Xu.

“Maybe not.”

The saint of the Sacred Central Crypt shook his head slightly. “I can feel a strong strand of terrible Qi from the army of the Immortal Vampires. He might be as powerful as Luo Xu.”

Zoom.

A silver brilliance came from the horizon, cracking the blood mist. It condensed into a silver mirror which was more than 300 meters in diameter, hovering above the green boat.

An ancient palace hovered underneath the silver mirror.

A giant black turtle carried the palace on its back, giving out a terrible Qi of wildness.

An Immortal Vampire who had three pairs of silver wings stood at the top of the palace. He stared at the green boat underneath with his silver eyes. He said in a loud voice, “King Taige under Blood Emperor Qitian greets Principal Luo.”

The appearance of King Taige caused a sensation which was several times that of King Zhiyu.

Those old creatures of Evil Ways who stood afar at first, displayed their moves to escape this place without hesitation.

Only a few who had absolute confidence in themselves stayed. But they all retreated thousands of kilometers away, preparing to leave at any time.

King Taige was ten times more powerful than King Zhiyu. He was a core figure underneath Blood Emperor Qitian.

Zhang Ruochen stared at the three pairs of silver wings on King Taige's back, feeling shocked.

Ordinary Immortal Vampires would only have a pair of blood wings made of flesh.

Immortal Vampires with silver wings must have extraordinary body structures, maybe even stronger than saint bodies of humans.

And the higher their cultivations were, the more flesh wings they would have.

King Zhiyu had only two pairs of blood wings.

It was shocking to find that King Taige had three pairs of silver wings on his back, which meant that he had a scary body structure and cultivation.

Maybe only Luo Xu onsite could stay calm. He laughed, "King Taige, since you know that I'm here, you should run away at once. Why come to suicide?"

Chapter 1006 - Luo Water Fist Technique

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Who's King Taige?

Perhaps only Luo Xu dared to talk to him recklessly like that.

King Taige didn't feel angry at all. He remained calm. "I heard the news that you would come to this sacred place, so I came here especially to meet you. I don't have to show up to deal with Zhang Ruochen."

"You are here for me?"

Luo Xu was still peaceful, making people feel calm. He nodded, "I haven't fought in a long time. Alright, let's fight."

If he hadn't killed a Blood King of the Immortal Vampires with a fist just now, perhaps many would regard him as a weak scholar.

King Taige put on a grave and cautious look. The three giant pairs of silver wings on his back kept absorbing the Spiritual Qi between the Heaven and the Earth.

The silver brilliance given out by the six wings became more and more dazzling.

It was an awful image. The silver light shrouded the whole sky and the ground. Its brilliance was even brighter than that of the sun. Clouds of silver flames floated in midair.

Meanwhile, the giant black turtle who carried the palace on his back made a strange sound. Then it reached out a foot, which was as tough as lead and iron, to step on the green wooden boat.

The giant black turtle had a glorious past. It was a king of savage beasts in the North Sea called the “Elder of the Toads and Turtles,” ruling the sea area for millions of kilometers and billions of savage beasts of the Aquatic Race.

It also took King Taige months to tame it as his ride.

The black giant turtle was so powerful that it could lift dozens of islands the size of big mountains in the sea.

The power of its one step was about the same as a strike of King Taige’s full strength.

Before the step landed, the wind caused by it had made cracks.

Luo Xu put on a serious face as well. He stepped into the void, and appeared at a place which was about 100 meters high to give a fist, as if he had stepped on an invisible ladder.

Boom.

The power contained by the fist turned into circles of giant energy waves to push the Spiritual Qi out like rolling surf.

The strong powers crashed into each other. With a crack, the foot of the giant black turtle broke into pieces, making a blood red rain.

The giant black turtle screamed. Its giant body kept shaking.

Those Immortal Vampires brought by King Taige had seen the terrible defensive power of the giant black turtle first. Even saint weapons failed to crack its shell.

Unexpectedly, with just one fist, Luo Xu had smashed its foot.

Luo Xu hit again to its lower parts. This time, he aimed at the belly, and made an air wave shape with his fist.

“How dare you!”

King Taige had condensed enough power, so he flew down like a silver shuttle. He played a saint spell, which burst out dozens of times his original power to attack.

Luo Xu didn’t panic. He added more strength to his fist.

Unable to stand the strength of Luo Xu’s fist, the giant black turtle’s belly sank inwards. A dozen blood red cracks appeared

on it. And it flew upwards.

“Xueming Mountain.”

The saint spell played by King Taige formed the blood mist which spread hundreds of kilometers away. A lofty blood mountain showed up. It was more than 10,000 meters tall, pressing down like an aerolite falling from outer space.

Xueming Mountain Print was one of the three prints of the saint spell “Xueming Death Print.” Its power was stronger than ordinary saint spells.

Zhang Ruochen and Luo Shuihan stood on the green boat, and felt it being greatly pressed. It seemed that the space was frozen and their blood stopped flowing. They even found it hard to move their fingers.

The coverage of the Xueming Mountain Print was huge. Once it landed on the ground, it would destroy everything in its range of hundreds of kilometers.

Zoom!

Zoom!

...

The army of the Immortal Vampires activated their Defense Formation immediately to link all the surrounding space and to protect them from the power waves of the saint spell.

Luo Xu didn't retreat. On the contrary, he went forward.

“The first move of the Luo Water Fist Technique, Heavenly River Dividing up the Work.”

After the fist attack, deafening noise of wind and thunder was heard for hundreds of kilometers around. The Spiritual Qi kept shaking until it was thousands of kilometers away.

The shadow of a vast and mighty heavenly river showed up. It hung in the sky. The power given off by it had broken the blood mountain in parts, which were more than 10,000 meters tall.

King Taige retreated at once. His skeleton made crack sounds.

Luckily, thick light appeared on his blood red armor, resolving the power of the fist attack.

“This is...Luo Water Fist Technique...”

Zhang Ruochen opened his eyes wide.

The 36 moves of the Luo Water Fist Technique were well-known in the Heavenly Devil Mountain. It was the unique skill of Luo Xu that had made him his name.

Zhang Ruochen once entered the Half-Saint Intention Map left by Luo Xu, and comprehended a little of the Luo Water Fist Technique, so he was familiar with it.

But now he felt different seeing Luo Xu displaying the Luo Water Fist Technique.

This fist technique was not only grand, magnificent, ingenious and unparalleled, but also could trigger the Rules of Heaven and Earth and form resonance. Its power could have resolved all saint spells in the world.

The Luo Water Fist Technique comprehended by Zhang Ruochen by then was nothing compared to the one played by Luo Xu.

“The Luo Water Fist Technique must have an unusual origin. If I can compound the essence of the fist way into palm plays and Way of Sword, it will burst out even greater power.”

Zhang Ruochen stared at Luo Xu attentively, waiting for him to display the second move.

Beside him, Luo Shuihan was also observing the fight above them carefully, observing the Luo Water Fist Technique played by Luo Xu. Golden light gushed out from her eyes.

“The second move of the Luo Water Fist Technique, Nine Curves and Nine Twists.”

“Xueming River.”

Luo Xu and King Taige each gave a strike, making a strong explosion.

Although they fought in midair, the earth was shaking violently. Some cracks which were meters wide were seen on

the ground.

King Taige stepped back again. Blood was seen at the corner of his mouth. Apparently, he was hurt.

Luo Xu stepped into the void, and strode to King Taige with one hand behind his back and the other pinched into a fist. He laughed, “It’s just the first two moves. Can’t you take it?”

“Xueming Death.”

King Taige shouted and raised up his hands.

The blurring shadow of death was condensed right after it. It was more than 3,000 meters high, taking up most of the sky. The Qi given by it was several times stronger than that of the Xueming Mountain Print and Xueming River Print.

“The third move of the Luo Water Fist Technique, Crossing the Heavenly Road.”

Luo Xu played a long fist move. Gushing water sounded again. And a wide river really showed up and flowed to King Taige violently.

The magnificent shadow of death was cut in two by the river, and dispersed like the blood cloud.

King Taige was severely wounded. His body was broken like porcelain wares. Thick cracks appeared on it.

Each crack gave out strong golden lights, as if a sun was inside his body and was ready to burst out at any time.

“Close!”

King Taige swallowed a bottle of saint blood and pressed his hands together, shouting.

The cracks on him recovered quickly.

King Taige stared at Luo Xu across from him solemnly. “What fist technique did you use?”

“Luo Water Fist Technique.”

King Taige said, “What a powerful fist technique! It could compare with the most powerful fist moves of the three Ways.

It deserves to be remembered, not buried with no name. Why didn't I ever hear about it?"

"Because, it was created by myself," Luo Xu said quietly.

King Taige fell silent for a while, and said, "Figures like you, if born in the Middle Ages, might have had a chance to become a god."

"Why in the Middle Ages? Why not now?" Luo Xu asked in return.

It was the confidence to compete with the Way of Heaven.

Even if the Rules of the Heaven and the Earth were changed, there were outstanding figures trying to break them.

King Taige laughed. "Luo Xu, I know you are powerful, even more powerful than any living creatures I've met so far. But today, you can't beat me."

"How? Do you have other methods?"

"Ten Saints Blood Armor."

King Taige crossed his fingers to form a cross. Holy Qi and blood Qi gushed out and poured into the armor.

The blood red armor was on fire. Star-like spotlights appeared on it.

Meanwhile, ten shadows of saints flew out of the armor and surrounded King Taige according to a special rule.

"I have the support of ten saints. How can you defend yourself from me?"

King Taige's hair jumped up. He was like an unrivalled demon god. Blood inside his body flowed quickly like the river, making a rumble noise.

The Ten Saints Blood Armor was made of the blood of ten saints with saint bones, Saintly Sources, saintly rocks, saintly jade and the secret spell of the Immortal Vampires.

Not only was the Holy power of ten powerful saints conserved in it, but also their wisdom and will power.

With the support of the ten saints, King Taige's power went up. Stronger and stronger, he had reached a new state.

Meanwhile, King Taige commanded the 100,000 Immortal Vampires, "Activate the Ten Places No Life Formation. Kill Zhang Ruochen."

It was clear to King Taige that Luo Xu was protecting Zhang Ruochen.

So he used Zhang Ruochen to restrict Luo Xu.

King Taige didn't only want to beat Luo Xu, but also to kill him.

A figure like Luo Xu was surely a great enemy to the Immortal Vampires. He might even destroy the Immortal Vampires in the future.

Even if he had to pay a price, he had to kill Luo Xu in advance.

On the ground, each soldier of the Immortal Vampires took out a blood bag made of human skin, and poured the blood on the ground to form a giant Formation which covered the area of hundreds of kilometers in diameter.

Fizz.

As the Formation was activated, the blood on the ground was in flames. All had turned into a sea of burning fire.

Chapter 1007 - Spare No One

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The 100,000 Immortal Vampires were not ordinary ones. Some Half-Saint Blood Generals and many Fish-Dragon Realm Monks were seen in the army.

The Ten-sided Thunder Formation arranged by them naturally had a terrible power, which was comparable to the Seventh Class Attack Formation.

The ground and the river banks became a red area in flames.

Battle flags flew in the Formation, drums were deafeningly sounded. And blood Qi was seen rising from ten directions to the banks of the old river.

The blood Qi condensed quickly into shadows of ten mountain-sized divine beasts, dragon, peacock, taotie, bi'an, kylin...etc.

The bodies of the divine beasts seemed real in the flesh and blood, which were covered by armor. They gave earth-shattering shouts.

Those old creatures of the Evil Ways who didn't retreat all felt scared afar.

“The Ten-sided Thunder Formation is always kept in a first class sect in the Northern Region, the Thousand Beasts Sect. How can it fall to the possession of the Immortal Vampires? Could it be...could it be that the Thousand Beasts Sect has been defeated by the Immortal Vampires?”

There were only eight first class sects in the Northern Region, each was great in scale and had a long history. These eight sects firmly supported the Northern Region like eight columns.

If a first class sect like the Thousand Beats Sect had been cracked by the Immortal Vampires, the situation in the Northern Region must have become very desperate.

“King Taige in the Ten Saints Blood Armor with the Ten-sided No Life Formation will put Luo Xu in danger. He might die here.”

“If Luo Xu and Zhang Ruochen both died, it would be a grave discouragement for human monks of the younger generation. They are their models and goals.”

...

Saint Painter, Chu Siyuan walked out of the cabin steadily. He glanced around and put on an undignified look.

He took out a blank scroll and hung it in the void.

Then, Chu Siyuan activated his Spiritual Power to draw on the scroll with a crystal-clear pen made of jade.

Soon, a vivid drawing appeared in front of Zhang Ruochen and Luo Shuihan.

Chu Siyuan’s clothes and hair danced, although there was no wind. Light burst from his body. Lines of white light appeared underneath his skin. He shouted, using his total strength, “Silver Frost and Falling Waterfall for 3,000 Kilometers, 100,000 Enemies All Become Ghosts.”

Bang.

He hit the scroll with a palm.

The expansive and powerful Spiritual Power went into the scroll to throw it to the sky.

After the scroll rose up in midair, it expanded to almost cover up the whole ground.

Then the scroll fell down quickly and exploded with a boom just before it hit the ground. A terrible strand of cold Qi spread all around.

Fizz was constantly heard on the ground.

In just a second, all fire and flames were put out. The army of 100,000 Immortal Vampires had turned into ice sculptures.

It was just the impact at the center. The cold Qi given out by the scroll kept spreading up, turning the area within 500 kilometers into a world of ice and snow.

All the area of 1,500 kilometers were differently affected by it. But the further out it went, the less impact the area had received.

Bang.

Chu Siyuan stepped on the ground. Thick cracks appeared on the bodies of the 100,000 Immortal Vampires. They broke into pieces and fell on the ground, turning into broken ice pieces.

It was deathly still.

Only the cold wind was whistling. Whirr.

A drawing had exterminated the army of 100,000 Immortal Vampires. It was hard to imagine what terrible power had been poured into the drawing.

The world became quiet. The sound of battle drums stopped. So did the noise of the Immortal Vampires.

Chi Siyuan stroked his beard with his fingers. He put on a satisfied smile, and glanced at Zhang Ruochen with blunt pride.

Zhang Ruochen felt shocked too. He recognized the old Chu again. As the sect leader of the Painting Sect, he surely was an enigma and an old eccentric.

But Zhang Ruochen put on a look of despise. He disliked Chu Siyuan's proud face.

Even King Taige was seized with terror for a minute. He stared at Chu Siyuan with a pair of blood red eyes gravely. He said, "It turns out the Saint Paint is here as well... he he, I made the mistake today."

Chu Siyuan put his hands behind his back, and said lightly, like a wise man, "Since you know you've made the mistake, why don't you run away now?"

King Taige was not just an ordinary one. He had a high cultivation and had also put the Ten Saints Blood Armor on. It would be hard to kill him, even if Luo Xu and Chu Siyuan worked together.

Once he imploded his Saintly Source, Luo Xu and Chu Siyuan would probably die today.

So the best result would be that King Taige chose to retreat.

“Run away? Why should I run away?”

King Taige laughed, and his will to fight went up again. He said, “It’s a rare chance for me to have met the renowned Luo Xu and the Saint Paint. How can I run away without a fight?”

King Taige was surely not resigned to the fact that the army of 100,000 Immortal Vampires brought by him had been exterminated. Even if he was going to retreat, he had to test the real power of Luo Xu and of the Saint Paint.

King Taige stepped on the sea of thick blood Qi, and pulled a blade shining with saint light out of the Ten Saints Blood Armor.

It was not an ordinary weapon, but a Thousand-pattern Saint Weapon.

Zoom—

The terrible Destruction of the Thousand-patterns gushed out and shook the ten saint shadows. Then, it attacked Luo Xu.

A Thousand-pattern Saint Weapon in a saint’s hand was very different from that in a Half-Saint’s hand.

One strand of Destruction of the Thousand-patterns from the blade in King Taige’s hand had ripped the ground.

It was imaginable that a chop from it would be extremely scary.

Luo Xu still used his fists to fight him. He played the tenth move of the Luo Water Fist Technique, to crash into King Taige.

It was a tight match.

Even if King Taige had the support of the ten saints and the Destruction of the Thousand-pattern Saint Weapon, he couldn't beat Luo Xu.

Many people, including Zhang Ruochen, doubted whether Luo Xu had given his best.

Bang!

Bang!

...

The fight between King Taige and Luo Xu had shaken the ground. Even the sun lost its light.

Zhang Ruochen couldn't see their moves clearly at his current state. He could only see that the sky above them was completely covered by the blood Qi. The ground kept breaking up.

Meanwhile, deafening sounds were heard in the blood light.

Boom!

After a while, a bloody figure dropped from the sky. He hit into the ground and made a giant pit of hundreds of meters in diameter, like a meteorite crater.

Dust rose up, making a gloomy sky.

Now the match had ended.

Everyone was nervous about the result. Who fell down?

About 300 meters above the ground, there was a man in green robes who wasn't hurt at all. He looked down at the ground like a real god, and he said, "You're quite strong to have borne the first 18 moves of the Luo Water Fist Technique."

The man in green robes waved his sleeves to clear the dust and show his true face.

It was Luo Xu.

King Taige climbed out of the giant pit. His eyes, nose, ears and mouth were all bleeding. He looked extremely ferocious, and he said, "Does the Luo Water Fist Technique have 18 more moves?"

“Sure,” said Luo Xu.

King Taige said, “May I see it?”

Luo Xu stared at him and shook him. “It has shown that you are not qualified to see it.”

“Alright. I’ll keep you in mind. Luo Xu and the Luo Water Fist Technique. I will come back to you in the future. I hope that your 18 more moves are really strong.”

King Taige was severely wounded. He didn’t dare to keep fighting. If Luo Xu worked together with the Saint Paint, he would probably die because of his poor condition.

Zoom.

The three pairs of broken silver wings on King Taige’s back moved. He turned into a silver light, flying to the horizon.

After King Taige had gone far away, Luo Xu looked at Zhang Ruochen, and said, “Zhang Ruochen, would you lend me your sword? I want to kill him.”

Kill King Taige?

Zhang Ruochen was shocked and then came to the realization.

Luo Xu had deliberately let King Taige go in order to move the battlefield away, in case the last struggle of King Taige would hurt Zhang Ruochen or Luo Shuihan.

As it was widely known that Zhang Ruochen had a very sharp sword called the Ancient Abyss Sword, which could even cut down saint weapons.

And it was also said that the Ancient Abyss Sword was made of the same material as the Divine Blood Sword of Empress Chi Yao, and it was irresistible.

Therefore, Luo Xu wanted to borrow the Ancient Abyss Sword to crack the Ten Saints Blood Armor of King Taige and kill him.

It was not his style to let the strong enemy go and recover.

Zhang Ruochen trusted Luo Xu’s character, so he took out the Ancient Abyss Sword and threw it to him.

Luo Xu grabbed the Ancient Abyss Sword, and his might became even stronger. He gave out a powerful Qi of slaughter, and chased after King Taige.

Luo Shuihan was a little worried, and said, “King Taige is a core of the Qitian Tribe. His cultivation of Saintly Way has reached the peak. If he desperately imploded his Saintly Source, the elder might be put in danger.”

Chu Siyuan said, “Don’t worry. Luo Xu must have the confidence to return alive since he dares to chase him.”

The two shadows flew quickly one after another. The speed was so fast that only two shooting lights could be seen from the sky.

King Taige soon discovered that Luo Xu was following him. He muttered a curse and displayed a secret spell of escape.

With silver brilliance building up on his body, his speed went up five times in just a second.

Luo Xu was determined to kill him. He was willing to hurt his own life to display a secret spell. He also increased his speed and went right after him.

A figure like King Taige would surely bring disaster to human beings, once he was let go.

Luo Xu pushed him so hard and had even cracked the Ten Saints Blood Armor with the Ancient Abyss Sword that King Taige was forced into a hopeless situation.

“Luo Xu, you’ve pushed me so hard! Now, let us die and disappear together!”

King Taige shouted with anger and desperation. He raced to Luo Xu and activated Holy Qi to implode his Saintly Source.

His saint body was like burning porcelain, which gave out golden light. Cracks like cobwebs appeared on it. Then it exploded with a loud crash.

Chapter 1008 - The World Was Shocked

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The loud crash of the Saintly Source's explosion was terribly scary, as if the sky had broken into pieces.

The space within the surrounding 5,000 kilometers quaked violently. All forces in this area were frightened to death, thinking that doom had come.

In the central area where the Saintly Source had exploded, no living creatures had survived, and an area of hundreds of kilometers turned into wildness.

Such a terrifying destruction was enough to crack the defense of a saint.

Even Chu Siyuan, who had confidence in Luo Xu, put on a grave face to express his concerns.

No wonder the so-called Catastrophe at the end of the Middle Ages broke all of the Kunlun's Field into pieces, which later turned into dotted islands. The fights among saints were truly terrible, Zhang Ruochen thought.

Luo Xu didn't return for a long time. They became more worried and upset.

Chu Siyuan went to the central area where the Saintly Source had exploded, but he didn't find Luo Xu.

He returned to the green boat and told Zhang Ruochen and Luo Shuihan. Then, he sighed.

Zhang Ruochen said seriously, "You didn't find the Ancient Abyss Sword, which means, Elder Luo Xu must still be alive."

“Maybe, the Ancient Abyss Sword has been destroyed as well. You have no idea of the explosive destruction of the Saintly Sources from figures like King Taige.”

Zhang Ruochen put on a smile and shook his head. He looked to the horizon.

“It’s...”

Suddenly, his eyes squinted. A man in green was seen flying to them. He soon landed on the bank of the old river.

Luo Xu’s green robes were still unstained. Only his face had lost a little color. He laughed, “Luckily, I had the Great Emperor Bell of the Saint Academy with me and used it just in time. It has protected me from the explosion of the Saintly Source, otherwise, the result would have been a disaster. Zhang Ruochen, your sword is truly a rare treasure. It might be able to contend with the Divine Blood Sword in the future.”

Then, Luo Xu returned the Ancient Abyss Sword to Zhang Ruochen by handing it over to him.

Chu Siyuan was curious, and asked, “Where did you go after you killed King Taige?”

“There are five Blood Kings in the army of the Immortal Vampires. Besides King Zhiyu and King Taige, there are three other saints. I wanted to kill them all, but it’s a pity I only killed one Blood King. The other two had gone so fast that I lost them.”

Three Blood Kings had been killed in this fight, including a core figure, King Taige. The Immortal Vampires did pay dearly.

But the Immortal Vampires would get back at other human monks ferociously. Nobody knew how many innocent human monks would die.

Luo Xu held the newly robbed Saintly Source in his hand, finding it hard to be happy. He shook his head and sighed slightly.

Many old creatures of the Evil Ways were shocked by the scene they had witnessed.

They returned to the Black Market secretly and spread the word.

Monks in the Tiantai State and even the Central Region boiled over with enthusiasm. Many were full of all kinds of feelings and emotions.

Five saints had been killed in one day.

The names of Zhang Ruochen and Luo Xu spread among the monks once more, and even spread in the society to be discussed as legends by vendors and lackeys.

Zhang Ruochen was pushed into the spotlight one more time.

Some worshipped him as an idol crazily, regarding him as the best human monk in Kunlun's Field, even stronger than the Nine Heirs.

Some thought that Zhang Ruochen used secret spells to kill the two monks of the Demonic Sect. It's not the true power, so he couldn't compare with the Nine Heirs.

Others compared Zhang Ruochen with Luo Xu and found many similarities.

They were both born in the Heavenly Devil Mountain, both had reached the Peak Realm of the Heavenly Realm, both graduated from the School of the Martial Market and both had a special love affair.

Luo Xu had been in love with the first beauty, Lin Suxian. But he was stopped by the Hierarch of the Demonic Sect. They failed to be together.

Zhang Ruochen had been about to marry Huang Yanchen, who was one of the Nine Heirs. But he was stopped by an order of the Empress. They were now separated in two places.

...

Saintess Palace, the headquarters of the Demonic Sect.

The Saintess Palace was one of the nine palaces of the Demonic Sect. It was located at Mount Tianshui. It only recruited female students.

Spiritual fog curled up the mountain. There were many red palaces, where many beautiful ladies could be seen flying. It was like a home of the fairies.

Mu Lingxi, as one of the 13 Saintess of the Demonic Sect, had her own secret house for practicing on the hillside, which was filled with spiritual Qi.

A female student at the state of Heavenly Realm rushed back to Mu Lingxi's practicing house in Mount Tianshui, and she reported, "Your Highness, more news about Zhang Ruochen was heard from the State Tiantai."

Mu Lingxi was holding her face with her hands, and now was awakened from the trance. Delight showed on her face. She changed into a pretty shadow and landed to the student's front. She asked in a hurry, "Really? Really? He didn't die in the Ancient Race of Prison Guardians? He's still alive?"

Mu Lingxi was grounded after she had been taken back to the headquarters of the Demonic Sect. But, she kept searching for news about Zhang Ruochen's.

Last time she had heard about Zhang Ruochen was when the Immortal Vampires invaded the Ancient Race of Prison Guardians.

During the fight, all students in the Saintess Palace worried about their Palace Ruler, Ling Feiyu, and only Mu Lingxi worried about Zhang Ruochen.

Mu Lingxi hadn't heard a word about Zhang Ruochen in the last two months. She once believed that he had died and wept secretly.

Nowadays she even stopped practicing. She was laden with anxiety and often sit alone in a trance.

She had tried to run away from the headquarters several times to find Zhang Ruochen in the Ancient Race of Prison Guardians. But each time she had been stopped by powerful figures of the Mu Family.

Mu Lingxi was thrilled to have heard about Zhang Ruochen again.

The female student looked restless. She said hesitantly, “Zhang Ruochen is surely still alive, but...but...”

“What?”

Mu Lingxi felt something and became nervous about the losses immediately.

“But he killed two saints of the Divine Sect, and took the Heir Stamp away after he had cut the Son of Deity’s legs.”

Mu Lingxi turned dull for a while, and giggled, “No way. Although Zhang Ruochen is powerful and can beat everyone at his own state, he can never kill saints. Someone must have used him as the scapegoat.”

The female student shook her head immediately, and said, “It’s true. Many have seen it.”

“Really?”

Mu Lingxi didn’t care about the life and death of the two saints of the Demonic Sect. She was only interested in Zhang Ruochen. She asked, “Zhang Ruochen never kills people for no reason. So it must be the two saints who have done some terrible things?”

“It is said that Zhang Ruochen was saving a woman, a quite beautiful woman. He took the woman all the way out of a spot of the Divine Sect by killing many powerful figures of the Demonic Sect. Blood was everywhere. And the whole spot was erased.” The female student spoke cautiously.

Mu Lingxi couldn’t smile. Her two willow-like eyebrows knotted tightly. Her hands couldn’t help but pull her hair.

She was kind of jealous and curious, and also found it hard to believe. She said, “He has done this or a woman, and a beautiful woman? Who’s that woman? Isn’t she Huang Yanchen, one of the Nine Heirs?”

The female student shook her head, and said, “It’s said she was just a slave taken back by an elder of the Divine Sect, nothing special.”

“No way! It’s impossible!”

Mu Lingxi shook her head at once, and said, “Unless he was crazy, he wouldn’t behave like this.”

After a thought, Mu Lingxi’s clear eyes made a roll. She said firmly, “It must be someone who pretended to be Zhang Ruochen. What a hateful person! If I knew who that is, I would cut him into pieces.”

The female student added in a low voice, “It’s said that Zhang Ruochen used the Power of Time and Space. Nobody could pretend in that way.”

Mu Lingxi was shocked again. She bit her lip lightly. She had an impulse to leave the headquarters immediately and go to the Tiantai State.

She wanted to ask Zhang Ruochen in person. Why did he do it?

Was it because of his lust? Or was there more to it?

The female student went on, “The Hierarch has learned of it and issued the Death Command. He commanded to use everything in the Divine Sect to kill Zhang Ruochen at the fastest speed.”

Hearing this, Mu Lingxi’s face lost color. “The Death Command has been issued?”

“Yes! After it was issued, nobody would survive the third month, even saints. Perhaps, Zhang Ruochen...”

The female student didn’t finish her words, for she found that Mu Lingxi had rushed out of the secret house and disappeared.

...

Water flowed smoothly in the wide old river. The water’s surface was like that of a flat lake.

A green boat floated on the water. It went with the current to the Royal Capital.

Three days had passed and Zhang Ruochen had recovered from his exhaustion. He was now in high spirits.

He sat at the bow with Luo Xu, talking about some interesting stories of things that had happened in the Heavenly Devil

Mountain.

There were great gaps between their ages and cultivations. But Zhang Ruochen didn't feel restrained, and appeared to be at ease.

Luo Xu admired Zhang Ruochen's mind state, and heard that Zhang Ruochen had comprehended some of the Luo Water Fist Technique, so he wanted to teach it to Zhang Ruochen.

"Do you want to know how I created the Luo Water Fist Technique?" asked Luo Xu.

"If the elder wants to share, I'd like to hear it," Zhang Ruochen said humbly and attentively.

He knew that Luo Xu was guiding him, which was a rare chance that not many would get.

The special Rule of Heaven and Earth contained in the Luo Water Fist Technique was profound. As Luo Xu kept improving it, it might become an unparalleled saint spell which could be passed on forever.

Who wouldn't want to learn some of it?

Chapter 1009 - : The First Life

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Water Luo Fist had an interesting history. According to Luo Xu, there was a river called “Water Luo” in the Heavenly Devil Mountain.

There was a story told by the villagers along the river:

A long time ago, there was no river in the Heavenly Devil Mountain. One day, the stars gathered at the sky and started pouring water from above. The water flowed to the ground and formed into a river. That was the origin of the Water Luo River.

When Luo Xu crossed the river on a boat, he saw the reflection of the stars on the surface and was inspired to create the Water Luo Fist.

Luo Xu had told Zhang Ruochen to return to the Heavenly Devil Mountain and paid the river a visit.

He thought Zhang Ruochen might be able to see different things through the river.

“That Water Luo River is not an ordinary river. Perhaps it was gifted by the other universe that we never know,” Zhang Ruochen commented.

Luo Xu tilted his head and stared at the peaceful boundless sky. He said, “The universe is unbelievably vast. There could be another greater world that coexists with the Kunlun’s Field. Water Luo River might be some magic gifted by some magical creature of the other universe.”

Luo Xu stood up and jokingly said, “If I ever become the Supreme Saint, I will pay a visit to the universe to find out if it has a boundary.”

Zhang Ruochen looked at Luo Xu, nodding in agreement.

He could tell Luo Xu was a big-hearted person from his behavior. Things that Luo Xu was after were different from the other monks.

Luo Xu made Zhang Ruochen ask himself: What should I do after I take my revenge?

He had no answer to that question.

The day after, Luo Xu taught Zhang Ruochen all thirty-six moves of the Water Luo Fists and handed him a guide on fist techniques.

Zhang Ruochen understood the essence of the Water Luo Fists. It took him a day and he had the basics of the technique already.

From then on, he no longer needed Luo Xu’s guidance. The guide given to him would be sufficient.

This day, instead of staying on the water, the green wooden boat was docked at the bay.

Chu Siyuan volunteered to lead the expedition and check out the terrain of the area nearby.

“This is the place.”

Chu Siyuan seemed quite decided and said, “This is the place where the six meridians meet. It has sufficient Spiritual Qi to support the Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map.”

Zhang Ruochen was doubtful of his decision. He asked, “If this is the place, why couldn’t I sense the Spiritual Qi? Also, I don’t see any sect based in the surrounding area.”

Chu Siyuan threw a glance at Zhang Ruochen, and said with his chin tilted, “The six meridians flow deep underneath the ground. An ordinary half-saint of spiritual power will not be able to detect them. Furthermore, the Spiritual Qi is buried

beneath, of course you couldn't sense it. Try again after I draw the Spiritual Qi out with my special skill.”

Chu Siyuan took out a broom-sized brush and dipped it in a special ink. Then, he used it to draw a huge circle on the ground.

Once the circle was drawn, he kept the brush and waited.

“That's all?”

Zhang Ruochen held his chin while waiting, staring at the perfectly drawn circle. The technique that Chu Siyuan claimed was special seemed rather casual and childlike to him.

Chu Siyuan seemed to have read Zhang Ruochen's mind and said, “Less is more.”

An hour later, puffs of thick fog came out of the ground within the circle.

That was not fog.

It was the Spiritual Qi.

The Spiritual Qi was known to be colorless and odorless, just like the air. But when its concentration was high enough, it would appear as thick fog.

Chu Siyuan placed the Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map in the middle of the circle. Later, he asked Zhang Ruochen and Beauty Shi to sit facing each other within the circle, taking the Map as the border.

“The entrance to the Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map is opened once every seventy years. Appreciate this opportunity because once you fail... there will be no second chance.”

Clearly, using the Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map was a luxury that Chu Siyuan wouldn't want to spend on Zhang Ruochen and the Beauty. There was no way that he would allow them to use it a second time.

He warned them once again, “In the Map, there will be unpredictable danger. As the guide, you should always remember this. Otherwise, both of you will never be able to wake up in real life.”

Chu Siyuan gave Zhang Ruochen a warning stare, and sat outside the circle. He pushed his palms forward and cast his Spiritual Power on the Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map.

Two glowing dots flew from Zhang Ruochen and the Beauty's body and diminished as they touched the Map.

Their bodies remained sitting in the circle with their eyes shut like two petrified stationary statues.

Luo Shuihan frowned as he looked at their bodies. He asked, "Going through seven lives together in the Map will leave many memories. Will Zhang Ruochen and Ling Palace Ruler get confused about their reality?"

Luo Xu answered, "Zhang Ruochen and Ling Feiyu are no ordinary people. They will never mix up the virtual world with reality. This is a good opportunity for them to hone their Spiritual Power. When they have completed all seven lives, there will be a massive change. Though there is one thing that I am worried about."

"What is it?" Luo Shuihan asked.

Luo Xu answered with a gentle smile and shook his head gently.

Everything Zhang Ruochen could see was darkness. When he opened his eyes again, he found himself in the middle of a busy street."

"Candied fruit."

"Knives! Sharpest knives in the world and they'll cost you nothing but an ounce of silver!"

...

The street was buzzing with people. It was a kingdom that he was unfamiliar with.

"Is this the virtual world of the Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map? It doesn't seem to be different from the real world."

Zhang Ruochen could feel the flesh and blood of his body, and his five senses were like any ordinary mortal.

Beauty Shi should have been born into this world already.

No sooner than Zhang Ruochen had closed his eyes, he located her location.

It felt weird to have that kind of connection. No matter how far she was, he could always find her.

Zhang Ruochen did not search for her immediately. In fact, he went to a restaurant and started feasting.

In the two lives that he had lived, he'd spent most of his time cultivating. Never had he experienced the ordinary things in life.

He had decided to take this opportunity to experience all the things he had missed out as a human. This could help him sharpen his state of mind and eventually become more mindful and determined.

In the afternoon, the people were celebrating in the streets.

The queen had given birth to a princess.

When she was born, the palace was cloaked in a purple mist and there were bright flashes of light in the sky. The people of the kingdom believed that the phenomenon was auspicious and that she was a goddess come to ease their burden.

Zhang Ruochen was the only one who knew that the little princess was the first life of Beauty Shi.

Sixteen years had passed in the blink of an eye.

Zhang Ruochen had been the coachman to a big family, a woodcutter, a fisherman, and many other ordinary things, treating himself like an actual mortal.

Unfortunately, the peacefulness did not last for long.

This was the year when the four neighboring kingdoms attacked the country.

Hundreds of thousands of armies marched into the palace, killing the king and raping the queen in front of the little princess.

Within a day, the princess fell from her safe heaven into a filthy dark pit. She had lost everything she held dear.

This was also the day that Zhang Ruochen saved her from the attack.

The death of her parents and the fall of her kingdom had caused a severe blow to the little princess mentally. Her eyes were swollen from crying, and she followed Zhang Ruochen blindly, looking traumatized.

It took her a month to recover, and she asked, “Can you take me in as your disciple?”

A month ago, Zhang Ruochen fought against the force of at least a hundred troops all by himself.

She knew he was a great warrior. She wished to have that powerful strength and sought revenge for her parents, her people and her country.

Standing by a valley, Zhang Ruochen’s arms rested behind his back, and he smiled. He muttered to himself, “The horridness has called forth her determination.”

The little princess did not understand what he meant by that. She bent her knees and begged him to teach her how to wield a sword.

Before he said yes, he decided to give her a small test. He said, “The troops that marched into the palace had ten thousand men. Kill any one of them and bring me his head. And I shall teach you all my sword techniques.”

“I... I have never learnt to wield a sword. How am I supposed to kill them? Besides, I have never killed anyone...”

The little princess was shaking with fear.

“Look at your weak self. Tell me, why should I teach you?”

Zhang Ruochen threw a stern stare at her and she was shaking more than ever.

In the end, the little princess left Zhang Ruochen and headed over to the palace.

Half a month later, she came back with a blood-dripping head and handed it over to Zhang Ruochen while limping.

Her beautiful face had been layered with a few hideous scars, and her right leg was broken, making her look like a wretched beggar.

No one could recognize her as the once beautiful little princess.

To seek revenge and Zhang Ruochen's acceptance, the little princess had been through many hurdles and put in much effort.

"How did you kill him?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

She answered with her hoarse voice, "If you are willing to put in the effort and take the risk, killing someone is not difficult at all."

Since she had passed the test, Zhang Ruochen took her in as his disciple and taught her the promised sword technique.

A decade later, the little princess had significantly improved in her sword skills. Alone, she marched into the palaces of the four kingdoms and killed the enemies.

After taking her revenge, she returned to look for her master, only to find him missing.

She was depressed and lost. Without the guidance of her master, she was clueless of her journey ahead.

In the end, she did not recover her fallen kingdom but chose to deepen her sword techniques while travelling around the world to look for her master.

A century later, she died of old age.

On her deathbed, she murmured her master's name with resentment.

She had spent her whole life searching for her master, hoping to see him again.

Little did she know that her master had been by her side.

When she passed on, Zhang Ruochen went to her grave and paid her a last respect.

It was then he realized his Spiritual Power had increased substantially. He muttered again: After the seventh life, I wonder if my Spiritual Power will be strong enough to achieve the saint level?

Author's Note: I have written a longer chapter for the first life, the other six will be shorter. There will be another chapter tonight. It's late, rest early people!

Chapter 1010 - The Rapid Advancement

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

There were seven basic emotions in men: joy, anger, worry, affection, sadness, fear and fright.

The first life of Ling Feiyu consisted of all seven emotions and six desires. She had experienced the joy in the beginning of life, then sadness, followed by the fear and fright, and finally the worry and sentiments of affection at the end of her life.

The first life had honed her determination and shaped her to be more mindful.

In the second life, she was born into a blue planet and became a doctor, spending her lifetime saving multiple lives. There was no unfathomable sword technique in that world, only advanced technology.

In the end, she died from overwork after saving so many lives.

In the third life, Ling Feiyu was a merciless murderer. Zhang Ruochen was her target, yet she failed to kill him again and again until she died.

In the fourth life, she was born to extreme poverty. The life ended with her being the wealthiest businesswoman under the guidance of Zhang Ruochen.

In the fifth life, Ling Feiyu was the Matriarch of a demonic sect. She was cruel, bloodthirsty and cold blooded.

In the sixth life, Ling Feiyu was born as a fox demon. As the guide, Zhang Ruochen had succeeded in leading her to the path of cultivation.

In the seventh life, Ling Feiyu was born into a brothel. She was so beautiful that every man at that time longed for her. She enjoyed her fame, wasting her youth at the brothel.

Zhang Ruochen spent much effort to convince her to leave but to no avail.

In the end, he had to make her fall for him and both of them lived together in a forest.

They spent the rest of their lives raising two of their children.

During that life, Zhang Ruochen did love her.

Fortunately, during their late years, he managed to keep himself rational from the relationship and pulled both of them out from the virtual world.

As the guide, he had to stay rational throughout the seven lives. Otherwise, Ling Feiyu and he would be trapped in the Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map forever.

When that happened, their physical bodies which remained outside of the Map would die.

Zhang Ruochen finally realized how dangerous the Map could be, for it could make one forget about himself and get lost in the virtual world.

One lifetime was long enough.

Long enough to let someone forget their purpose of experiencing the virtual world.

Imagine them having to live through all seven lives!

...

Along the riverside.

Chu Siyuan, Luo Xu and Luo Shui Han were waiting patiently outside the circle drawn earlier, trying hard to stay calm.

It had been seven days. Was it a success or a failure? The result would be known to them soon.

Luo Xu frowned and asked, "Brother Chu, since the Map has had a long history, it has been experienced by many veterans, hasn't it?"

Chu Siyuan nodded and said, “Yes, it has. Not that many though, no more than a hundred.”

“What about those who succeeded?” Luo Xu asked.

Chu Siyuan paused for a moment, then replied, “Seventeen of them.”

“Why is the Seven Lives Seven Deaths Map so dangerous?” asked Luo Shuihan. He was shocked by the numbers.

Because failure would mean death.

“It is a dangerous adventure. Why do you think there are so few of them who try?” Chu Siyuan replied.

A moment later, Chu Siyuan smiled, “Zhang Ruochen and Ling Feiyu are both the finest talents of the century. They will have great achievements in the future. Their success rate is at least a high 70%.”

While they seemed to have a high chance of success rate, the 30% percent failure rate was not insignificant.

They waited anxiously.

No one would know what the result would be, not until the very last minute.

Swoosh.

Two glowing dots popped out from the Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map and flew toward Zhang Ruochen and Ling Feiyu respectively.

The moment they opened their eyes, their eyes met each other.

Ling Feiyu looked confused, muttering: I thought I was dead. Why am I seeing you again? No... That’s not right... I am not Qing Yu Ou, I am Ling Feiyu.

Qing Yu Ou was her name in her seventh life.

She brought her palms up with her Holy Qi bubbling on them, placing them on her chest.

She closed her eyes again, trying to digest all the memories of seven lives, reflecting on the lessons gained.

Comparatively, Zhang Ruochen seemed troubled.

While he remembered everything that happened throughout the seven lives, he knew he had lived in a virtual world that did not exist.

The memories also contained his understanding of the Saintly Way, the power of time and space, sword mastery, fist techniques as well as palm techniques. These could not be digested within a short amount of time.

Chu Siyuan walked over to his back and placed his palm against his head.

“Zhang Ruochen, you have been through all seven lives. The things you have seen are equivalent to a saint who has lived through a hundred years. You are too young to digest all of this at once. I shall seal the memory of the six lives you had.”

Chu Siyuan cast six chains formed by his Spiritual Power into Zhang Ruochen’s head.

Slowly, colors starting to develop on his pale face.

The next morning, he finally managed to connect all of his memories and understanding to his saint soul.

“I spent the first half of my first life to experience things that any mortal would have experienced. During the second half, other than guiding Ling Feiyu on sword techniques, I had been practicing the fist and palm techniques.”

“Water Luo Fists at the sixth level... What’s happening? I remember achieving the eighth already in my first life.”

The Water Luo Fists had nine levels in total. Each advancement was a huge gap away from the previous level. Moreover, Luo Xu was still studying on the possibility of creating the tenth level.

“Sword Four had achieved the mastery level... I remember advancing to the Sword Five already.”

“Spiritual Power at the level of forty-eight... Shouldn’t it be level fifty?”

...

Zhang Ruochen had only combined his understanding gained from his first life, yet the advancement shown was a rapid one in all aspects.

Though they did not meet his expectations.

Zhang Ruochen shifted his gaze to Chu Siyuan, wondering if he had sealed some of his gains from the first life.

“Why are you staring at me?”

Chu Siyuan was annoyed, and he returned Zhang Ruochen’s stare.

He laughed after realizing what the stare was about. “Young man, are you suspecting whether I have sealed some of your gains? I’ll tell you what, not at all. Those are all that you have achieved in your first life. The rest is your hallucination.”

Zhang Ruochen answered in a doubtful tone, “Really?”

His answer infuriated Chu Siyuan even more. He felt as if his character had been questioned.

Chu Siyuan hissed, “The Seven Lives Seven Deaths Map is nothing but a map. Did you really think it could make you a world top warrior? Nothing in the world is real, and it’s also so with your senses. It is extremely normal if you have had some hallucinations.”

After a lengthy explanation, Zhang Ruochen was convinced.

In fact, he was quite satisfied with his achievement, for he had only combined his memories in his first life.

The Water Luo Fists had achieved the sixth level.

The Sword Four had achieved the mastery level.

Mastery of the Eight Changes of Scales had been completed.

The Spiritual Power had achieved the forty-eighth level.

All he had to do now was to digest all of these achievements completely in order to prepare himself for the memories of his second life.

Of course, he had remained as a Level Four Half-Saint in his first life.

That said, the improvement in his second, third... and seventh life would be less substantial.

There was a bottleneck to a half-saint's cultivation.

For instance, a half-saint would never master the Sword Seven.

A half-saint would never achieve the ninth level of the Water Luo Fists.

As the techniques increased in level, the time spent on cultivation made only a marginal difference to the progress.

What Zhang Ruochen had truly gained was not the achievements he had, but the different perspectives of life and saintly way.

“When I came back alive at the Yunwu Commandery, why did I lose all my skills learned in the past life?”

Zhang Ruochen gave it a thought.

He came to a conclusion that it could be due to his body.

The Crown Prince of the Sacred Central Empire had a different body than Zhang Ruochen. In fact, their body types vastly differed from each other.

A well mastered technique allowed a monk to perform an attack ten times stronger than the monk actually was. This was because the technique was blended seamlessly into the monk's body.

Given that the monk swapped to another body, he would not be able to perform a similar technique. Even if he remembered all of the moves, the strength and power released would never be equivalent to the one which the body had bound with the technique for.

Ling Feiyu had recovered from combining the memories of her seven lives. She remained seated, but the aura she gave out marked her terrifying presence, completely different from Beauty Shi.

Ling Feiyu laid her eyes on Zhang Ruochen, and asked, “Zhang Ruochen, what are you thinking?”

Zhang Ruochen lifted his head and met her gaze, smiling. He said, "I was wondering, between the two of us, who was the master and who was the student."

There was a moment of silence.

"Seems like it's true that you only have the memory of your first life."

Ling Feiyu seemed calm, so calm that it made her seem cold. Nodding her head, she stood up and was about to leave.

Chapter 1011 - The Rejection

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“Wait.”

Zhang Ruochen shouted and ran over to stop her. He hesitated for a moment, then asked with an embarrassed smile, “I have helped you a favor...could you help me in return?”

Ling Feiyu stood still, her body straight and her eyes sharp as a blade. “Speak.”

Zhang Ruochen was hoping she would help to take care of Mu Lingxi when she was back to the Moon Worship Demonic Sect.

Mu Lingxi was in trouble now. He felt the need to help her using his connection.

Ling Feiyu was the Imperial Empress of the Saintess Palace. If the leader of the demonic sect had spoken for Mu Lingxi, no one else would dare to say anything.

Ling Feiyu’s dark radiant eyes looked at Zhang Ruochen with a wistful expression. “You like her, don’t you? I never knew you had such complicated relationships.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled and did not explain further.

So much for his conscience being clean.

“You have killed two saints from the sect. They will come after you.”

Before Zhang Ruochen could say anything, she added, “I know they deserved to die, and I will report this to the Hierarch. One more thing: the Heir Stamp you took from

Ouyang Huan...do you have any intention of returning it to him?"

"How could I return something that has been taken away?" Zhang Ruochen answered.

Ling Feiyu nodded, then said, "Ouyang Huan is the Deity of the Moon Worship Demonic Sect, and he has his influence. Even if the Hierarch has nothing to say about it, Ouyang Huan and his people have seen you as their enemy. You will be in danger with your cultivation strength. As a token of appreciation, can I suggest something?"

"What is it?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

"Return to the Sect with me, and I will support you to take the position of the Deity from Ouyang Huan. Every Deity has the right to pick a saint lady from the Saintess Palace to be his partner. You could pick the Mu Lingxi," said Ling Feiyu.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head with a smile, rejecting her offer politely.

Ling Feiyu replied, "Are you doubting my ability to go against Ouyang Huan? I am the Imperial Saintess of the Saintess Palace, also the head of the Ling Family. I suppose the influence of the Ling Family should be enough for you to reconsider the offer?"

"The Ling Family are descendants of the Demonic Emperor. I have no question over their influence on the Demonic Sect. It's just...I have no interest in being the Deity of the Demonic Sect," Zhang Ruochen explained.

"Alright. I shall not ask further if you have already decided."

There was a flash of light and then she disappeared.

Chu Siyuan picked up the Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map from the floor and rolled it up. He seemed unhappy with her departure. "I have given her a great help, but she left without thanking me. Is that the manner a sword saint or the granddaughter of the Demonic Emperor should have?"

Luo Xu chuckled, "Ling Saintess never says thank you. She expresses her gratitude with action, not words."

“You seem to have a lot of faith in her.”

Chu Siyuan added further, “Now that she has recovered, I bet she is on her way to find Lin Suxian and take back what’s hers. Shouldn’t you be worried?”

“It is time to resolve this matter. Ling Saintess has recovered, I should get going too,” said Luo Xu.

Before he left, he asked Zhang Ruochen, “Zhang Ruochen, what about you? What is your plan after?”

“I am heading to the Royal Capital,” Zhang Ruochen answered.

“Hehe.”

Chu Siyuan laughed. “What a coincidence. I am going to the Royal Capital to visit a good friend. Shall we go together?”

“No, thank you. I have my plans already,” Zhang Ruochen rejected.

His plan in the Royal Capital was to visit his mother’s Imperial Mausoleum and meet up with Kong Lanyou. It would be inconvenient for him to be on a trip with Chu Siyuan.

Chu Siyuan’s face darkened. With an angry swing of his arm, he felt embarrassed to have been rejected.

Seeing as he was the head of the Painting Sect, he thought Zhang Ruochen would gladly accept his offer.

In fact, he was being rejected.

“I don’t care what your plan is, I am following you,” said Chu Siyuan, throwing his temper tantrum.

Chu Siyuan’s childlike behavior had rendered Zhang Ruochen speechless. He tried convincing again. “Dear Uncle Chu, you are the head of the Painting Sect and I am a fugitive. Shouldn’t you worry that your reputation will be affected if you are seen travelling with me?”

While Chu Siyuan enjoyed the “Uncle Chu” title, he asked, “Zhang Ruochen, do you have something secretive planned in the Royal Capital? Why won’t you let me follow?”

Chu Siyuan had lived for a hundred years. The change in Zhang Ruochen's tone had raised his suspicion already.

Luo Xu said, "Zhang Ruochen, you are carrying many precious items that will attract unnecessary attention. Brother Chu may be helpful if you guys are on the trip together."

Meanwhile, Luo Xu sent a hidden message to Zhang Ruochen asking him to take this opportunity to learn from Chu Siyuan.

Zhang Ruochen thought for a while and finally accepted the suggestion.

He knew if he said no again, Chu Siyuan might follow him in secret.

That would cause him more trouble.

After Luo Xu and Luo Shuihan left, Zhang Ruochen was left with Chu Siyuan on the green wooden boat, flowing down the stream towards the direction of the Royal Capital.

Little did they know there were three men watching them from the back, standing on an area that was slightly higher.

The three men were Kong Hongbi, Saint General Gui Gu, and a saint level elder from the Sacred Central Crypt.

Saint General Gui Gu said, "Luo Xu has left, but the painting saint Chu Siyuan is still on the boat. This man can destroy a force of a hundred thousand troops with a single painting. Not an easy target."

Kong Hongbi crossed his arms at his chest and asked, "Where are they heading to?"

"Going downstream in the Tong Ming River. Should be heading to the Royal Capital." The elder made his guess.

Kong Hongbi looked pleased. "If he is going to the Royal Capital, he's asking for it."

Saint General Gui Gu laughed, "We have been taking the Royal Capital over for so many years. If he is going to the Royal Capital, no one can save him, not even the painting saint."

Kong Hongbi said, “The painting saint is not related to Zhang Ruochen. He must be doing Luo Xu a favor by taking care of Zhang Ruochen. When they arrive at the Royal Capital, he won’t bother anymore. And that is when we make our move.”

The three of them disappeared into the forest, heading back to the Royal Capital for preparation.

The river was named as the Da Ming River. Its source began at the Savage Barren Territory, and ran for many hundreds of miles, stretching across three states in the Central Region.

The current was always unpredictable. Sometimes, it was as still as a lake; sometimes, it was as rapid as a waterfall.

Zhang Ruochen stood in front of the boat and continued practicing, attempting to link all of his gains obtained from the Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map.

“Sword Four.”

Zhang Ruochen thrust his sword forward, emitting a brightly lit beam to the front.

Boom.

A hundred miles to the right of the river bay, a canyon of a few thousand meters tall groaned.

The beam that his sword emitted had cut a hole through the valley.

Zhang Ruochen pulled the Abyss Ancient Sword back and looked through the hole, smiling. The penetration power of Sword Four is at least three or four times stronger than Sword Three.

He continued his practice. Other than Sword Four, he had also been practicing the Nine-Life Sword Technique and the True-Thunder Fire Sword Technique.

Zhang Ruochen had completed the training for both of the saint level techniques. What was left was the continuous practice.

Chu Siyuan sat in the cabin, watching Zhang Ruochen while sipping a cup of tea. He was shocked to see how much Zhang

Ruochen had improved.

It was remarkable for a half-saint to complete the training of a saint level technique.

However, Zhang Ruochen, a Level Four Half-Saint had completed two saint level sword techniques.

Not including the Water Luo Fists and the Sword Four from the Wordless Sword Manual.

This young boy is incredibly talented. If he could be guided appropriately, the world would have another great warrior to defend against the Immortal Vampires and the dead souls from the Netherworld.

Chu Siyuan never thought of Zhang Ruochen as someone righteous nor evil.

He felt a strong need for Zhang Ruochen to have a mentor, a guide that could lead him to the righteous pathway.

He told himself: The company he has does have an impact on his personality. When we arrive at the Royal Capital, I must introduce him to some of the great warriors or scholars I know to better influence him.

Zhang Ruochen spent the following days refining his fist techniques and sword skills during the day. At night, he would refine the divine blood with the hope of advancing his cultivation level.

As the green wooden boat got closer to the Royal Capital, the stream got busier with the increase in the number of boats and ships.

Some of the ships were huge and majestic. One could see the passengers reciting poems and dancing with their swords through the bright portholes. These fancy ships clearly belonged to the influential families of saints, or some of the famous ancient families.

The Royal Capital had once been the capital to the Sacred Central Empire. It had been the birthplace of many ancient families.

These families continued to grow even after the fall of the Sacred Central Empire.

“Zhang Ruochen, I have a Spiritual Power saint weapon that you may need.”

Chu Siyuan walked out from the cabin with a mask made of gold held in his hand, handing it over to Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen stared at the mask, looking doubtful. “What kind of Spiritual Power saint weapon is this?”

The creases on Chu Siyuan’s forehead deepened, then he snapped, “You are a fugitive! You will be caught even before entering the Royal Capital if you look like yourself.”

“This is the Gold Phantom Mask. It will cover the wearer’s scent while blurring his face and body, making him unrecognizable. It works on the saints of Spiritual Power too.”

Zhang Ruochen murmured to himself: Had you not tagged along, I would have entered the Royal Capital using Gu Linfeng’s appearance.

Nevertheless, he accepted the mask and covered half of his face, giving out a mysterious look.

Chapter 1012 - The Descendant of the Zhang Family

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

As he got closer to the Royal Capital, memories started flowing back to him. Eight hundred years had gone by, the historical buildings were well preserved and remained standing where they had always been.

The Royal Capital, I am back!

Zhang Ruochen stood on the side of the boat, watching as the familiar scenery went by.

At the peak of Kong Le Mountain, there was a 74-story tower built by an ancient saint. The young Zhang Ruochen and Chi Yao used to climb up to the top of the tower, overlooking the prosperous Royal Capital.

There were two majestic bronze lion statues guarding at the gate, representing the sigil of the Sacred Central Empire. To his surprise, these were not destroyed during the war.

The walls guarding the city were excessively tall and the gate was magnificent, similar to the entrance of the Heavenly Palace.

The moment he arrived at the dock, Zhang Ruochen was overwhelmed with emotion as he recalled his past memories.

There was a group of officials, at least a hundred of them, in their imperial uniforms standing in line at the dock, as though they were waiting for the arrival of some important guests.

Zhang Ruochen threw a quick glance at Chu Siyuan and exclaimed, “Senior Chu, such big influence you have! A parade to welcome your arrival!”

“Really?”

Chu Siyuan looked more surprised than happy. He thought: I have been keeping a low profile about my trip. No one knows about it, not even the scholars of Confucianism. Why would there be a welcoming team?

Anyhow, he had his robe adjusted, getting ready for the welcoming parade before stepping out of the cabin. But he soon discovered the troops were looking in the other direction, next to him. It was not his welcoming parade.

There was a large metal ship moving slowly to the dock. The troops stepped forward to a group of men that had just landed and escorted them to the Royal Capital.

“Oh, they are not here for you. It seems you do not have much influence in the Royal Capital,” said Zhang Ruochen at a higher pitch.

That was on purpose. He wanted to tease Chu Siyuan.

Irritated by his tone, Chu Siyuan hissed, “If I had informed them about my trip, the welcoming troops would be ten or even a hundred times larger than theirs. But I prefer to keep a low profile.”

“Maybe so, maybe not.”

Zhang Ruochen laughed, “We have arrived at the Royal Capital, and I say it is time for us to part ways.”

As soon as he finished the sentence, he disappeared from Chu Siyuan’s sight and entered the city by himself.

Chu Siyuan stroked his beard, his eyes a little squinted: Why is he in a hurry to part ways? He must be hiding something from me.

Had it been someone else, Chu Siyuan would not have been interested to find out. But Zhang Ruochen was not someone else. He had accomplished many shocking things.

Chu Siyuan brushed his robe lightly and followed closely behind Zhang Ruochen.

“Is he really following me? Does the head of the Paint Sect have nothing better to do?” Chu Siyuan’s actions rendered him speechless.

Rather than heading over to the Imperial Mausoleum directly as planned, he detoured around the Royal Capital.

Little did he know he had also been watched by someone else the moment he entered the city gate.

The Royal Capital had a long standing history which could be traced back to the ancient times. It served as the capital for the Sacred Central Empire and many ancient dynasties.

The city grew alongside the kingdoms it had spread across. Today, its territory was a few thousand miles squared, with a population of a billion citizens.

One could call the city a small country considering its large territory and the dense population.

After spending half a day in the outlying areas of the Royal Capital, Zhang Ruochen went to explore the city center. The streets got busier along the way, and there were also more skilled swordsmen.

Suddenly, a strong blood stench wafted through the wall of a mansion on his left.

Outside the mansion was a troop of soldiers mounted on beasts and clad in black armor.

The riders surrounded the mansion, looking cold and merciless on the back of the beasts.

Among the riders, there were four sorcerers whose purpose was to cast a spell over the mansion, establishing boundaries so that no one inside could leave.

Zhang Ruochen stopped a passing monk of the Heavenly Realm and asked, “What’s happening?”

“They are the Canglong Army. Under the command of Lingxiao Heavenly King, they are here to arrest the rebels

supporting the previous ruling dynasty,” the monk whispered. He left after a while, leaving Zhang Ruochen gaping at the news.

Zhang Ruochen circled around the mansion and found a corner that was unguarded. Directing the power of space at the wall, he cut a hole through it and entered.

He never knew what happened to the rest of the Zhang royal family members. Now that he had a lead, he had to find out.

The smell of blood was sickeningly stronger inside the mansion.

Bodies were piling on the floor, including the old people and children.

The walkway was covered in blood.

The lights in some of the rooms flickered, followed by bloodcurdling screams; then they went out, plunging the rooms into total darkness and silence.

Zhang Ruochen took a deep breath and walked toward the main hall.

The entrance of the hall was manned by the Canglong Army while the general was sitting at the main chair inside the hall.

He was a man in his thirties, with broad shoulders, a big chest and a cold stare.

His name was Xie Kui.

Kneeling in front of him were thirteen monks dressed in fine clothing, a clear sign of their noble status.

There were ten other beheaded bodies lying motionlessly behind them.

Xie Kui groaned, “Tell me, where are the rest of them? I shall spare the one who speaks up.”

He pointed at a teenage boy who was 11 or 12 years old and said, “Let’s start with you.”

A two-meter tall soldier walked to the side of the boy, placing a broad sword at his neck.

The boy would be executed if nothing valuable came out from him.

Despite his young age, he seemed determined and said with a shivering voice, “You... you filthy people... when the Emperor is back, we will take back what is ours.”

Xie Kui shook his head and waved his hand.

The giant soldier gave a cold laugh, swinging his sword at the boy’s neck.

All thirteen monks shut their eyes, and one of them was weeping.

Snapped!

The broad sword was broken into two.

And fell onto the ground with a flop.

“Who’s there?”

The soldiers drew their swords from their sheaths simultaneously, preparing for any incoming attack.

Xie Kui remained sitting in the chair, his eyes glancing around. He said with a laugh, “Finally, the leader of the Zhang family. I thought you would never appear.”

Zhang Ruochen stood next to the teenage boy in his Shooting Star Invisible Cloak and said, “Do you serve the Lingxiao Heavenly King?”

Xie Kui knew the intruder was someone powerful, someone he should not underestimate. He stood up and replied, “Lingxiao Heavenly King has eliminated many rebels with the objective of restoring world peace during his rule in the Royal Capital. It has been 800 years. Why are the Zhang family thinking of restoring their empire still?”

After confirming their identities, Zhang Ruochen nodded and replied coldly, “You have killed many innocent people. Shouldn’t you be sorry?”

“Make us, if you can!”

Xie Kui commanded, “Take him.”

The two-meter tall soldier who was nearest Zhang Ruochen swung the broken sword at him.

He struck his palm at the soldier's chest before the blade could reach him.

The soldier crumbled to the ground right after the hit, for all his bones had been crushed from the palm strike.

Zhang Ruochen stretched his arm into the air, his fingers extending into a sword sign. The air above the mansion began to coalesce into thousands of swords in a spiral of power.

The swords began dancing and flying around the mansion, and the Canglong Army tumbled one after another.

Xie Kui was appalled. Never had he thought the intruder would be this powerful. He took out a Signal Flare and was about to transmit the signal after carving a message on it.

Before he could, Zhang Ruochen's palm strike had already hit his chest.

The palm strike was charged with fire and Xie Kui's body was burning like a glowing charcoal before transforming into ashes.

The mansion was now in pin drop silence.

Within a few minutes, the Canglong Army was killed and none survived.

"Thank you for your help savior."

"How do we address you, savior?"

...

The thirteen living descendants of the Zhang family stood up from the ground and bowed at Zhang Ruochen to express their gratitude.

"I am also from the Zhang family."

Zhang Ruochen put on the Gold Phantom Mask while staring at the man who had the highest cultivation. He asked the man politely, "Could you take me to see other descendants of the Zhang family?"

The man was the owner of the mansion. His name was Zhang Fengxing, with a cultivation level of the Fourth Change of the Fish-Dragon Realm.

Zhang Fengxing looked troubled.

Clearly, he did not trust Zhang Ruochen. Not yet.

On the other hand, the teenage boy looked up to Zhang Ruochen very much. Zhang Ruochen was like a hero sent by god who could kill someone as powerful as Xie Kui with a single palm strike.

The teenage boy was motivated. He wished he could possess the power Zhang Ruochen had.

He said, "Father, this brother has killed hundreds of the Canglong Army. He must not be working for the imperial court."

Zhang Fengxing was a seasoned veteran. Unlike his son, he did not trust Zhang Ruochen. "I need to inform the leaders before I make my decision. Hope you understand my situation."

"It's alright. I have someone following me, and I don't mind waiting while I get rid of them," said Zhang Ruochen.

Chapter 1013 - Becoming a Person Useful to the World

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen and Zhang Fengxing's group came to a mostly hidden location to stay in temporarily. After that, Zhang Fengxing left alone to report to the upper levels of the Royal Zhang Family.

This location was an inn. There weren't any important figures present. That was why Zhang Fengxing dared to bring Zhang Ruochen here. Even if Zhang Ruochen had other motives, he couldn't cause any major damage.

Zhang Fengxing's son was named Zhang Shu. He was eleven years old and had completed the Huang Realm. He counted as a genius.

Zhang Ruochen learned many valuable things from Zhang Shu's mouth.

Their bloodline descended from Lord Mingjiang, the 12th lord of the Royal Zhang Family. Zhang Fengxing was merely the rudder master of a spy group.

Emperor Ming had had 48 siblings in total. When Zhang Ruochen had been born, around half of those royal aunts and uncles had already died. Those alive were all strong cultivators with very long lives.

The so-called twelfth lord was Emperor Ming's twelfth brother, also known as Zhang Ruochen's twelfth royal uncle.

Other than Emperor Ming's siblings, there were actually many lineages of the Royal Zhang Family. They were spread

throughout the Central Region. This was a large ancient family.

After the First Central Empire was established, the Zhang Family had been bloodily massacred by the imperial court and Ministry of War. However, they still couldn't be wiped out entirely.

The Zhang Family's forces went underground and stayed hidden.

Eight hundred years ago, Twelfth Royal Uncle was already 200 years old, Zhang Ruochen thought. I wonder if he's still alive.

"Big Brother," Zhang Shu said. "Your cultivation is so awesome. Can you teach me something?"

"Of course." Zhang Ruochen studied Zhang Shu and nodded. "You're only in the Huang Realm now and can change the technique you cultivate. I'll teach you a top cultivation technique."

"The one I'm learning now is the Spirit Frost Technique," Zhang Shu said. "It's in the lower class Ghost Level. Does that count as top?"

Zhang Ruochen shook his head softly and took out a piece of jade. Using his Spiritual Energy, he carved a technique onto the surface.

Taking the jade, Zhang Shu studied the words on it and was deeply shocked. "The Sacred Taming Guide, a lower class King Level technique? This...is a technique that only...direct descendants of the royal family can cultivate. Big Brother, can I cultivate it?"

Zhang Ruochen looked at him with assurance and nodded. "You should know the importance of the Sacred Taming Guide. Thus, you must keep it a secret. Don't let anyone know."

Zhang Shu immediately put away the jade carved with the Sacred Taming Guide. He nodded seriously. At the same time, he guessed that this big brother must be a core figure of the

Zhang Family. Otherwise, how could he have the Sacred Taming Guide?

Zhang Ruochen had given Zhang Shu this technique because he appreciated the boy's character.

Zhang Shu was only eleven years old. A sword had hung over his neck, but it couldn't make him lower his head. It was evident that he had a strong will and deserved to be guided.

Zhang Ruochen waited inside the inn. Abruptly, a wave of Spiritual Energy passed in. Chu Siyuan streamed through the wooden walls and appeared in Zhang Ruochen's room.

Looking at him, Zhang Ruochen felt a headache coming. "Senior Chu, why can't I get rid of you?"

Expression serious, Chu Siyuan scoffed. "You don't know that the strong figures of the Sacred Central Crypt have had their eyes on you since you entered Sacred City?"

"What does it have to do with you?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

Chu Siyuan was so angry that his body shook and his whiskers stood up straight. "You kid... You don't know what's good for you. I helped you get rid of them out of the goodness of my heart and yet you use this attitude with me?"

Zhang Ruochen turned curious. "Senior Chu killed the strong figures of Sacred Central Crypt?" he exclaimed.

"Am I that cruel?" Chu Siyuan asked. "I only made them unconscious and used my Spiritual Energy to wipe some of their memories."

Zhang Ruochen's expression was one of scorn. Not cruel? He'd just killed 100,000 Immortal Vampires a few days ago. It was practically one person massacring thousands.

"Zhang Ruochen," Chu Siyuan said seriously. "I must remind you that acting justly is correct, but you better not get involved between the imperial court and Zhang Family. Otherwise, you will definitely bring trouble to yourself."

Actually, Chu Siyuan had some words to say about the imperial court and Ministry of War's cruel tactics too.

The Ministry of War had used very dirty tricks against the descendants of the previous royal family. They killed the innocent, forcing many people to fight back.

Thus, Chu Siyuan didn't think that Zhang Ruochen had done anything wrong by helping some members of the Zhang Family. Instead, he thought that Zhang Ruochen had been a Good Samaritan and was a good and just man.

Zhang Ruochen chuckled. "I am already a criminal wanted by the Empress. How can I further offend the imperial court?"

Chu Siyuan's eyes were cold. "You're still alive only because you haven't met any truly powerful figures. Many top fighters of the Ministry of War and imperial court are gathered in the Sacred City. If you get too close to the Zhang Family, you'll expose yourself soon. Since Luo Xu handed you to me, I'm responsible for your safety. You can't stay here. Follow me immediately."

Zhang Ruochen shook his head. He didn't plan on leaving yet. He wanted to continue waiting. It would be best if he could meet the higher figures of the Zhang Family.

Chu Siyuan used a forceful method and struck like lightning. Sizzle, sizzle.

A layer of light emerged on his fingertip. He drew a circle between Zhang Ruochen's brows. Zhang Ruochen's Holy Qi and Spiritual Energy were instantly sealed and he lost all his power.

"Old Chu, what are you doing?"

He was furious. He felt like Chu Siyuan was purposely messing up his plans every time.

Chu Siyuan shook his head with a sigh. "I'm saving you so you don't jump into hell. As long as you leave with me, I'll accept any of your conditions."

"We're unrelated. Why are you so nice to me?" Zhang Ruochen suddenly felt like crying but had no tears.

"You are talented and are a crucial talent," Chu Siyuan said honestly. "The Kunlun's Field will be in chaos soon. We need

a young elite to take over from the older Saints and support the world. Otherwise, the human race may become extinct. I am prepared to lead you onto the right way and teach you the morals of being a person so you can become someone useful to the world.”

Zhang Ruochen knew he couldn't convince this stubborn man. Gradually, he calmed down. “Earlier, you said that you'd agree to any conditions if I leave with you?”

“Yes.”

Jutting out his chin, Chu Siyuan combed his whiskers like an enlightened man. “The leader of the Painting Sect keeps his word.”

“What if I want a Fifth Grade Divine Origin Pill?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Chu Siyuan laughed. “Is it difficult for me to get a Fifth Grade Divine Origin Pill? Lad, do you know the Cai Family?”

“The Cai Family, one of the top four ancient clans in the Sacred City?”

Chu Siyuan nodded. “I am close friends with the head of the Cai Family. Their first son is my second disciple. Their first grandson is my grand-disciple and the top of this year's ranking. With this connection, do you think it's difficult to receive a Fifth Grade Divine Origin Pill?”

“So you plan on taking me to the Cai Family to see what an ancient family is like?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“Smart.” Chu Siyuan nodded. He looked at Zhang Ruochen, thinking that he would be a good student.

Chu Siyuan was determined in teaching Zhang Ruochen how to be a good person. If Zhang Ruochen continued to fight back, he would probably misjudge Zhang Ruochen as a rebellious man and intensify his “teachings.”

In this case, Zhang Ruochen had to submit to him temporarily and then find the chance to escape. If he could really get that Fifth Grade Divine Origin Pill, it would be even better.

“Okay!” Zhang Ruochen said. “I’ll follow you. Undo my seal now.”

Chu Siyuan undid the seals on him and patted his shoulders. “I checked already,” Chu Siyuan said earnestly. “The Cai Family will hold a banquet tonight, inviting all the prides of the Sacred City. It’s to congratulate my grand-disciple for becoming top of the new ranking.”

“You can use this chance to widen your worldview. You will see what a true young hero and the hope of the human race is like. In addition, don’t get involved with the Monks of the Demonic Sect anymore. As the saying goes, those who get close to ink will darken.”

Zhang Ruochen kept saying, “Yes.” After that, they left the inn. He followed Chu Siyuan to the Cai Family.

At the same time, Mu Lingxi, who’d left the Moon Worship Demonic Sect, had finally arrived at Tiantai State after traveling for half a month. Instead of finding Zhang Ruochen, she met Ling Feiyu.

Staring at Ling Feiyu standing in front of her, Mu Lingxi’s expression turned guarded. “Who are you? Why are you stopping me?”

Ling Feiyu stood on the ancient riverbank with her arms crossed behind her back. Facing the foggy river, she uttered, “Ling Feiyu.”

“You’re the Saintess?”

Mu Lingxi studied Ling Feiyu’s back carefully and finally realized that this person was indeed similar to the Saintess. Ling Feiyu’s sharp sword aura was unique. Mu Lingxi felt terrified even when standing 100 feet away.

“No need to find that man anymore,” Ling Feiyu said. “Follow me back to the headquarters!”

Mu Lingxi was naturally overjoyed to see that the Saintess hadn’t died. She immediately bowed. “Since you know who I’m looking for, you should know that I must go see him.”

“No matter you’re reason, you should go back now,” Ling Feiyu said. “Don’t you know that Saints from the sect have been following you? They want to see Zhang Ruochen more than you.”

“But the Founder has issued the Death God’s Order. Zhang Ruochen is in danger now.” Mu Lingxi lowered her head, eyes turning red.

“When I return to the headquarters, there won’t be any Death God’s Order.”

Mu Lingxi was unwilling, but in the end, she had no choice but to follow Ling Feiyu back to the headquarters of the Demonic Sect.

“When we return, I will cultivate in isolation to try for a very important realm. During that time, you will be in charge of the Saintess Palace.”

Seeing that Mu Lingxi wasn’t paying attention, Ling Feiyu reminded, “Your cultivation is far behind Zhang Ruochen now. If you wish to catch up, you’d better work hard from now on.”

Mu Lingxi didn’t know why the Saintess cared so much about her and Zhang Ruochen, but she was right. She really did have to work hard.

Chapter 1014 - Crown Prince Chi, Princess Wan

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Emperor Ming City was similar in size to the eastern Sacred City. It was split into many portions divided by independent defensive formations.

The Cai Family was an ancient and respected clan. Their territory was in a region with very rich Spiritual Qi. Inside the area, there were dozens of huge spiritual mountains and clusters of pavilions shrouded by spiritual fog. There were also many saint families located there.

It was an honor to be neighbors with the Cai Family.

Their mansion was like a royal palace. It was very majestic and took up half of the region.

Tonight, the Cai residence was unusually lively. Fancy carriages streamed past one after another.

The savage beasts pulling the carriages were at least in the Fifth Level. They were comparable to humans in the Fish-Dragon Realm. This also showed the high statuses of the people inside the carriages.

Some of the carriages even had Sixth Level savage beasts. Every time such a carriage appeared, there would always be a commotion. Then an important figure of the Cai Family would come out to personally welcome the person.

Zhang Ruochen stood beside Chu Siyuan with the Gold Phantom Mask. “You really can get me a Fifth Grade Divine Origin Pill?”

“Don’t worry. It’s a simple task for me to get it with my status.” Chu Siyuan glanced at Zhang Ruochen with disdain.

“But why do I feel like the Cai Family doesn’t really care about you?” Zhang Ruochen asked. “Technically, shouldn’t the head come out personally to welcome someone as important as you?”

Chu Siyuan chuckled while combing his whiskers. “I am always very low-key. They don’t even know that I will visit tonight.”

He thought that Zhang Ruochen was doubting his status, so he prepared to show off. “I will send a signal to my second disciple now and tell him to come welcome you. Prepare yourself though. Don’t get scared by the scene.”

“Wait.” Zhang Ruochen immediately stopped Chu Siyuan. “Senior, haven’t you always been low-key? Let’s be low-key today too. After all, I’m here to witness the talents of the Sacred City. It’s probably not good to act flashily.”

Chu Siyuan thought for a moment and nodded. “That’s true,” he said.

Looking at Chu Siyuan’s back, Zhang Ruochen smiled. Then he followed over casually.

The two waited in line for a long time before finally reaching the Cai residence’s entrance.

A three-meter-tall warrior in golden armor extended a thick golden arm to stop Chu Siyuan. “You must have an invitation to attend tonight’s banquet,” he intoned.

Since when did Chu Siyuan need an invitation to enter the Cai residence?

He wasn’t a calm man, so he huffed coldly and said, “Why didn’t you ask for an invitation from the carriage that just drove past?”

Cai Mingliang walked out from behind the golden armored warrior. He had a mustache and was slightly fat. Sainly light glowed around him. He was actually a powerful First Level Half-Saint.

Glancing at Chu Siyuan, he saw that the man was dressed plainly and wasn't a martial artist. Cai Mingliang's eyes grew less impressed. Scoffing, he said, "The carriage that just drove past belongs to the Yuan Saint Clan. The person inside is a First Level Half-Saint figure of the clan. How can you two compare to him?"

The other banquet-goers all came in fancy carriages that represented their high status. Zhang Ruochen and Chu Siyuan had come in plain clothing. The cultivators of the Cai Family naturally looked down on them, blocking them outside.

"Since when have I ever needed an invitation to enter the Cai residence?"

Chu Siyuan had a bad temper. He wanted to force his way in.

Cai Mingliang's eyes turned cold and pushed Chu Siyuan out. "Check where this is before trying to get free food," he said in a low voice. "Today is the Sixth Young Master's happy day. I do not wish it to get bloody."

The wine at the Cai Family's banquet was at the very least the True Half-Saint Fluid or even Saint Fluid.

The dishes were all treasures that Half-Saints would drool over. They could help improve cultivation, aid with the comprehension of the Saintly Way, or even exercise the physical body.

Thus, there were always people who tried to get free food at the Cai Family's banquets. Eating at an ancient family's banquet once could save them ten hard years of cultivation.

In the past, some independent martial artists had really fooled their way in and got some substantial benefits. Afterward, news spread and more and more independent cultivators came to try their luck.

If they could get in, they would naturally hit a jackpot. Even if they couldn't, the Cai Family wouldn't kill them on such an auspicious day either. They would at most be kicked out.

Clearly, Cai Mingliang and the warrior both thought Chu Siyuan and Zhang Ruochen were independent cultivators who

wanted to get free food. The other banquet-goers all looked at them with ridicule.

“People really try to scam their way in to ancient families? I didn’t believe it before.”

“These people are too lowly. Even if we toss them leftovers from the banquet, they’ll probably go crazy fighting for them.”

...

Zhang Ruochen was okay. He was still calm and didn’t care about what the people were saying. On the other hand, Chu Siyuan was so angry that smoke was about to shoot out of him. He wanted to announce his name to intimidate the juniors who didn’t respect him.

Zhang Ruochen immediately said telepathically, “Senior Chu, please bear it. Many people will laugh at you if news spreads that the Painter Saint was mistaken as a lowly thief.”

Chu Siyuan’s expression changed dramatically. He shut his mouth, thinking that Zhang Ruochen made sense. After all, those old guys at his level would definitely come laugh at him if they found out.

They wouldn’t move on from this for at least a century.

This pertained to his reputation. He must be careful.

Behind Zhang Ruochen and Chu Siyuan were two golden-winged condor kings pulling a pearl carriage. It had been waiting there for a long while.

An unhappy voice streamed out. “Manager Cai, when are you going to make us wait until? They’re just two thieves. If it’s inappropriate for you to act, I can do it for you.”

With that, a handsome young man walked out of the carriage. He looked to be around 27 or 28 years old. He wore a golden python robe and cape. He was covered in heavy murderous intent.

This murderous Qi had been developed through countless bloodshed.

In addition to him, a beauty in purple clothing slowly walked out of the carriage too. She was slim and had long black hair. Purple saintly light flowed around her. She was ethereal.

“Oh, it’s Crown Prince Chi and Princess Wan. Please, come on inside.” Cai Mingliang immediately walked to the carriage and greeted the man and woman respectfully.

Just how esteemed were they to make a First Level Half-Saint bow to them?

Zhang Ruochen couldn’t help but look over at Crown Prince Chi and Princess Wan. He had to admit that these two could live up to the name of prides of heaven.

The other banquet-goers were all discussing them too.

A spiritual elder clad in a Taoist robe asked curiously, “Who exactly are these two? How come even General Cai has to bow to them?”

A man from some saint clan poked his head out of his carriage. “You don’t even know them? These two are important. That young man is from the royal Chi Family.”

“Do you know Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion? He’s one of their four sons, Chi Yutang.”

The spiritual elder thought carefully and shook his head. “The four sons of the Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion? Chi Yutang? I think... I’ve never heard of him.”

The man from the saint family grew impatient. “You should know Chi Wansui, right?”

“Chi Wansui, one of the nine Heirs?” The elder was so shocked that his eyes were about to pop out.

The man from the saint family grinned. “Chi Wansui is the top of the four sons. At the same time, he’s Chi Yutang’s younger brother. Now do you know how intimidating Chi Yutang’s status is?”

“Chi Wansui’s elder brother is indeed a bit scary,” the elder said.

The man from the saint family stared at the woman called Princess Wan, mesmerized. “That Princess Wan is even more impressive.”

“Really?” The elder didn’t think so.

“She’s the second beauty of Saint City. Her name is Wan Huayu. Everywhere she goes, there are countless handsome talents following her. She is definitely a true pride.”

The elder scoffed. “She’s just pretty and can only attract you young people.”

“She’s the only daughter of Wan Zhaoyi, the Little Saint God,” the man from the saint family added.

The smile on the elder’s face disappeared immediately.

“Scary,” he muttered. “That really scared me...” He patted his body and then knocked on the other man’s carriage, saying awkwardly, “I suddenly realized that I forgot my invitation in my residence. Can you take me into the Cai mansion?”

The man from the saint family looked cautious. “You aren’t an independent cultivator who wants free food, are you?”

The elder’s expression darkened. Puffing up his chest, he said confidently, “Junior, I am a senior with status. I won’t be humiliated by you like that.”

Seeing how saintly and confident the man looked, the man from the saint family suddenly felt a bit unconfident.

He was worried that he’d offended some super strong cultivator and would bring trouble to his own family. Thus, he welcomed the elder into his carriage.

It was a different scene at the entrance of the Cai mansion.

“I will enter the Cai mansion today, no matter what. It will be impossible to chase me away.”

Chu Siyuan was stubborn and had a bad temper. He blocked the center of the gate, ready to confront the Cai Family to the end.

Cai Mingliang was so angry his fingers were shaking. He’d never met such a shameless old man. “Immediately...chase

this old guy away,” he ordered.

“Who dares?” Chu Siyuan roared. “Try me and I’ll break my head open on this gate!”

It was Zhang Ruochen’s idea to threaten the Cai Family with his death. After all, the Cai Family didn’t want someone to die in front of their gate on such a celebratory day. That would be such bad luck.

Of course, only Zhang Ruochen knew that this was a bad idea.

“He’s just a thief. It’s nothing hard to kill you. I’ll send you off.”

Chi Yutang’s expression turned cold. He flashed and flew off of the carriage. With a hand wearing a golden glove, he went to grab Chu Siyuan’s neck. His hand tore through the air.

With Chi Yutang’s strength, wouldn’t crushing Chu Siyuan’s neck be as easy as crushing tofu?

Chapter 1015 - Patriarch Painter Saint?

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Most of the Monks present had noble statuses or very powerful cultivations. They didn't understand why Chi Yutang with this status would personally come kill an elder.

This action was very strange and abnormal.

Of course, some people also noticed something amiss.

This elder with half white and half black hair didn't have any Holy Qi or Spiritual Energy waves and was just like a normal person. However, his Blood Qi was very strong. He was filled with vitality and wasn't at all like an old man close to dying.

It was very possible that Chi Yutang had noticed this and thus decided to test him personally.

Plus, if the elder with white and black hair was just a regular man, Chi Yutang killing him would just be like killing an ant. It wasn't a big deal at all.

Just then, a figure flashed between Chi Yutang and Chu Siyuan. The man's hand shot out like lightning and he pointed forward. A thick bolt of purple lightning snaked out.

Boom!

Chi Yutang took 17 steps back in total. Dense electricity continued to flow through his arm, crackling.

The man standing between Chi Yutang and Chu Siyuan had a golden mask on. It was Zhang Ruochen.

He collected his Spiritual Power and the electricity at his fingertips vanished too. “The royal Crown Prince is so aggressive and lawless, killing the innocent” he said mockingly. “Is this the world that the Empress rules over? I’ve learned something new today.”

The other banquet-goers all exchanged awkward glances. They found this incredible.

“That young man could actually stop Chi Yutang, one of the four princes of the Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion. Even if Chi Yutang didn’t use all his power, this is still unbelievable.”

“He used Spiritual Power and could control lightning. That attack is comparable to a 47th level Spiritual Half-Saint’s full power attack. He might not even have used all his power.”

Zhang Ruochen was wearing the Gold Phantom Mask, but everyone could still see that he wasn’t that old.

Inside the carriage led by the golden-winged condors, Wan Huayu stared at Zhang Ruochen with her pretty eyes. Her small lips curled up into a smile.

He’s so young but already has such strong Spiritual Power. This man must not be a nameless figure. I’m afraid Chi Yutang has caused some trouble.

Wan Huayu didn’t step out to stop Chi Yutang and Zhang Ruochen’s conflict. She was happy to watch the show. At the same time, she was curious as to who this man with the golden mask was.

Chi Yutang’s expression turned cold. “Today, the Saint Leader of the Cai Family will announce the status of the Vampire Secrets. The Immortal Vampires will definitely try to infiltrate the Cai mansion to spy for news.”

“I noticed something wrong with you two long ago, which is why I came to test you. As expected, you two aren’t average men. Take off your disguise right this moment and show your true face!”

An uproar instantly spread amongst the Monks present. They stared at Zhang Ruochen and Chu Siyuan with more animosity.

Humans and the Vampires were forever standing at opposite sides. They couldn't coexist. If Zhang Ruochen and Chu Siyuan were truly Vampires, they would be killed by thousands today.

“The Saint Leader of the Cai Family will announce the status of the Vampire Secrets?”

Zhang Ruochen looked over at Chu Siyuan to ask what was going on.

However, Chu Siyuan was also staring at Zhang Ruochen. Angrily, he said telepathically, “Zhang Ruochen, didn't you say to be low-key? Why did you show your cultivation but stop me from revealing my identity?”

Thinking about how he'd thrown a tantrum earlier, Chu Siyuan's old face reddened. He felt like his reputation from these centuries was completely destroyed now.

Now, he finally realized that he might have been tricked by Zhang Ruochen.

This guy must be taking revenge. He probably stood in the back, laughing at me.

Zhang Ruochen didn't dare to smile. “Senior Chu is a sect leader,” he said seriously. “You have a lofty status and naturally must be more low-key. It's different for me though. I am in my prime and couldn't control myself when I saw someone disrespecting you. That's why I did that impulsive thing.”

Zhang Ruochen didn't want Chu Siyuan to keep getting worked up over this, so he immediately asked, “What's with the Vampire Secrets?”

Eight hundred years ago, an ancestor of the Cai Family had been a library official in the Sacred Central Empire. He'd indeed participated in the compilation of the Vampire Secrets.

However, why was the Cai Family announcing the results of the Vampire Secrets instead of the Shangguan Family?

After all, Shangguan Que had been the most important figure in writing the book. When the Saint Lady had gone to visit

him, she didn't even meet him or receive any specific answers about the Vampire Secrets.

She'd only received a piece of paper and almost lost her life over this.

"What's so strange about this?" Chu Siyuan asked telepathically. "Back when the Sacred Central Empire still existed, the patriarch of the Cai Family had been an official of the Fengyuan Archives. He'd personally participated in the writing of the Vampire Secrets. Isn't it normal for the descendants of the Cai Family to know about it?"

It was clear that Chu Siyuan had learned about this long ago.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes hardened. "From what I know, the main writer was Shangguan Que. How come he's not the one announcing it?"

"Saint King Que hasn't appeared in many years. It's unknown if he's still alive." Chu Siyuan's eyes turned strange. "Last time, that pride of the Nalan Family visited the Shangguan Family...didn't she almost die? I suspect that the Immortal Vampires have already infiltrated the Shangguan Family. Saint King Que might have died years ago."

Zhang Ruochen and Chu Siyuan communicated telepathically for a long time without caring about Chi Yutang.

"Never has anyone ignored me like this," Chi Yutang said in a low voice. "You two are too presumptuous."

Zhang Ruochen glanced at Chi Yutang. "No one is ignoring you. It's just that...we think you're too stupid."

Chi Yutang's eyes narrowed. Forming claws with his hands, two balls of Holy Qi spewed out of his palms. "I used less than one percent of my power just now. Now, I will use ten percent. Let's see if you dare to speak arrogantly now."

Zhang Ruochen was still calm. "If you aren't convinced, then saying you're stupid is overestimating you. What kind of pig brain do you have to suspect that we're Immortal Vampires?"

"The Cai Family announced countless days ago that they'd announce the results of the Vampire Secrets today. If you're an

Immortal Vampire, would you be stupid enough to infiltrate the Cai Family only today?"

"The Cai Family is an ancient family with a huge business. Even the slaves, maids, and guards are countless. If I'm an Immortal Vampire, I can just capture a guard, suck his blood dry, turn into him, and easily slip into the Cai Family, can't I?"

The way Zhang Ruochen berated Chi Yutang shocked everyone present.

What kind of person was Chi Yutang? He was one of the four princes of the Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion. He was Chi Wansui's older brother. How could someone dare to call him stupid with a pig brain?

Chu Siyuan was a cultured Confucius cultivator. He felt like Zhang Ruochen had gone too far, but he still felt satisfied.

Chi Yutang's face went from red to white. The capillaries in his eyes turned visible as the murderous Qi around him grew stronger. Anyone could see that he was close to exploding. He would use some harsh method to turn both the old man and young man into ash.

"What? You want to kill someone?" Zhang Ruochen looked at Cai Mingliang with some anger. "The Cai Family is an ancient family. Your ancestors have given birth to an emperor before. How can you be so lowly? Someone wants to shed blood before your house on such a celebratory day. You're not going to do anything about it?"

Cai Mingliang was both embarrassed and furious. Of course, he didn't dare to really offend Chi Yutang. After all, Chi Yutang represented the Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion. He represented the royal family.

"These two aren't here just to cause trouble, right?" a young man from a saint clan's carriage called out. "They're just blocking the entrance. If this continues, the Cai Family should just cancel the banquet!"

"They're offending Chi Yutang and the Cai Family at once. Who even are they?"

If Zhang Ruochen hadn't shown that he was a Spiritual Half-Saint, the other banquet-goers would really think that they were just here for free food.

It was different now.

After all, a Spiritual Half-Saint was a top figure no matter where they went. Even an ancient family would try to bribe them with great treatment. How could they come for free food?

Right then, a figure with a huge aura flew out of the Cai mansion. He landed outside the door and glared at Cai Mingliang, uttering, "Cai Mingliang, what's going on? How can you bar this guest outside the door?"

This man was Cai Jin and was an upper figure of the Cai Family as a Ninth Level Half-Saint. He was in charge of everything that happened in the Cai mansion.

Seeing Cai Jin, Cai Mingliang was slightly relieved. "Main Manager, there are two guys who want to get free food and entered a conflict with Crown Prince Chi."

Cai Jin looked at Chi Yutang with a pleasant smile and bowed. "It is my utmost honor to welcome Crown Prince Chi into the Cai Saint Mansion."

Chi Yutang glared in Zhang Ruochen and Chu Siyuan's direction with a hateful expression. He collected his Holy Qi and bowed to Cai Jin. "You came just in time. It is indeed a bit inappropriate for me to do these things in the Cai Family. What happens next will be up to you!"

"They're just two lowly thieves. I will not punish them... lightly..." Cai Jin looked over with a smile, but when he saw Chu Siyuan, his heart skipped a beat and he froze.

Was that...the Patriarch Painter Saint?

Cai Jin hadn't entered the Saint Realm yet, but as the Main Manager of an ancient family, his status wouldn't be below that of a Saint's. He'd naturally met the Painting Sect's leader before.

Thus, he recognized Chu Siyuan immediately.

The renowned Painter Saint, one of the top four names of the Confucius Way, had been mistaken for a thief and stopped outside the Cai Saint Mansion?

Chapter 1016 - The Newest Half-Saint Rank

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Cai Jin was filled with fear. If the family head heard about this, many people would be in trouble. The first to be punished would be him as well.

Chi Siyuan put an angry expression onto his ancient face. The more he did so, the more nervous Cai Jin grew. He was afraid that he'd offended the Painter Saint and would attract unpredictable disaster to him.

Seeing how Cai Jin paled, Zhang Ruochen guessed that this man must have a high status in the Cai Family and had met Chu Siyuan before.

Thus, he immediately sent a message to Cai Jin. "The Painter Saint is here on a secret visit to the Cai Family. Everything must be kept low-key. If you make a big deal over it, there will be grave consequences."

Cai Jin glanced at Zhang Ruochen gratefully. Anyone who could stand beside the Painter Sect must be a talent of the Painting Sect and must be respected.

Cai Jin put his hands up in greeting to Zhang Ruochen. Then he bowed, making a respectful welcoming gesture. "Please, my two esteemed guests. Please enter."

"Hmph!" With a wave of his sleeves, Chu Siyuan strode into the Cai Saint clan.

The other banquet-goers were dumbfounded at this scene. How come the old and young guy hadn't been kicked out?

Who was Cai Jin? He was the Main Manager of an ancient family and equal to Saints. However, he'd welcomed these two in so respectfully.

Some thought that Cai Jin was doing this to resolve the Cai Family's awkwardness. When the pair entered the Cai mansion, he would use a subtle method to kill them. Others thought that the pair was powerful enough to make Cai Jin lower his head.

Cai Mingliang couldn't understand. "Main Manager, how can you let these two unknown thieves in—"

Crack!

Cai Jin slapped Cai Mingliang, sending the man sprawling to the ground with the power of his palm. Cai Mingliang's head was tilted to the side and blood flowed out of his mouth.

"Main...Main Manager...wh...why..."

Eyes cold, Cai Jin ordered to the golden armored warrior, "Drag him away."

If not for this blind guy, he wouldn't have offended the Painter Saint. Thinking of this, Cai Jin was still worried. He immediately returned to the Cai Saint Mansion and hurried in Zhang Ruochen and Chu Siyuan's direction.

Now, even Chi Yutang had a serious expression. He felt that Cai Jin's behavior was very interesting.

With an alluring figure, Wan Huayu laughed and said, "I'm afraid that pair has an unusual identity."

Chi Yutang quickly smiled again. "So what? Anyone must learn to bow before the royal family."

Chi Yutang climbed onto the carriage pulled by the golden-winged condors and rode into the Cai Saint Mansion with Wan Huayu.

They both had very high statuses and were from Heavenly King Mansions. They also had top talents and appearances, like a dragon and phoenix amongst common men. Everywhere they went, they attracted countless stares. Many people sighed and fawned.

The banquet was set on a spiritual lake. Looking over, one would see pavilions scattered throughout the fog. There was a formation on the surface of the river so the Monks wouldn't sink when they stepped on it. They would only cause small ripples.

Chi Yutang and Wan Huayu's arrival caused a stir. Then a group of handsome and beautiful noble youths welcomed them to a small island in the lake.

The river was less than 100 meters wide. It was located in the center of the lake. Graceful music floated above it while pretty servants danced. Only the people with the highest status could qualify to step onto this island.

Zhang Ruochen and Chu Siyuan were at the fringe of the banquet. They found an emerald colored lotus podium and walked onto it. Then they sat down for now.

The lotus podium had nine pieces, forming nine seats. There was a round table at the center of the lotus. Thick Spiritual Qi seeped out of the lotus. The Monks present felt relaxed after taking a breath.

Cai Jin came behind Chu Siyuan and bowed. "Painter Saint," he apologized. "Please go sit in the area specifically for Saints. What just happened was entirely the fault of the Cai Family's servants. Please do not mind them."

Chu Siyuan sat in his seat, acting like he didn't care about anything. He ignored Cai Jin with a cold face.

"I will report to the Saint Leader right now."

Cai Jin knew his own place. He could talk to some other Saints, but he was far from enough before the Painter Saint. Only the Saint Leader was qualified to speak to him.

"Wait," Chu Siyuan finally said. "It's best to keep it a secret that I'm here today. Everything must be low-key."

He'd made a big commotion outside the door and found it very embarrassing. He naturally didn't want others to know that he was the leader of the Painting Sect.

If he could keep it a secret, then he would.

Cai Jin looked at Zhang Ruochen for help. Zhang Ruochen waved his hand. “Main Manager, just go now! The Painter Saint came this time just to see the young talents of the Sacred City. He has no other motives. If you reveal his presence, the students of the Confucius Way will swarm over and go against the wishes of the Painter Saint.”

Cai Jin bowed to Zhang Ruochen and then retreated wisely.

“Let’s sit here.”

Just then, a fat man in a red robe and a spiritual-looking old Monk also came to the lotus podium that Zhang Ruochen and Chu Siyuan were at.

“I am Xue Sanyi of the Xue Saint Clan,” the fat man introduced himself with a smile.

However, when he raised his head and saw Zhang Ruochen and Chu Siyuan sitting before him, his expression soured. His smile froze and he rose immediately to leave.

He’d naturally seen Zhang Ruochen and Chu Siyuan offend Chi Yutang of the Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion earlier at the entrance.

Chi Yutang was known in the Sacred City for being aggressive. He would take revenge for every offense. Anyone who angered him would be in a bad state.

Thus, Xue Sanyi thought that Zhang Ruochen and Chu Siyuan were bad luck. He should stay away from them.

The old Monk grabbed the corner of Xue Sanyi’s robe and tugged him back. “Where are you going? The other places are all full. There aren’t any empty seats at all.”

Xue Sanyi scanned the surface of the lake and found that there really weren’t any other empty seats. Feeling tragic, he sat back down. He couldn’t stop sighing when faced with these two unlucky stars.

However, the spiritual-looking old Monk started eating and drinking without caring about his image. He looked really embarrassing.

This must be an old scammer here for free food. Xue Sanyi could only sigh as he sat with the two unlucky stars and old scammer. It was so tragic that he wanted to cry.

After a while, another group of young Monks walked over and sat on one of the petals. They were familiar with Xue Sanyi and started chatting. He finally felt a bit better.

“Do you know that the Saint Lady has compiled the newest Half-Saint Rank?” a young scholar in Confucius robes said mysteriously while holding a paper fan.

This scholar wasn't an ordinary man. His Spiritual Power had reached level 45. He was already a Spiritual Half-Saint.

“Zhao Heng, your Tianxuan Academy is indeed well-informed. You'll get the newest Half-Saint Rank as soon as it comes out, right?”

“The Saint Lady is fellow disciples with Senior Uncle Mu of Tianxuan Academy. With this connection, it won't be hard for me to find out the contents of the Half-Saint Rank.”

Xue Sanyi's eyes shone. “How many humans made the list?” he immediately asked.

The scholar chuckled. Tapping his fan against the table, he said, “Because of the nine Heirs, the human race has a much higher advantage. We took up 32 spots in total. The savage beasts of the Savage Barren Territory and overseas took up 58 spots. The native creatures of the various Void Worlds took 12 spots.”

Zhang Ruochen listened quietly on the side. He paid attention to the Half-Saint Rank.

All of the figures on the Half-Saint Rank were top figures of the world. They were practically the strongest figures below the Saint Realm. Some of them may even be able to defeat a Saint.

Zhang Ruochen currently had a big gap between him and them, but they were his goals.

Even with the Chi Yao's nine Heirs, Zhang Ruochen thought, the humans of Kunlun's Field still only took up 32 spots.

That's not even one-third. This isn't looking good.

The ratio on the Half-Saint Rank could reflect the ratio of all Saintly beings in the entire Kunlun's Field. This was why the Saint Lady compiled the Half-Saint Rank.

Thankfully, the savage beasts had very serious divisions and conflicts within the different races. Their forces were scattered as well. If they could unify and establish a country, the humans wouldn't be their match at all.

Of course, the humans were already very strong. They were only one race but already took up 32 spots. It would be a feat for the other races to have at least one being from their race enter the Half-Saint Rank.

“Who is the strongest human below the Saint Realm?” Xue Sanyi asked. “Is it still Kong Hongbi?”

“It'll definitely be Kong Hongbi,” someone said. “After all, he's improved a lot more these years, getting higher and higher.”

“No matter how strong the nine Heirs are, they've only entered the ninth level. There's still a big difference between them and Kong Hongbi.”

The scholar shook his head and laughed. “You're all wrong this time! In the newest Half-Saint Rank, Kong Hongbi has dropped to the 34th.”

The Monks present were all shocked. They couldn't believe it.

“He dropped down way too much! From seventh to 34th... This...how is this possible?”

“So which human is the highest on the Half-Saint Rank now?” Xue Sanyi asked hurriedly. “Who is number one below the Saint Realm?”

Chapter 1017 - Outer Rank

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The top figure below the Saint Realm carried an unusual significance.

It was very difficult for Monks to reach the world of Saints before they entered the Saint Realm. Even many of the fights of ancient sects, clans, and saint families stopped at the Half-Saint level. Saints rarely attacked.

If a Saint attacked, it meant that the situation was very serious. A bloody battle of the saint families or sects could erupt at any time.

The top figure below the Saint Realm was the strongest cultivator that 99% of Monks could see.

Everyone was interested in the Half-Saint Rank. The Monks of the nearby lotus podiums perked up their ears to listen.

The scholar continued. "On the Half-Saint Rank, Xue Wuye, descendant of the Sword Emperor, is fourth. Chi Wansui is ninth."

"Does that mean that Xue Wuye is the top human below the Saint Realm?" Xue Sanyi asked.

"He deserves it. Xue Wuye's attributes in the Sword Way are too high to be calculated. He's like the past Sword Emperor."

"I actually guessed that it would be Xue Wuye. It was recently rumored that he's already completed Sword Six. He's only a step away from becoming a Sword Saint."

"Xue Wuye has just reached the Ninth Level of the Half-Saint Realm. He still has a lot of room for improvement. It's not hard for him to become first of the Half-Saint Rank."

The scholar giggled. “You’re all really wrong this time! The strongest human below the Saint Realm is actually the heir of Emperor Buddha. Master Lidi is second of the Half-Saint Rank.”

Everyone was shocked and in disbelief.

“How can someone be stronger than Xue Wuye?” Xue Sanyi shook his head immediately, not believing him.

“It’s the truth,” the scholar said. “Master Lidi has melded part of Emperor Buddha’s golden body into his body. Not only does he have an undefeatable defense, he also has unparalleled strength. Xue Wuye and Master Lidi have battled before. He couldn’t break through Master Lidi’s defense, so they could only end with a tie.”

A girl from a neighboring lotus had always looked up to Xue Wuye. She couldn’t accept this. “Since they tied, then they should have the same rank.”

The scholar laughed. “They tied, but Master Lidi has Emperor Buddha’s golden body. His power is boundless and limitless. Since Xue Wuye couldn’t break past his defense, he would definitely lose if they continued.”

“However, Xue Wuye is a carefree man. He voluntarily surrendered to Master Lidi, but then threatened that he would go borrow the Void Sword from the Yin and Yang Sect’s Lin Yue to destroy Master Lidi’s golden body.”

Everyone laughed.

No one thought that Xue Wuye was actually weaker than Master Lidi. If he really got the Void Sword, it was quite possible that he could hack apart Master Lidi’s golden body.

The conversation quickly turned to “Lin Yue.”

After the Heir Banquet, Lin Yue’s name spread throughout the Central Region. He was certainly a hot figure.

Lin Yue’s performance had overshadowed the nine Heirs at the Heir Banquet. However, he’d been willing to be Huang Yanchen’s guard and send her step by step to the top King Seat and even Heir Seat.

Later, news spread that Huang Yanchen's fiancé Zhang Ruochen hadn't died and Lin Yue disappeared, never appearing in public again.

Many people felt that Lin Yue was a tragic figure. He'd given up everything for Huang Yanchen, passing up the chance to become an Heir.

"Lin Yue is now far behind the nine Heirs," Xue Sanyi said, chuckling. "Perhaps even Huang Yanchen is more than ten times stronger than him now."

But as soon as he said that, he was berated by the pretty girls of some other saint families. Someone like Lin Yue had long become the dream prince of countless girls. They naturally wouldn't let anyone insult him.

A young girl with two black braids said dreamily, "Lin Yue is the true top of the world. No one was the Third Vampire Prince's match at the Heir Banquet, but due to his amazing power, he defeated the Vampire with one strike."

"I'm sure Lin Yue will appear again," another girl said. "By then, he'll shock the world again."

Zhang Ruochen hadn't expected so many girls would worship "Lin Yue." He naturally felt happy and his lips curled up.

Seeing how cold and angry the girls were, the people didn't dare to keep discussing Lin Yue. The conversation went back to the Half-Saint Rank.

"This time, the Saint Lady didn't only compile the Half-Saint Rank," the scholar said. "She also compiled the Half-Saint Outer Rank."

"What's the Half-Saint Outer Rank?"

"This is a bit special," the scholar said. "There are 900 spots in total, including five types of beings. The first are the beings squeezed out of the Half-Saint Rank. They'd once been strong figures on the Half-Saint Rank, but now, they can only make it to the Outer Rank."

"The second type is Immortal Vampires. The third is dead souls from the netherworld. The fourth are extraordinarily

powerful Ninth Level Half-Saints. They're only a bit weaker than the ones on the Half-Saint Rank. The fifth are those who hadn't shown their true powers in public. It's difficult to evaluate their combat abilities. Some may even be stronger than those on the Half-Saint Rank."

"Of course, the figures on the Half-Saint Outer Rank are still top figures. They at least have the abilities to escape from lower Saints without even using saint decrees."

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen was a bit moved. The Outer Rank is a big deal too, he thought. With my current cultivation and the powers of time and space, it's still difficult to escape from lower Saints.

After using the third seal of the sarira, Zhang Ruochen had lost an important trump card. If he met another lower Saint, it would be pretty impossible for him to escape without a saint decree.

His chances would only increase a bit if he could reach the Fifth Level of the Half-Saint Realm.

"The value of the Outer Rank isn't any lower than the Half-Saint Rank," the scholar said in a low voice. "Apparently, Chi Wansui, ninth on the Half-Saint Rank, had fought with the seventh of the Outer Rank earlier. They fought for two days and one night without getting a result."

Someone was extremely shocked. "He tied with Chi Wansui? How can the Outer Rank have such a terrifying figure?"

"That person was the crown prince of the Qingtian Tribe, one of the top ten Immortal Vampire tribes. I heard that he's refined a great amount of human blood and even drank divine blood. His physical body is almost at the Saint Realm."

"His body is almost a Saint?"

"Fortunately, it was Chi Wansui. If another human Half-Saint met him, he would've died." Xue Sanyi sighed. "The Half-Saint Rank and Outer Rank have gathered all the elites of the world. Unfortunately, there aren't enough spots. It's not easy for us to meet one or two of them, let alone enter the list."

With a smile, the scholar continued, “A while later, the beings on the Half-Saint Rank and Outer Rank will probably have a bloody war. Many legendary figures will get involved.”

“How is that possible?” A Monk shook his head. “No matter how big the matter is, the descendants of divine beasts and ancient races from the Savage Barren Territory won’t get involved.”

He didn’t believe that anything could alert the Half-Saint Rank and Outer Rank.

The scholar waved his fan and mused, “The largest Void World outside Kunlun’s Field is the Blue Dragon Void World. It will be destroyed soon. At that time, the ancient races and descendants of divine beasts will definitely get involved. The Vampires won’t just watch on the side, right?”

The Monks present were all extraordinary figures. They’d naturally heard about the Blue Dragon Void World.

“The figures on the two ranks might personally come out to fight for the last bits of value from the Blue Dragon Void World.”

Just then, Zhang Ruochen saw a familiar figure walk in. Many other figures noticed her too and caused a stir.

They couldn’t help it. Such a beautiful woman with a top aura would attract countless eyes wherever she went.

“Who is that?” Xue Sanyi’s eyes were trained on the beautiful woman. His eyes gleamed and he couldn’t stop himself from drooling.

The scholar shook his head. “That’s Shangguan Xianyan, the Saintess of the Blood God Sect. Fatty Xue, stop looking. That woman is from the heavens. You can’t get her.”

Shangguan Xianyan wore a white dress and her skin was like cream. She also had nine pure and holy halos around her delicate frame. She had a mysterious kind of beauty.

With her as the leader, the Monks of the Blood God Sect walked into the spiritual lake.

Xue Sanyi's eyes were still on Shangguan Xianyan. "No wonder she's the Saintess of the Blood God Sect," he mumbled to himself. "I'm even willing to go die if I can kiss her just once."

"How come the Blood God Sect's Saintess is here at the Cai Family?" someone asked curiously.

"Shangguan Xianyan was childhood friends with the second daughter of the Cai Family," the scholar said. "The Shangguan and Cai Family are also old friends. Plus, there are some strong elders of the Blood God Sect with her. I hypothesize that their visit is related to the Blue Dragon Void World. They might want to ally with the Cai Family."

There were indeed some strong elders of the Blood God Sect with Shangguan Xianyan. It seemed very grand. They hadn't come just for the banquet.

Zhang Ruochen looked toward the scholar called Zhao Heng. This man is so young, but he's already a Spiritual Half-Saint, he thought. He is indeed smart and logical with his analyses.

In the era of heroes, no young hero could be looked down upon.

Chapter 1018 - Lesson Dealt

Chapter 1018: Lesson Dealt

Translator: Larbre Studio Editor: Larbre Studio

Cai Yunji, second daughter of the Cai Family, walked out of the island in the center of the lake. She welcomed Shangguan Xianyan and the elders of the Blood God Sect.

The banquet continued. Three hundred servant girls in silk clothing meandered about, serving various delicacies. In addition to Half-Saint Fluid, there was even Saint Fluid, Saint Monkey Wine, sixth level beast's meat, the Zhen Fruit that only ripened once every 100 years and much more.

Chu Siyuan, Zhang Ruochen, Xue Sanyi, Zhao Heng and the others ate quite elegantly. However, the spiritual-looking old man devoured everything like it was a war. He quickly emptied half of the delicacies on the lotus platform.

Everyone furrowed their brows. They really suspected that this old Monk was an independent martial cultivator here for free food. However, since they were already sitting here, they couldn't prove that he was a freeloader, so they didn't lose their tempers. They all tried to tolerate him.

“Eat! Why aren't you all eating?”

“The meat of a Golden Thread Savage Ox is a great thing. One bite will increase your physique!”

“The Zhen Fruit only ripens once every 1000 years. You can only eat it at an ancient family. Where else can you get it? If you're not eating, then I won't hold back!”

...

The old Monk was very shameless. There were only nine Zhen Fruits in the lotus. He'd already eaten four by himself and was now holding a fifth one.

A group of Monks in elegant robes walked out of the island in the center. They scanned the lake's surface and finally stopped

on Zhang Ruochen and Chu Siyuan.

The leader was dressed in purple and gold armor. He was tall with a hooked nose. A shadowy look passed through his eyes as he strode over.

This man was Guo Lu. He was a general of the Canglong Army and was a lower regional king. Earlier, Chi Yutang had “accidentally” mentioned at the center banquet what had happened to him at the entrance. This group instantly rushed out to take revenge for Crown Prince Chi.

After all, there weren’t many chances to get onto Crown Prince Chi’s good side. If they could take advantage of this chance, they may fly to success.

“Were you the two who offended Crown Prince Chi earlier?”

Guo Lu stood outside the lotus platform. His armor shone with dazzling light. His fierce eyes hardened on Zhang Ruochen.

Earlier, Chi Yutang had mentioned that the young man with a golden mask was a Spiritual Half-Saint and had domineering power. Thus, Guo Lu’s group placed their emphasis on Zhang Ruochen.

“They really are bad luck,” Xue Sanyi sighed, immediately lowering his head.

He obviously knew who Guo Lu was. The man was one of the top ten generals of the Canglong Army. He was in charge of the order of the Sacred City’s seven regions and 100,000 elite soldiers.

Any Monk who caused trouble in the Sacred City had to lower their head obediently before the Canglong Army, no matter how high their cultivation or status was.

Four Half-Saints and more than 100 Fish-Dragon Monks had died under his hand only this year. This included some treasonous figures from the previous dynasty and evil beings of the Evil and Demonic Way.

The people from the previous dynasty hated Guo Lu to bits. They’d planned many times to assassinate him, but they’d all

failed and suffered great losses instead. Wasn't it evident how powerful Guo Lu was?

As someone standing at the top below the Saint Realm, he could wipe out any enemy in the cultivation world unless a Saint appeared.

Of course, for many Saints of the previous dynasty, appearing in the Sacred City was like falling voluntarily into a trap. They would definitely die tragically.

Heavenly King Lingxiao controlled the Sacred City. Who dared to come on a suicide mission?

Other than Guo Lu, the others were also heirs of saint clans that relied on the Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion. They were all very strong and would become the rulers of their saint clans.

Faced with such a powerful group, Xue Sanyi and Zhao Heng's group all grew fearful. They immediately retreated and stood off to the side.

Only Zhang Ruochen and Chu Siyuan remained sitting there on the lotus platform.

That old Monk was there too. He continued to devour food while also stuffing food into his pockets. He was completely unaware that danger had already arrived.

Holding a Zhen Fruit, Zhang Ruochen scanned the lake surface without finding Cai Jin. Where did that Main Manager go?

It didn't matter. Even without the Main Manager, he could take care of this by himself.

Crunch!

Acting fearless, Zhang Ruochen took a bite of the fruit. "You can still leave now. I'll forgive you since it's the Cai Family's banquet."

The surrounding Monks whispered amongst themselves. They all felt that this man with the golden mask was too arrogant. How could he say that to Guo Lu's group of saint clan heirs?

On the right of Guo Lu, a talent from the Yuan Saint Clan laughed loudly. “Crown Prince Chi was right. You are indeed arrogant. But even if you do have some skills, shouldn’t you look clearly at the current situation?”

“What situation?” Zhang Ruochen asked in return. Then he continued, “Today is the Cai Family’s banquet. Do you dare to attack?”

When he said that, he purposely emphasized the words, letting his voice travel to the center island. He wanted the core figures of the Cai Family to hear. However, they didn’t react, evidently allowing Guo Lu’s actions.

Zhang Ruochen sneered. Glancing at Chu Siyuan, he said telepathically, “Are these the young heroes, the hope of the human race that you spoke of? The people that you want me to learn from? I’m guessing that your grand-disciple, the number one of the new rank, should be sitting on that center island. However, he’s allowing outsiders to mistreat us.”

Chu Siyuan’s expression turned cold. With a boom, he slapped the table. “These juniors deserve a lesson. They have no manners. How did their seniors teach them? Zhang Ruochen, help me give them a lesson. I’ll take care of any trouble that occurs.”

The talent from the Yuan Saint Clan stared at Chu Siyuan and huffed coldly. “Old guy, what are you hitting the table for? Angry? Let me, Yuan Zhi, teach you how to act low-key. You need to know that there are some people you can’t offend.”

Yuan Zhi strode forward to Chu Siyuan. A golden hand pressed down on Chu Siyuan’s left shoulder to lift him up and toss him out of the Cai Family Mansion.

Yuan Zhi’s cultivation wasn’t low. Even though he’d suppressed his power, he still radiated with strong Holy Qi waves.

Crackle!

A huge golden claw emerged from his arm.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and smiled. Without standing up, he waved a finger and swiped the air.

Continuous cracks sounded. A purple electric blade consolidated in the air. It flew out, pierced the golden claw, and landed on Yuan Zhi.

Poof!

Yuan Zhi flew back with blood spurting from his mouth. He landed on a seedpod of a lotus, making the precious food crash onto the ground. There was a shocking black injury on his chest. Even his stomach had almost been cut open.

Small electric currents continued rippling in his injury with small crackles.

Calmly, Zhang Ruochen said, "I'll spare you because you are young and naïve. Next time, I'm afraid you won't have this chance."

Yuan Zhi had only wanted to capture Chu Siyuan. He hadn't planned on killing Chu Siyuan. The old man was annoying, but it wasn't serious enough for death. A small punishment was enough.

"This man is so wild!"

"He'd heavily injured Yuan Zhi with only one hit. His abilities can't be looked down upon."

...

It was clear that Zhang Ruochen's attack had caused a stir. At the very least, it proved that he wasn't a weakling.

"You could heavily injure Yuan Zhi with an electric blade. Your Spiritual Power must be at the 47th level, right?"

A scholar in a blue robe walked out. He held an ancient scroll and gave off a cultured feeling. However, he wasn't an ordinary man. Rings of Spiritual Power radiated from his forehead and covered the entire spiritual lake.

Zhang Ruochen glanced at him. "Does a scholar of the Confucius Way dare to get involved too?"

The scholar smiled. "I am Jun Wuyi of the Tianxuan Academy. I only wish to meet a Spiritual Power expert like you. I have no other intentions."

“Young man, I advise you to not ruin your own future,” Zhang Ruochen said earnestly.

Jun Wuyi had a disdainful expression. “With your Spiritual Power, you would’ve had a great future. Unfortunately, you’ve offended Crown Prince Chi. There probably won’t be a place for you in Kunlun’s Field anymore.”

Zhang Ruochen had given the necessary warnings, so he didn’t want to keep talking. Activating his Spiritual Power, he attacked immediately.

Jun Wuyi smiled. Without showing fear, he spat out blue Great Spirit. Spewing from his mouth, it transformed into a river of Qi that surged toward Zhang Ruochen.

Jun Wuyi’s Spiritual Power was at the 48th level. He was a renowned Spiritual Power figure in the Sacred City and was naturally confident in defeating Zhang Ruochen.

Boom!

An electric blade dozens of meters long crashed against the Great Spirit. It set off violent energy waves. Then the electric blade shattered, dissipating with shreds of electricity.

“That’s not much... No, that’s...”

Jun Wuyi’s smile froze as he felt something was wrong. In the space between him and Zhang Ruochen, a second electric blade, a third...kept solidifying, each one stronger than the last.

Boom, boom.

Nine electric blades attacked continuously, finally splitting apart the Great Spirit and landing on him. With a rip, the electric blade’s powerful strength cut through Jun Wuyi’s stomach, hacking him into two halves.

No.

That was only an illusion.

The electric blade cut through Jun Wuyi’s thigh. It was only a bit away from his waist. Zhang Ruochen had merely disabled him instead of taking his life.

Of course, this was a warning. If anyone still dared to challenge him, they would get closer and closer to death.

Jun Wuyi fell to the ground. He only had half a body now. He cried out painfully as blood surged out of the base of his legs. It was a tragic sight.

All the banquet-goers on the lake's surface fell silent. What followed was an uproar.

Chapter 1019 - Die

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The Monks at the banquet were all shocked. Who would've predicted this result?

Both Yuan Zhi and Jun Wuyi were very powerful figures in the Sacred City. They'd never suffered such a defeat.

Even more shocking was that both the Yuan and Jun Saint Clans had Saint figures present at the banquet today. The golden masked man had dared to injure them so heavily. Wasn't he afraid of dying here in the Cai Family Saint Mansion?

The previous two battles had attracted the attention of those noble figures in the center.

Cai Yunji, second daughter of the Cai Family, looked worried. "That man could defeat Jun Wuyi. With such powerful Spiritual Power, he's definitely not an independent cultivator. At the very least, he's the heir of some saint clan. He may even be the secret card trained by some hidden family.

"Sixth brother, go talk to Crown Prince Chi. It'll be best if they can resolve the conflict so the Cai Family won't attract unnecessary trouble."

Cai Jinglun, sixth son of the Cai Family, shook his head. "Second Sister, the situation has already developed to this point. Do you think it's possible for Crown Prince Chi to step back?"

Cai Yunji looked in Chi Yutang's direction. She indeed saw that murderous intent was obvious on Chi Yutang's face. It was evident that he was truly furious. If a member of the Cai

Family went to stop him now, wouldn't they also offend Crown Prince Chi?

One was the Crown Prince of the royal family. One was a mysterious young man. The Cai Family obviously knew who was more important.

Cai Jinglun looked like he had everything under control. "The Cai Family shouldn't get involved. Crown Prince Chi should resolve this by himself."

The members of the Cai Family present naturally followed Cai Jinglun's suggestions. Since he'd made this decision, the others couldn't say anything else.

Unlike Chi Yutang, Wan Huayu still had a pretty smile on her face. She grew more and more curious about the golden masked man. How could such a powerful Spiritual Power figure appear out of nowhere in the Sacred City?

With a dark expression, Chi Yutang yelled, "General Guo, this man purposely hurt someone at the Cai Family's banquet. Won't you punish him?"

Guo Lu, one of the top ten generals of the Canglong Army, was subordinate to the Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion. He naturally listened to Chi Yutang.

With a roar, Guo Lu raised his hands at once. Two dense bursts of purple Qi surged out of his palms. They shook the entire lake.

In the distance, Xue Sanyi shrunk a little. "Is Guo Lu going to use the Purple Blazing Palm?"

"The Purple Blazing Palm is one of the nine saint spells of the Lingxiao Heavenly Palace. Apparently, if a Saint uses it, the sky within thousands of miles will be covered in purple Qi. If he hits the ground with a palm, it will cause an earthquake."

"Guo Lu saved the young Chi Wansui before. That's why he was able to learn the Purple Blazing Palm."

"Guo Lu has cultivated the Purple Blazing Palm to the fifth level and can unleash 26 times the power. It's close to a saint spell's power."

As a Ninth Level Half-Saint, Guo Lu was at the top of the world below the Saint Realm. However, he used his strongest skill upfront. This showed that he really wanted to kill the man with the golden mask.

Many people mourned for Zhang Ruochen. They thought that he was too arrogant and wild. Otherwise, he wouldn't be dying in the Cai Family Saint Mansion.

Some of the elders used Zhang Ruochen as a reverse example to educate the juniors present. "Young people need to know when to back down, such as bowing before a figure like Crown Prince Chi."

"Purple Blazing Palm!" Guo Lu roared. Wind and thunderous sounds came out of his palms as he struck toward Zhang Ruochen's back.

He'd directed all his palm power to a point. This way, the Purple Blazing Palm would be even stronger.

Sizzle.

The lotus platform beside Zhang Ruochen couldn't take the heat of the purple flames. It started burning and quickly turned to ashes.

"You've cultivated the palm technique well, but unfortunately, your strength isn't enough."

Zhang Ruochen quickly turned around and sent out the fist power that he'd already accumulated. "First move of the Luo Water Fist Technique, Dividing the Sky and River."

As he punched, apparitions of waves actually appeared behind Zhang Ruochen with crashing sounds.

The fist and palm collided with an earth shaking sound.

Zhang Ruochen took a step back. Then he stepped forward and charged at Guo Lu. "Second move of the Luo Water Fist Technique, Nine Twists and Turns."

Guo Lu was shocked inwardly. He hadn't expected the other would be a powerful Spiritual Energy cultivator, and would also be so strong in the Fist Way.

Two balls of purple flames appeared in Guo Lu's hands again. They transformed into two clouds of purple fire as he hit them forward.

Guo Lu was in the beginning of the Ninth Level of the Half-Saint Realm. His own power was indeed stronger than Zhang Ruochen. However, Zhang Ruochen's fist technique was more advanced. The power he unleashed was stronger too, reaching 32 times the combat ability.

This was why Zhang Ruochen had a slight advantage.

The 36 moves of the Luo Water Fist Technique was a complete set. Each move was stronger than the other and its might kept increasing, forcing Guo Lu to keep retreating.

“Twelfth move of the Luo Water Fist Technique, Thousand Flying Waterfalls.”

When this fist landed, it directly tore through Guo Lu's saint soul territory. He spat out blood and retreated hundreds of feet.

Zhang Ruochen didn't show any intention of letting Guo Lu go. He charged forward and hit out three more fists.

“Thirteenth move of the Luo Water Fist Technique, Reversed Rainbow.”

“Fourteenth move of the Luo Water Fist Technique, Hundred Rivers Competing.”

“Fifteenth move of the Luo Water Fist Technique, Sky and Water Aligned.”

The three fists were performed in one breath. Guo Lu spat out three mouthfuls of blood. His organs were all severely injured and he flew back.

Smoothing his sleeves, Zhang Ruochen walked over and stepped onto Guo Lu's chest. “Do you know to respect people now?” he asked coldly.

At that moment, everyone held their breaths and widened their eyes. It was as if they'd just seen the most impossible thing in the world.

Guo Lu, one of the top generals of the Canglong Army and a top figure below the Saint Realm, had been thrown to the ground.

If news of this spread, it would definitely shake the entire Sacred City.

Elite figures streamed out of the small island in the lake's center to hurry toward Zhang Ruochen. The other banquet-goers retreated to the distance, afraid of getting affected.

Zhang Ruochen continued to step on Guo Lu's chest. His spine was straight and he radiated with a sharp aura.

Chi Yutang walked to the front. Staring at Zhang Ruochen, he huffed coldly. "No wonder you're so arrogant. You have Headmaster Luo Xu of the Eastern Region Saint Academy supporting you."

Many people recognized that Zhang Ruochen had used the Luo Water Fist Technique and that he'd already cultivated it to the sixth level. It was obvious that the golden masked man had received the true inheritance of Luo Xu.

"Let go of Guo Lu and I'll forgive you once because of Headmaster Luo Xu," Chi Yutang said.

Chi Yutang was the Crown Prince of the royal family, but he didn't dare offend someone like Luo Xu either. It would be very disadvantageous to him if this conflict continued.

"Apologize," Zhang Ruochen said.

"What did you say?" Coldness gleamed in Chi Yutang's eyes.

"I told you to apologize immediately," Zhang Ruochen said.

"If you do it quickly, I might even let him go."

Chi Yutang was surprised but quickly recovered and laughed in extreme anger. "People have only ever bowed down to me. You are the first person who dares to tell me to apologize. Kill him. If you can do it, then kill General Guo and see if Headmaster Luo Xu can save you."

The Monks behind Chi Yutang all had mocking expressions. No one believed that Zhang Ruochen dared to kill Guo Lu.

After all, Guo Lu belonged to the Ministry of War and was a lower regional king titled personally by the Empress. Who would dare to kill him so publicly?

In everyone's opinion, even Luo Xu would have to think carefully before killing Guo Lu.

Zhang Ruochen's lips curled up. With a ghost of a smile, he stomped down.

Crack.

The bones of Guo Lu's chest cracked and caved in. His internal organs were all turned into ground meat. Even his saint soul was crushed under Zhang Ruochen's foot—completely destroyed.

Seeing this, the jaws of all the Monks present dropped. Their minds went blank and they all turned to stone.

Thirty-six beautiful girls in colorful feathery robes stood in the center island. They stood there, paying close attention to Zhang Ruochen and Guo Lu.

They were top dancers from the Phoenix Dance Palace. Each one had one-in-a-million looks and they were all in the Fish-Dragon Realm. The Cai Family had spent many Spiritual Crystals to invite them to dance at the banquet.

Half of them were pale from shock now. However, some of the young girls were very calm. Instead, their pretty faces were filled with appreciation.

One 18 or 19-year-old girl sent a telepathic message to a veiled dancer. "Great. Guo Lu is finally getting what he deserves. We've planned seven times and lost a dozen Half-Saint seniors but couldn't kill him. I didn't think he would die at the Cai Family."

The veiled dancer stood in the center of the group. She emanated a calm aura. Because of her amazing body and snowy skin, she stood out even from the dozens of beauties.

Her eyes were very bright and lively. "Guo Lu is indeed powerful," she replied telepathically. "Even if I attack personally, I still might only have a 20 or 30% chance of

killing him. The man who killed Guo Lu must not be a simple or nameless man.”

“Who cares who he is, as long as he can kill Guo Lu?”

The veiled dancer was still calm. Shaking her head, she replied, “I suspect that he purposely did this to kill Guo Lu.”

“How is that possible? Doesn’t he know that he’ll die too if he kills Guo Lu?”

“Before we came to the Cai Family Saint Mansion,” the veiled dancer said. “Zhang Fengxing went to the Phoenix Dance Palace to find me. He said a Half-Saint figure with a golden mask will want to see me. According to his descriptions, the man he met is very possibly this man who killed Guo Lu.”

“Does that mean he’s possibly on our side? What should we do? He killed Guo Lu so he’ll be a wanted criminal. It’ll be useless even if we try to save him.”

The veiled dancer grew thoughtful. Her pretty eyes stared at the man with the golden mask in the distance. “This man is so powerful. He must not be an impulsive man. I’m sure he has another hidden trick.”

Chapter 1020 - Be Condemned by All

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Chu Siyuan had let the word out that he would take full responsibility.

Therefore, even if Zhang Ruochen had killed Guo Lu with one step, he was still arrogant and fearless.

But Chu Siyuan was shocked. The last sip of wine almost choked him.

“You did kill a king of the lower region?”

Chu Siyuan felt his heart beating violently, but pretended to be calm and didn't go extreme.

Zhang Ruochen was truly reckless and lawless...

No.

Chu Siyuan suddenly realized that he had been set up by Zhang Ruochen. He kept speaking to himself, I have nothing to do with this. Don't drag me down.

I have nothing to do with this. Don't drag me down.

...

The monk who had been busy eating and drinking raised his head and gave Zhang Ruochen a glance. An invisible wince flashed on his face.

All guests recovered from the shock.

Some female guests screamed. And even the powerful Half-Saints all took a deep breath to calm down.

A Ninth Level Half-Saint had been killed. A king of the lower region had been killed. It was insane!

Such events would cause unimaginable shock.

All young talents onsite looked at Zhang Ruochen with fear, regarding him as the Devil who wouldn't hesitate to kill anyone in the world.

Cai Yunji and Cai Jinglun looked into each other's eyes, and saw shock. Neither of them would have expected that it would go in this terrible way.

Chi Yutang stared at the corpse of Guo Lu. He was shocked for a moment. Then he glared at Zhang Ruochen's indifferent eyes, and said, "You...are dead..."

"Really?"

Zhang Ruochen appeared to be very calm. He took a glance and found the guards of the Cai Family had gathered around and enveloped the whole lake.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and walked to Chu Siyuan. He folded his hands and bowed to him. "Elder Saint Painter, I have killed the villains who wanted to murder you as you requested. Now, would you please be relieved?"

Chu Siyuan put on a stone face, not knowing whether to laugh or to cry. But he still appeared to be relaxed.

It was impossible for him to discard Zhang Ruochen now.

And, as the sect leader of the Painting Sect, he had seen great upheavals and changes. How could he panic because of the death of a king of the lower region?

"Well done."

Chu Siyuan nodded peacefully. And he added, "You reckless juniors dared to try to kill me in public. Do you think that I'm that weak?"

The Saint Painter?

All looked at Chu Siyuan with doubts.

Chi Yutang sneered. "Damn the Saint Painter. Boy, come here and accept your death."

"Shut up!"

A deafening shout was heard from afar. The ripples of its sound wave spread around.

Zoom.

A saint light came from the far end of the Cai Family Saint Mansion, and landed on the surface of the lake.

All saint figures showed up by sequence. They were all great saints, giving out bright saint light like stars falling in the human world.

"Greetings to the saint."

Over 90 percent of the monks kneeled and went down on the ground immediately.

Only a few distinguished figures remained standing, but bowed to greet him as well.

A saint appeared; all men must kneel and go down on the ground.

Among them, a saint went to Chu Siyuan and bowed to him.

"Student didn't know teacher was coming to Cai Family. Please pardon me for my oversight."

The man was the second student of Chu Siyuan, Cai Tong, and also the oldest son of the owner of the Cai Family.

The owner of Cai was about to step down, and had transferred his power to Cai Tong gradually.

Now Cai Tong controlled the whole Cai Family, and was about to be the owner of a famous ancient household.

In other words, Cai Tong was one of the top overlords in the whole Kunlun's Field.

No more than a few figures would have the honor to be bowed to by Cai Tong. Apparently, the Saint Painter Elder was one of them.

Many monks' faces lost color.

Especially the few students of the Way of Confucius standing behind Chi Yutang couldn't help themselves from shuddering.

The Way of Confucius valued "the difference between the high and the low, the order of the old and the young, the distinction between the up and the down and the inner and the outer." Nobody should go beyond the manner. They had to respect the teachers and the Way.

A student who disrespected his teacher would be scorned and resisted by all students of the Way in the whole world. And the man they had offended was a Patriarch of the Way of Confucius.

Chu Siyuan appeared to be quite annoyed. He scolded, "The young students in the Sacred City are all talents. I've been shocked by them during this visit."

Cai Tong heard the coldness in his teacher's voice, so he looked at Cai Jinglun sternly. He said in a low voice, "Jinglun, what's going on? Who has offended the Master?"

Cai Jinglun noticed Chu Siyuan who was sitting there. He walked to him immediately and knelt on the ground. He said with fear, "Greetings to the Grand Master."

Chu Siyuan turned his face away and didn't want to respond to Cai Jinglun, appearing to be aloof and superior.

Cai Jinglun told everything to Cai Tong at once.

Of course, in fear for his future, Cai Jinglun wouldn't dare to offend Chu Siyuan. So his story explained more for Zhang Ruochen and Chu Siyuan.

Cai Tong's face became gloomier. He stared at Chi Yutang and scolded, "Crown Prince, you dared to attack Patriarch Saint Painter. Aren't you a little arrogant?"

Chi Yutang could barely support himself, facing the Saint Might of Cai Tong. He regretted deeply.

Who would have known that the old man was the Saint Painter, one of the four well-known veterans of the Way of Confucius?

And Chi Yutang felt fearful too.

The four sects of the Way of Confucius stood for four saint areas of it. All powerful students of the Way of Confucius had been studying in the saint areas.

As the sect leader of the Paint Sect, Chu Siyuan's students had all taken places in the court. And most of them were in high positions.

If they all came out and reported Chi Yutang's crime according to the rules of the Way of Confucius, not only Chi Yutang, but Lingxiao Heavenly King would also come to a bad end.

A saint scholar of the Way of Confucius walked out and scolded, "As a royal, you think you can do whatever you want? Chi Yutang, you dared to send people to kill the Saint Painter Elder. How reckless! I'm going to report this to the Empress and depose your royalty as Crown Prince now. Lingxiao Heavenly King should be punished for his lack of discipline as well."

All the other students of the Way of Confucius began to condemn the actions. "How dare you to fight the Patriarch of the Way of Confucius! Who knows what wicked things you will do in the future?"

"Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion has cultivated heroes like Chi Wansui, and also a degenerate like Chi Yutang."

"Degenerate? You've praised him. He is even less than a dog or a pig."

"If Chi Yutang will not be punished seriously, I will go to report to the Empress in the Central Emperor City."

...

The students of the Way of Confucius were all irritated. They appeared to be cynical, tough and fearless of the power, and had scolded Chi Yutang completely.

Even Zhang Ruochen was shocked that the students of the Way of Confucius should be so aggressive, scolding him so sternly and showing no fear to Chi Yutang's identity.

Chi Yutang was agitated. He tried hard to suppress his anger, and said, "I did make the mistake, and I should apologize to

the Patriarch. But the Patriarch has asked to kill General Guo Lu, should he apologize to me too?"

"How dare you!"

The saint scholar of the Way of Confucius shouted. The Qi that came out of his mouth threw Chi Yutang away directly. He said, "Young man, how dare you speak to the Patriarch like that! I will teach you a lesson on behalf of Lingxiao Heavenly King."

With a bang, Chi Yutang fell hard on the ground. He was severely wounded, and his seven apertures kept bleeding.

A student walked out and said, "Guo Lu was just a nobody. He should not dare to attack the Saint Painter Elder, and killing him was a mercy. We should slaughter all his nine families."

"Yes, kill his nine families."

Many students of the Way of Confucius stepped out and scolded Chi Yutang and Guo Lu. A student even suggested whipping the corpse of Guo Lu.

At last, the owner of the Cai Family apologized to Chu Siyuan in person, and softened a little.

Chi Yutang and the monks of the Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion sneaked away, carrying Guo Lu's corpse with them.

This time, Chi Yutang had to take the consequences. He had kicked the iron plate, and the toughest one.

Even the superior Lingxiao Heavenly King coming here in person would have to treat the Saint Paint Elder with respect, daring not to offend him.

Now Chi Yutang just wanted to race back and report all to Lingxiao Heavenly King, trying to make up for his fault.

If Chu Siyuan, the old man, used his influence to let the Way of Confucius expand the event, Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion would face great trouble as well.

The owner of the Cai Family and a few saint scholars invited Chu Siyuan to be with the Cai Family, wanting to host a dinner to ask for Chu Siyuan's forgiveness.

It was a feast for saints, and young men weren't qualified to join. So Zhang Ruochen stayed.

Cai Jinglun and Cai Yunji walked to Zhang Ruochen and apologized to him. They invited him to the central island of the Lake Ling.

The banquet went on, but all men treated Zhang Ruochen differently.

The young man beside the Saint Painter would surely have a bright future.

Plus, Zhang Ruochen's kill of Guo Lu with a step had brought out the fear and respect of all monks.

"I just...sat at the same table...as the Saint Painter. And I have treated him as the plague. Had I known his identity before, I would have clung to him." Xue Sanyi regretted.

The other few all sighed for their lost fortune as well.

Chapter 1021 - Guarding Dragon Pavilion

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The small island at the center of Ling Lake was less than 100 meters in diameter, but had different beautiful views with each step change. Everywhere was delicately decorated like a heavenly palace.

Cai Jinglun and Cai Yunji invited Zhang Ruochen to a higher place, which had belonged to Chi Yutang before and was next to the proud kid of the Little Saint God Mansion, Wan Huayu.

The coming of Zhang Ruochen did affect the monks onsite.

People who had offended Zhang Ruochen and Chu Siyuan before all approached him.

They lowered their status to apologize to Zhang Ruochen. And they all took out precious treasures to give Zhang Ruochen as gifts, trying to make up for their faults.

“This is a Seven-Colored Coral Herb which has been living for 7,000 years. I picked it up from the bottom of Yanling Lake. I hope you will accept it.”

“This is a Dragon Silkworm Incense. Lighting it up and taking in its scent would help build up one’s spiritual power.”

...

Zhang Ruochen didn’t refuse out of courtesy. He accepted everything that they gave him.

But he didn’t say a word. He closed his eyes and nodded slightly, making the people nervous.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen's spiritual power trembled. He found a pair of eyes staring at him.

Who was it?

Zhang Ruochen wondered, so he opened his eyes and looked toward them.

It was a dancer in a veil and dancing cloth made of white feathers, standing in the vague white fog. Her figure was extremely slender. Her skin was extremely white and crystal-clear, looking different from other dancers.

But after exchanging the sight with Zhang Ruochen, she looked away immediately and hid in the fog.

She's highly cultivated. Who's she? Zhang Ruochen said to himself.

Wan Huayu looked at Zhang Ruochen and located the dancer with the veil. She smiled, and said, "Is this the first time that you have come to Sacred City?"

"Yes," said Zhang Ruochen.

"Even if you are only visiting here for the first time and haven't seen her before, you should have heard her name."

Apparently, the "her" mentioned by Wan Huayu was the dancer.

Zhang Ruochen asked, "Is she famous?"

Wan Huayu nodded, and said, "She is the namecard for the Phoenix Dance Palace, Qin Yutong. She is called the first beauty of Sacred City. Many young men come to the Phoenix Dance Palace everyday, most of them wanting to see her real face."

"A year ago, even Xue Wuye, one of the Nine Heirs, came for her. He was seen by Qin Yutong, but never got to see her real face."

"Suitors of Qin Yutong are all around the nine states of the Central Region. But none have won her favor. She must have an eye for you. That's interesting."

She's sharp, Zhang Ruochen said to himself.

Zhang Ruochen didn't change his face, and sneered, "Since nobody has seen her real face, how dare she call herself the first beauty of the Sacred City?"

Wan Huayu was shocked. Apparently she found Zhang Ruochen ignorant.

Then she said, "Because people trust the Phoenix Dance Palace. As a namecard of Phoenix Dance Palace, she should have the extraordinary beauty."

The Phoenix Dance Palace, although it was a brothel, was as old as those famous ancient households. Many powerful figures were born there. And so were the beauties.

Every era, the Phoenix Dance Palace would promote a talent descendent, all called the "Dancing Fairy."

Each Dancing Fairy had extraordinary talent, beauty and the best dancing.

Of course, normal people wouldn't have the qualifications to marry a Dancing Fairy. Only the heirs of famous ancient households and Sons of Deity from ancient sects would be able to fight for such a chance.

Zhang Ruochen looked at Wan Huayu and said, "To my knowledge, the Wan Family has always been friends with Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion, and each generation has been united by marriage. I've become an enemy to Chi Yutang. How can you keep talking and laughing with me?"

Wan Huayu pressed her lips, looking charming. She said, "Chi Yutang is Chi Yutang, I am myself. Besides, I wonder...how could a young powerful talent like you suddenly emerge in the Kunlun's Field?"

After a pause, Wan Huayu added, "Not long ago, words were heard in the Zhouwan Divine Land that the Saint Painter Elder and Luo Xu had together killed three saints of Immortal Vampires and the army of 100,000. There was only one person that could connect with both elders."

"Who?"

"The Time and Space Descendant, Zhang Ruochen."

Wan Huayu stared at Zhang Ruochen's eyes closely. She appeared to be wise. She observed him carefully, wanting to find out something different.

It had to be said that Wan Huayu did have many common features with Wan Zhaoyi. She was sophisticated, unlike Chi Yutang.

Even Zhang Ruochen found it a little hard to tell her thoughts.

Zhang Ruochen appeared to be calm and peaceful. He said, "Your mention of Zhang Ruochen reminded me of something. It is said that the Empress has given a secret edict that the Little Saint God should capture Zhang Ruochen in three months. If not, the Little Saint God will have committed treason. Didn't the three months already pass?"

The reason why Zhang Ruochen knew this was that the Saint Lady had told him.

But Wan Huayu didn't know the relationship between Zhang Ruochen and the Saint Lady. Hearing Zhang Ruochen bring about this matter, she was astonished.

Only a few knew that the Empress had given an imperial secret edict to the Little Saint God, most of whom were powerful figures in the court.

How could he know about it?

Maybe he was an heir to some powerful figures in the court?

Wan Huaya suspected that he was the Time and Space Descendant, Zhang Ruochen, but now she was confused.

Wan Huaya had an imposing manner, so she didn't hide. She said, "My father did receive the secret edict that he had to capture Zhang Ruochen in three months."

"But during the fight with the Ancient Race of Prison Guardians, my father commanded the army of the Ministry of War to fight fiercely against the Immortal Vampires, and paid a heavy price to stop Blood Emperor Qingtian. He made the remarkable battle achievement, so the Empress granted a ruling of not guilty. Now my father has commanded the army

of the Wan Family to the Northern Region to go on fighting the Immortal Vampires.”

Zhang Ruochen nodded, and said, “The Little Saint God truly made remarkable battle achievements. He deserves to be the number one hero on the Five Heroes List.”

Zhang Ruochen didn't save his words to compliment him. No matter what kind of resentment there was between Wan Zhaoyi and him, he did have many things that he respected.

“My father once said, he only admires two people in today's world: the Empress and Zhang Ruochen. The cultivation of the Empress is far beyond his imagination. And the talent of Zhang Ruochen makes him realize that there is no limit to the universe. He said that he had to fight Zhang Ruochen one day. Maybe that day would be the end of his glorious days. He wished that day would come a little later.”

Wan Huayu still had doubts about Zhang Ruochen's identity. Her words were a test for him.

“You almost make me want to meet the Time and Space Descendant, too.”

“So do I.”

Wan Huayu gave a laugh and stopped talking.

Zhang Ruochen said no more words. He lit the Dragon Silkworm Incense, which had been given to him previously by a Half-Saint. He took in its scent, building up his spiritual power.

After half an hour, the shocking news was heard from the Cai Family Saint Mansion.

The owner of the Cai Family finally announced the whereabouts of the Vampire Secrets.

Cai Jinglun read, “800 years ago, the Vampire Secrets was kept in the National Treasury of the Sacred Central Empire after it had been finished.”

“The night before Emperor Ming disappeared, members of the Guarding Dragon Pavilion took all treasures away from the

National Treasury. Then, they disappeared from the Kunlun's Field, and never showed up again.”

The news was extremely shocking.

Sacred Central Empire had a long history and had accumulated enormous treasure.

Countless weapons, saint pills, sacred medicines, spiritual stones, saintly rocks, even millions of books of exercises and martial arts were kept in the National Treasury.

People all believed that the National Treasury had either fallen to the First Central Empire, or been taken away by the Sacred Central Crypt.

Who could tell that it had already been transported before Emperor Ming Disappeared?

In other words, whoever could find the National Treasury of the Sacred Central Empire would have found unparalleled treasure, which would make him as wealthy as an Emperor.

A very old monk cried, “Members of the Guarding Dragon Pavilion took the treasure away? Is that the so-called strongest base of the Sacred Central Empire, Guardians of the Royal Family, Guarding Dragon Pavilion?”

The young monks had never heard about it. So they asked around in curiosity.

The old monk smiled, and said, “It is said that the Guarding Dragon Pavilion has only 108 members. 36 heavenly generals and 72 earthly generals, and each of them is a saint. They are very mysterious and nobody knows that they exist. It is also said that some members even began guarding the Royal Family Zhang in the Middle Ages.”

A young man laughed, not buying the old man's words. He said, “How's it possible? 108 saints? Even the famous ancient households wouldn't have such strength. And how many years should the living creatures have lived since the Middle Ages? Bullshit.”

The old monk said, “You young generations have seen too little. Having established the Sacred Central Empire, the Royal

Family Zhang had a strength that you couldn't even imagine!”

“Have you seen the two 230-meter-tall bronze Golden Suan at the city gate? [1] They were not only totems of the Sacred Central Empire, but also two guarding divine beasts of the Sacred Central Empire. It is said they are the two members of Earthly Generals of the Guarding Dragon Pavilion. They have lived for 10,000 years, having a longer life than humans.”

“The reason why the Sacred Central Crypt has 108 Saint Generals is its imitation of the Guarding Dragon Pavilion. But the Saint Generals are just kids compared to those of the Guarding Dragon Pavilion.”

The old monk spoke confidently, almost convincing the monks on site.

If the Guarding Dragon Pavilion did exist, why didn't they show up and where were they?

Endnote

[1] ancient beasts like lions

Chapter 1022 - Wanting to Kill

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen had heard rumors about the Guarding Dragon Pavilion before. But even he had never gotten in touch with its members.

He only knew that the Guarding Dragon Pavilion was mysterious and only listened to direct orders of each Emperor Ming. All members were powerful figures in the realm of saints.

“The night before my father disappeared, the Guarding Dragon Pavilion had moved the National Treasury away. Could it be that father had anticipated things to come?”

Zhang Ruochen thought carefully, feeling confused.

Of course, he didn't trust the news announced by the owner of the Cai Family completely, which had surrendered to the First Central Empire.

They might not want to find the Vampires Secrets, but truly wanted to find the members of the Guarding Dragon Pavilion and the National Treasure.

The news was quite shocking and soon passed around the whole Cai Family Saint Mansion. And, at an even faster speed, it spread to all areas of the Sacred City.

The chief steward of the Cai Family Saint Mansion, Cai Jin, approached Zhang Ruochen with an ice jade box. He smiled kindly, and said, “My lord, this is the thing that the Saint Painter Elder has asked me to send to you.”

Zhang Ruochen accepted the box and opened its lid a little. Then he closed it.

“Elder Chu did have high efficiency to have sent the fifth class Divine Origin Pill.”

Zhang Ruochen rounded his lips and put the ice jade box away. Then he left the Cai Family Saint Mansion.

The main purpose for him to attend the banquet in the Cai Family Saint Mansion was to get the fifth class Divine Origin Pill.

Now that he had gotten the Divine Origin Pill, there was a reason for him to stay. He would take the chance to dump Chu Siyuan, and do what he wanted.

Walking out of the Cai Family Saint Mansion, Zhang Ruochen found that at least 3 people were following him.

Zhang Ruochen borrowed the power of the Shooting Star Invisible Cloak, and soon left them all behind.

Zhang Ruochen arrived at the spot of the descendant of the Zhang Family, and said to himself: I hope that Zhang Fengxing has already connected with high-level figures of the Zhang Family... What?...

Zoom.

Zhang Ruochen used his moves to skip in the night sky. He landed in the yard, which was at the center of the inn, and looked around.

A strong and vomit-inducing smell of blood filled up the space.

The ground was covered by corpses.

The 13 descendants of the Zhang Family, whom he had saved in the day, had all been brutally killed, even including the clerks and the guests. Some of them had been chopped in two. Some ended up headless.

Zhang Fengxing had been nailed to a wall with a silver lance. His body was covered with wounds. His belly had been ripped open, organs falling out.

Obviously he had been tortured before death.

The 11 year old Zhang Shu stood on a stair full of blood, scared, mournful and desperate. He was looking at Zhang Fengxing's corpse.

Zhang Ruochen touched his face slightly.

Pat.

Blood lines appeared on Zhang Shu's body, which broke into 13 parts.

Zhang Ruochen's fingers kept shaking and his teeth kept chattering. Fury came out from the depth of his veins. So did flames out of his eyes. He shouted, "Come out!"

Zoom.

Dozens of dark light curtains appeared in the dark. The clash of armor was heard in the light curtains.

Immediately, the soldiers of Canglong Army in black armor rushed out of the light curtains constantly like ghost soldiers. They gave out heinous evil Qi.

A middle aged man who had a hawk nose and a pair of black wings flew out. His body gave out freezing cold Qi.

He stood in midair, playing a stone with his hand. He laughed, "Aren't you the one who has given the boy the Sacred Taming Guide? As far as I know, only a few high-level people from the last dynasty were qualified to exercise it."

Zhang Ruochen didn't say a word. He took out the Ancient Abyss Sword.

The middle aged man with a pair of black wings went on, "I was just following the order to wipe out a spot taken by the remaining evil people from the last dynasty. I didn't know that I could also fish out something big! Haha!"

Even though Zhang Ruochen was surrounded, he didn't change his face. Only coldness could be seen from his eyes. He said, "Isn't it a little early for you to laugh?"

"He's so calm. He must be a powerful figure."

The middle aged man with a pair of black wings appeared as if everything was in his control. He waved his hand, and said, "Open the Seven Star Sword Formation. Defeat him. But, remember to capture him alive."

Seven Formation masters of the Canglong Army hit the ground at the same time.

In the next instant, thick white inscriptions appeared on the ground to form a battle formation in the expansion of 300 meters with the inn at the center.

Zoom.

Blades of sword Qi were condensed automatically in the formation. They destroyed every building, including the inn, and broke all the corpses.

Zhang Ruochen wanted to rush out of the Sword Formation before it was activated, but failed and was attacked by hundreds of sword Qi. He couldn't get out of the formation and had to return.

Far away, three slender dancers were seen on the top of a red tower. They showed up as their real selves, and looked to the inn.

The area was totally blocked by the Battle Formation. Strands of black fog made of dust gushed out, containing a huge intent to kill.

"Senior Sister, they are the soldiers of the eighth base of the Canglong Army. At least 3,000 crack troops are here. The man must be caught with great trouble. Should we give him a hand?" asked a dancer in a yellow dress.

A dancer in a veil, who was standing on the upturned eaves of the tower like a beautiful fairy in the moonlight, said in a beautiful voice, "Since the Eighth Base of the Canglong Army has sent 3,000 crack troops, they must have valued this mission. It's very likely that the leader of the eighth base, Han Ying, is among them. Han Ying has a higher cultivation than Guo Lu. You two would die there."

The dancer in the veil was the Dancing Fairy of the Phoenix Dance Palace, Qin Yutong.

The other two were her junior sisters, dancers at the sky level of the Phoenix Dance Palace, Bai Xuanshuang and Bai Xuanyu.

After Zhang Ruochen had left the Cai Family Saint Mansion, they followed him.

After Zhang Ruochen dumped them, Qin Yutong guessed that he would probably come to this spot, so they raced here to investigate.

Bai Xuanshuang was in a yellow dress. She was a fourth level Half-Saint, looking to be around the age of 20. She asked, “What should we do now? He’s a top powerful figure. We can’t let him die, can we?”

Qin Yutong appeared to be calm. She said, “You two should return to the Phoenix Dance Palace now and report to Granny Su. Maybe Granny will know what to do.”

Bai Xuanshuang and Bai Xuanyu turned into two shadows and disappeared in the dark. They raced to the Phoenix Dance Palace.

The Zhang Family did have saint spies in the Sacred City.

But if the saint helped the man with a golden mask in person, the Lingxiao Heavenly King would surely be alerted. By then, both the saint and the man with a golden mask would die pathetically. And the Zhang Family would suffer dearly.

Qin Yutong knew that it was tricky. So she had to wait and see.

Zhang Ruochen stood at the center of the Seven Star Sword Formation, breaking the sword Qi into white smoke.

The man with a pair of black wings was one of the ten commanders of the Canglong Army, Han Ying.

“Even the Seven Star Sword Formation couldn’t hurt you. You do have a deep understanding of the Way of Sword.”

Han Ying looked cold, and ordered the seven formation masters, “Bring out the strongest power of the Seven Star Sword Formation.”

Hearing the order, each of the seven formation masters cut a bloodstain in their palm, and wiped their blood on the wane.

The blood and the inscription blended together and gushed into the bottom of the ground.

The whole Seven Star Sword Formation turned red. At the edge of the Formation, Lines of blood red inscriptions gushed out of the bottom of the ground to condense into seven shadows of ghost soldiers holding their swords.

Zoom. Zoom.

The seven shadows of ghost soldiers waved their swords to attack Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen intended to kill, so he stopped reserving his strength. He operated the Holy Qi in his body and poured it constantly into the Ancient Abyss Sword.

“Crack it.”

He played “Gold Morning Sun,” a move of the Nine-Life Sword Technique. It could compare with a saint spell, bursting a power 32 times its original power.

Zhang Ruochen had known the weak spots of the Seven Star Sword Formation before. He used a saint level Sword Technique, and chopped the Formation in two with a boom.

The swords of the seven soldier ghosts were about 30 centimeters away.

But now, they all disappeared with the Seven Star Sword Formation.

The break of the Formation shocked all soldiers of the Canglong Army. They never thought that the person was so fierce.

Zoom.

Zhang Ruochen waved his sword, and seven blades of sword Qi rushed to the seven Formation Masters, leaving them no chance to reform the Formation.

With Zhang Ruochen’s current cultivation and state in Way of Sword, even the sword Qi randomly played by him contained

the power to shake the heaven and the earth, which was unable to resist for an ordinary monk.

A dozen shadows rushed out from the camp of the Canglong Army, wanting to take the sword Qi for the seven Formation Masters.

Pzz.

All of their bodies were penetrated by sword Qi. And they were thrown back.

The sword Qi wasn't weakened a bit. They all went through the heads of the seven formation masters, leaving seven corpses behind.

“Damn you!”

Han Ying was furious. He operated his Holy Qi and gathered it in his eyes.

Two light columns gushed out from his black eyes, attacking Zhang Ruochen underneath him.

Zhang Ruochen had seen it coming, and dodged before the light reached him.

Boom.

Two black light columns hit the ground and smashed it. In some places, the earth and the rock was melted into magma.

A man of the Canglong Army, who had fallen on the ground, held a twelfth level True Treasure in his hand. But once the weapon was touched by the black light column, the True Treasure exploded immediately.

The two black light columns had terrible destructive power, which could even destroy saint weapons.

Some powerful figures among the Canglong Army organized the 3,000 crack troops at once to arrange a Combined Battle Formation.

An about 40-meter-long white sword was condensed above the Combine Battle Formation. It chopped at Zhang Ruochen's head, like a white waterfall falling from the sky.

The power of a sword burst gathering all 3,000 soldiers' power was unimaginably strong.

Even a Ninth Level Half-Saint wouldn't be able to resist it.

Zoom.

A dozen-meter-long spatial crack flew out, puncturing the white giant sword and the light cover at the same time. The single move had killed more than one hundred soldiers.

Immediately after it, Zhang Ruochen displayed his physical technique to rush into the camp of the Canglong Army. He inserted the Ancient Abyss Sword into the ground, bursting out the enormous Sword will.

“Go to hell! All of You!” Zhang Ruochen shouted. His hair stood up. And he released his will to kill.

The sword body of the Ancient Abyss Sword produced thousands of sword Qi blades. Rustling, they flew in all directions.

When the sword Qi dispersed, the ground was covered with corpses of the Canglong Army.

Chapter 1023 - Phoenix Dance Palace

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

It wasn't easy for the Canglong Army to cultivate a crack soldier, which required large amounts of resources.

But Zhang Ruochen had only activated the sword Qi and had killed 3,000 crack soldiers. Even Han Ying felt sad.

It was a massacre!

"I have underestimated you. You dared tear the space. What's your connection with Zhang Ruochen?"

Han Ying suspected that the man in the golden mask under him could be the Time and Space Descendant, Zhang Ruochen, himself.

Zhang Ruochen didn't say anything, but stared at him indifferently.

"It doesn't matter whether you speak or not. Once I capture you, I will know your identity. I will not kill you easily. I have to put you through all the torture in the Canglong Army, then kill you slowly."

The black wings on Han Ying's back gave out two strands of black Qi of coldness, condensing into two gloomy clouds.

Kaka.

His hands changed into two metal eagle claws, and grasped beneath him.

Nobody knew what power was conserved in the metal eagle claws. It had shaken the Spiritual Power, and froze the city

under it.

Han Ying's cultivation was at the middle stage of the Ninth Level Half-Saint, far beyond Guo Lu. Zhang Ruochen couldn't fight him now with his cultivation.

But Zhang Ruochen had a last resort.

“Destruction of the Thousand-patterns!”

Zhang Ruochen didn't care about anything else. He poured 99% of the Holy Qi of his body into the Ancient Abyss Sword.

The Qi of destruction burst out from the sword, penetrating the two gloomy clouds in the sky immediately.

“It's...the Destruction of the Thousand-patterns...”

Han Ying changed his face and moved his wings with the quickest speed at once, wanting to run away.

But, to deal with Zhang Ruochen, he had already ordered the area to be totally blocked.

With the Blocking Formation closing, even he couldn't get out.

“Open the Blocking Formation now!”

Blue veins stood up on Han Ying's body. He shouted with fear and haste.

But, before the Blocking Formation was opened, a deadly power had seized him.

Han Ying turned around immediately. He cracked three protection rune scrolls to form three layers of defensive light cover, covering up his whole body.

Pzz.

A strand of sword Qi which contained the Destruction of the Thousand-patterns cut the three defensive light covers and Han Ying's body like cutting three pieces of paper.

Blood fell on the ground like rain.

With a boom, the Blocking Formation was opened, revealing the true scenery of the area.

Qin Yutong stood at the top of the tower, looking from afar. She took a deep breath, finding herself looking at the Asura.

The area had been ruined completely. The ground was full of corpses in black armor. And the blood had stained the ground red.

In midair, one of the ten commanders of the Canglong Army, Han Ying, was cut in two by sword Qi and was falling straight down.

But a young man covered with blood held a sword and walked to Han Ying's corpse.

The scene did frighten Qin Yutong. The man...was like a god of killing.

Zhang Ruochen took the jade record of Sacred Taming Guide out from Han Ying's corpse. He took it in his hand, and sighed.

He had hoped that Zhang Shu would become a powerful figure in the future.

He never knew that within just a few hours, a young boy who hadn't shown his talent had been killed by the Canglong Army.

After displaying the Destruction of the Thousand-patterns, Zhang Ruochen had used up all his Holy Qi. He supported himself with his body strength.

He had to leave now.

Zoom.

A beautiful shadow landed from the sky slowly, like a fairy falling from the heavens. She landed at the edge of the battlefield. She wore a veil. Her perfect figure showed unclearly in the fog.

Zhang Ruochen had seen her in the Cai Family Saint Mansion before. She was said to be the namecard of the Phoenix Dance Palace, the Dancing Fairy.

Zhang Ruochen put on a calm face, trying hard not to let others know that he had used up his Holy Qi. He said coldly,

“Another person who wants to die.”

Qin Yutong looked at Zhang Ruochen carefully, and took out a token. A square and upright “Zhang” was printed on the token.

An extremely beautiful voice was heard from her. “If I am right, you are the powerful figure of the Zhang Family told by Zhang Fengxing.”

Surprise flashed in Zhang Ruochen’s eyes. He didn’t expect that the high-level connection of the Zhang Family would be her.

“You’ve killed Han Ying, which will surely disturb the saints in the Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion. With your current status, you’d better follow me. I can take you to a safe place.”

The star-like eyes of Qin Yutong were pretty and touching.

If observed closely, her eyes were like two vast star skies, having star-like lights flickering inside.

It’s a pair of saint eyes, called the Sea of the Stars. She could see things that ordinary people wouldn’t see. And she could also tempt people.

Anyone who looked into her eyes would be attracted by her qualities, and even become obsessed with her.

Even though Zhang Ruochen tried to conceal it carefully, she could tell the fact that his Holy Qi had been used up. It had to be said that she did have some real power, and was not just good-looking. No wonder she was the high-level person of the Zhang Family.

At last, Zhang Ruochen left with Qin Yutong.

After a while, a strand of terrible saint might appeared at the previous battlefield.

Monks in the surrounding area of the battle field were all shocked.

Some of the lower cultivated monks were scared to get down on the ground.

“Who’s that?”

The furious voice was heard from the clouds, making fierce wind in the area.

Monks from every household in the Sacred City were curious about the thing that had happened that agitated a saint.

Not long after, words were heard.

“One of the ten commanders of the Canglong Army, Han Ying, was killed by a person. And the 3,000 crack soldiers were all killed.”

Many monks found it hard to believe the news.

How many years had gone by since the last time the Canglong Army had been defeated badly? Who’s the bold person who had killed a commander in the Sacred City?

The night in the Sacred City wouldn’t be peaceful.

Now, Zhang Ruochen and Qin Yutong had arrived at a valley in the Sacred City, which was lit up by light. There were many palaces, and many young and pretty women could be seen there. Some of them took lanterns, others held the guqin, crossing the corridors between the palaces.

It was a bevy of young girls.

“The Phoenix Dance Palace,” said Zhang Ruochen.

Qin Yutong turned around and gave a meaningful look at Zhang Ruochen with her pretty star-like eyes. She said, “You’ve been here before?”

“No.”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head, and said, “The area that the Phoenix Dance Palace is in is one of the busiest areas of the Sacred City. Even if I didn’t enter, I’ve gone by it more than once.”

Qin Yutong nodded and said no more words.

Walking to the depth of the Phoenix Dance Palace, the valley became more quiet and secluded, like the Land of Peach Blossom, which made a sharp contrast with the thriving extravagant orgy outside.

One was extremely vulgar, the other was extremely classy.

Four figures rushed out to run into Qin Yutong and Zhang Ruochen.

They were two males and two females.

The two young women in sexy dancing dresses were Bai Xuanshuang and Bai Xuanyu, both having the cultivation of Fourth Level Half-Saints.

The two males were top figures under the state of saint, whose cultivations had reached the Ninth Level Half-Saint. Although they had suppressed their Qi, intimidating might had been given out from their bodies.

Bai Xuanshuang looked delighted, and said, "Great! I wanted to bring Senior Brother Yan and Senior Brother Fu to give you a hand. But you've run away before."

Both Yan Wenqi and Fu Shang stared at Zhang Ruochen with hostility.

Yan Wenqi was a little younger, looking to be around 27 or 28. He gave a cold look. "Han Ying is so powerful that you couldn't run away from him easily."

Zhang Ruochen frowned a little, and asked calmly, "What do you mean, young mister?"

Yan Wenqi laughed, "I'm a little worried that you could be a Trojan Horse arranged by the Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion and the Canglong Army who wanted to get inside. The so-called ambush could be a pretence played by you and Han Ying."

Fu Shang looked at Qin Yutong, and said, "Junior Sister, you are being careless this time. With Han Ying's cultivation and methods, how could you leave so soon? Don't you have any doubts about him?"

Qin Yutong looked at Yan Wenqi and Fu Shang, and said, "You don't know the whole story. You'd better not offend this young gentleman."

Bai Xuanshuang looked angry, and said, "This gentleman has killed one of the ten commanders of the Canglong Army, Guo

Lu, and helped many of our sisters and brothers seek revenge in the Cai Family Saint Mansion. How could he be a Trojan Horse of the Canglong Army?"

Yan Wenqi and Fu Shang both put on a solemn look, and cried, "He has killed Guo Lu?"

Even if the two of them worked together, they would only take a little advantage over Guo Lu, and couldn't kill him.

How could this young man be so powerful?

Qin Yutong said, "Not only Guo Lu, he just killed Han Ying and 3,000 soldiers of the Canglong Army. My dear brothers, are you capable of that?"

The shock on Yan Wenqi and Fu Shang's faces became even stronger. They were in disbelief.

Bai Xuanshuang and Bai Xuanyu opened their mouths and brinked their eyes. They looked at Zhang Ruochen with respect, like they were looking at an unparalleled hero.

The thing that they weren't capable of doing after calculating for so long and paying so dearly had been done twice by Zhang Ruochen overnight. He had killed two of their strong enemies.

Zhang Ruochen didn't bother about Yan Wenqi and Fu Shang, but looked at Qin Yutong. He said, "Give me a safe and secret room for me to recover."

"No problem. You can use my exercise room. Nobody dares to intrude upon it," Qin Yutong said gently.

Zhang Ruochen added, "Also, use your strength to find the whereabouts of the rest of the eight commanders of the Canglong Army, and some important figures of the Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion, like the Fourth Young Lord."

Qin Yutong could feel the strong murderous will of Zhang Ruochen. Her plump bosom went up and down. And she asked, "What do you want?"

"I just want them to pay the price. They need to know that the Sacred City isn't their place."

Zhang Ruochen spoke firmly. His eyes were as sharp as two swords.

Chapter 1024 - Fifth Level Half-Saint

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

As the Dancing Fairy, Qin Yutong owned a palace in the depths of the Phoenix Dance Palace.

The palace hung on a cliff in the valley, from which the view was beautiful, and the complete picture of Phoenix Dance Palace could be seen from it. It was a perfect spot.

No man had ever been able to step inside it.

It was extraordinary that Zhang Ruochen could be invited by Qin Yutong to get in the palace, which made Yan Wenqi and Fu Shang jealous.

They thought that Qin Yutong valued this mysterious man too much and overtreated him above his own status.

Entering the palace, Qin Yutong stepped in the hidden part to activate the Formation in the palace, in case anyone should intrude.

“Are you with the Princess Royal?” asked Qin Yutong.

Zhang Ruochen didn't know the current structure of the Zhang Family, so he said casually, “I am not with anyone. I'm on my own.”

Qin Yutong frowned her black eyebrows slightly, and stopped asking. She took Zhang Ruochen to the lowest floor of her palace. They got to the door of an exercise room. Qin Yutong opened the stone door.

“This is the exercise room with the Defensive Formation, which can only be opened and closed from the inside. Once

the Formation is on, even saints couldn't crack it from the outside.”

Then she added, “If you need anything, you can ask Xuanshuang and Xuanyu. They can report your needs to me.”

“I don't need anything now.”

Zhang Ruochen walked into the room. Then he closed the door and activated the Defensive Formation immediately.

Outside the room, Bai Xuanshuang was curious. “Senior Sister, you said he wasn't sent by the Princess Royal, but was on his own. What does it mean? Could it be that there are other royal heirs besides the Princess Royal and the Lord Twelve who can cultivate a strong person like him?”

Qin Yutong thought carefully, and said, “In the chaos 800 years ago, many indirect descendants of the royal family escaped to the Savage Barren Territory or the Void World outside the Realm. He could be an heir of one of the indirect houses who just returned to the Kunlun's Field. So he reached us.”

“You two stay here. If he needs anything, you must let me know at once. I will discuss it with Granny Bai Su. We have to find out his identity.”

Apparently, Qin Yutong had some precautionary measures on Zhang Ruochen, since he was so mysterious and yet powerful.

Zhang Ruochen examined everything carefully after he entered the exercise room. Then he took out the Universe Spiritual Map and entered the Scroll World.

In fact, Zhang Ruochen wasn't hurt. He had just exhausted all his Holy Qi after using the Destruction of the Thousand-patterns, appearing to be weak.

Zhang Ruochen went back to his peak in a short while.

Then he took out the Fifth Class Divine Origin Pill and held it in his palm. He said to himself, “It's time to reach the Fifth Level Half-Saint.”

Swallowing the Fifth Class Divine Origin Pill, Zhang Ruochen operated his exercises immediately to reach the next state with

his full power.

Boom!

The power contained in the Fifth Class Divine Origin Pill was strong. It entered his belly and exploded. Massive energy released from it poured into his veins and blood.

Zhang Ruochen hadn't reached the peak of the Fourth Level Half-Saint yet. It was actually difficult for him to reach the Fifth Level now. He was highly likely to fail.

But he had to take his chances to reach the Fifth Level now.

He surely could compete with a Ninth Level Half-Saint now with his cultivation. But he was weaker than their powerful figures

Like when he had fought Han Ying, Zhang Ruochen couldn't have beat him without the Destruction of the Thousand-patterns, but could merely keep himself safe.

The root of it was his low cultivation.

Zhang Ruochen also refined the divine blood while he was refining the Fifth Class Divine Origin Pill, hoping to make up for the weakness of his state.

The two strong strands of power from the divine blood and the Fifth Class Divine Origin Pill clashed violently in Zhang Ruochen's body, severely hurting his organs. Blood came out of his mouth and nostrils.

But Zhang Ruochen went on and didn't give up.

After two whole days and nights, Zhang Ruochen's organs, veins and meridians were hurt to different extents. His body hurt, as if fire was burning inside every spot of his body.

Boom.

Zhang Ruochen endured it with great willpower. He broke through the bottleneck and reached the Fifth Level of Half-Saint.

After it, spiritual Qi gushed constantly in his lower abdomen through the Sacred Mark between his brows like tides running over every one of his saintly meridians and veins.

The super relaxation relieved the pain brought by his wounds. After stabilizing his state, Zhang Ruochen took out a Withered Pill and swallowed it.

After about an hour, Zhang Ruochen was fully recovered, reaching an unprecedented peak.

Zhang Ruochen ran Emperor Ming Nine-sky Scripture, and the Holy Qi inside his body revolved crazily, slightly shaking the spiritual Qi in the area around dozens of kilometers.

My cultivation now can help me easily kill Han Ying without using the Destruction of the Thousand-patterns nor the Power of Time and Space. Zhang Ruochen thought.

The surge of his cultivation made his will to kill even stronger.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen didn't walk out of the Scroll World, preparing to improve his power. There were figures who were stronger than Han Ying in the ten commanders of the Canglong Army.

Then, Zhang Ruochen took out the beast soul of the Green Armor Divine Elephant, planning to refine it into his right arm.

It was a beast soul which had cost Zhang Ruochen 7,000 saintly rocks in auction. As long as he could refine it, his right arm and body would build up greatly.

And only after refining a dragon soul and an elephant soul in the saint state would Zhang Ruochen have the chance to exercise the Tenth Palm of the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm, improving this palm play to the state of saint spells.

Although Zhang Ruochen had only finished exercising the Ninth Palm, he was able to burst its power of a saint spell.

Zhang Ruochen had successfully refined a saint dragon soul before, so he had the experience and didn't come across much trouble refining the elephant soul.

Just in a half day, he had finished refining the elephant soul into his right arm, blending it completely with his bones, muscles, veins and blood.

Zhang Ruochen raised his arms to transfer the Holy Qi to the veins and meridians of his arms and activate the dragon soul and the elephant soul.

Clang.

Dragon scales the size of nails grew on his left arm. And green armors grew on his right arm.

Deafening roars of a dragon and an elephant were heard at the same time.

A giant green dragon's shadow and a mountain sized green saint elephant's shadow showed up behind Zhang Ruochen at the same time, reflecting the sky with green light and giving out two terrible strands of Qi of savage beasts.

Zhang Ruochen pressed his palms to his front.

Two giant handprints showed up in the void, violently shaking the heaven and the earth.

“The saint beast's soul is surely extraordinary. If I could operate the power of the dragon soul and the elephant soul together to play the Ninth Palm of the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm, my attack might be 36 times more powerful than before.”

Before refining the elephant soul, the Ninth Palm of Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm played by Zhang Ruochen could only burst 34 times of its original power.

Although it looked like there was only two times the attack added, the power had increased greatly.

Normally, a martial move which could increase 30 times could be called a saint spell.

And among the Ninth Level Half-Saints, only a few would have practiced a kind of saint spell to its utmost.

In other words, most Ninth Level Half-Saints would only play 20 times the attack.

If Zhang Ruochen could burst 36 times the attack, he would be able to defeat Ninth Level Half-Saints who were stronger and higher cultivated than him.

Of course, after refining the dragon soul and the elephant soul, the power of Zhang Ruochen's palm play went up a little as well.

"If I could finish the Tenth Palm, I wonder how much power the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm would explode..."

Zhang Ruochen looked forward to it.

But he also knew that it was not easy for him to finish practicing the Ten Palm of the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm, even if he had refined the dragon soul and the elephant soul.

At least, he couldn't make it in a short time.

Zhang Ruochen didn't try to crack the seventh aperture of the Seven-Apertures Blood Palm, planning to try it after he stabilized his state.

It was risky for him to reach the Fifth Level Half-Saint this time, leaving some hidden wounds which were hard to be cured.

Before they were cured, Zhang Ruochen didn't want to take a second risk.

Zhang Ruochen visited Sikong One, Sikong Two and Murong Yue. Seeing them busy practicing, Zhang Ruochen didn't bother them.

In fact, Sikong One and Sikong Two were powerful figures. Borrowing their strength would make it easier for Zhang Ruochen to defeat the ten commanders of the Canglong Army.

But Zhang Ruochen didn't do it. They were Buddhist monks and shouldn't engage in killing people and feuds.

He had to deal with his issue alone.

Zhang Ruochen left the Scroll World and put the Universe Spiritual Map away. Zoom. He opened the door of the practicing room.

Bai Xuanshuang and Bai Xuanyu were waiting outside. Seeing Zhang Ruochen going out, they approached him immediately.

Zhang Ruochen observed them for the first time. They were both rare beauties, maybe sisters, as they looked alike.

Zhang Ruochen asked, “Are you both descendants of the Zhang Family?”

Both Bai Xuanshuang and Bai Xuanyu worshipped Zhang Ruochen very much. Seeing him ask them, they felt delighted and nodded at once.

Bai Xuanshuang was a little extroverted. She said, “I’m Bai Xuanshuang. This is my little sister, Bai Xuanyu.”

Bai Xuanyu was a little gloomy. She sighed, “Our Bai Family used to be a distinguished household of the Sacred Central Empire. In the war 800 years ago, the empire was overthrown. Any family who didn’t surrender to the First Central Empire was brutally cleared out.”

“Some of the males in the family were killed. Some were sent to the frontier to fight with savage beasts and ended up being eaten by them.”

“Women suffered even more. Most were collected by the generals of the Ministry of War as playthings. The rest became the government’s hookers. Some ended up in brothels and some became slaves.”

Chapter 1025 - The Worldly Sensation

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Winners took all. Wars were always brutal. The dark history put people in extreme grief.

Bai Xuanyu's eyes were bloodshot. She said, "When the Sacred City was taken in the past, it was the Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion that had slaughtered many monks who were loyal to the empire. Our ancestors were killed in the massacre."

Bai Xuanshuang comforted her sister, "We are lucky that we were helped by Lord Twelve to go on practicing and gaining the power to take revenge on our enemies, instead of being slaves and living pathetic lives."

Zhang Ruochen was touched. He asked them about the stories about Lord Twelve.

According to them, Lord Twelve had saved many persecuted descendants of the last dynasty with part loyal heirs of the royal family and monks who were loyal to the Sacred Central Empire.

They'd been hiding in the dark and fighting the imperial court, taking revenge while waiting for Emperor Ming's return.

They firmly believed that Emperor Ming was still alive.

Besides Lord Twelve, there was another strong power listening to the older sister of Emperor Ming, the Princess Royal of the last dynasty.

But the Princess Royal thought that the time of the Sacred Central Empire had ended and the power of the First Central Empire was too strong to fight. If they went on fighting it, more innocent people would die.

So she took an army and left the Kunlun's Field, hiding in some Void World outside the Realm.

To sum it up, those who followed Lord Twelve were called radicals.

And those who followed the Princess Royal were called conservatives.

Lord Twelve wanted to save more descendants of the last dynasty with his power, providing them a more dignified life, instead of living as battle slaves, servants and whores.

The Princess Royal was more sensible in that she didn't want more people die for it.

Endings like Zhang Fengxing's and Zhang Shu's were extremely tragic.

If their ancestors had left with the Princess Royal, maybe it would not have happened to them.

Who's right? Who's wrong?

Actually they had both chosen what they believed to be the right way. They just thought differently.

Zhang Ruochen asked, "How about the Sacred Central Crypt?"

Bai Xuanshuang showed hatred in her eyes. She said, "The Sacred Central Crypt is just a bunch of usurpers. Before, Emperor Ming disappeared, the Crown Prince was assassinated, and the whole Sacred Central Empire fell into disorder."

"People wanted to elect Lord Twelve to become the prince regent until Emperor Ming returned. But the owner of the Peacock House, Kong Shangling, thought he was the best besides Emperor Ming and the most qualified to become the ruler of the Sacred Central Empire."

“So Kong Shangling united some ministers to take over the government, and entered Emperor Ming’s Palace.”

“And Emperor Qing and Chi Yao used it as an excuse to lead the army of the Chi Qing Central Empire to wage war against Kong Shangling and then merge with the Sacred Central Empire. Then hundreds of years of warfare and disasters were brought to the Kunlun’s Field.”

“300 years ago, after Kong Shangling died of old age, our relationship with the Sacred Central Crypt eased up a little. We would even collaborate to fight the oppression of the government.”

Bai Xuanshuang and Bai Xuanyu told many things to Zhang Ruochen, making him angry and emotional.

There were so many conflicts in relation to the destruction of an empire, which couldn’t be clarified in just words. There were many stories that even the parties wouldn’t have known about.

Bai Xuanshuang and Bai Xuanyu hadn’t experienced the history by themselves, so their telling was from others. They sounded subjective.

Standing on different angles, each person had different views.

Even Murong Yue had a story slightly different from theirs.

Bai Xuanshuang and Bai Xuanyu led Zhang Ruochen to the stairs and came to the living room of Qin Yutong’s palace.

Bai Xuanyu took out a pot of hot tea, and poured Zhang Ruochen a cup.

“I’ve passed word to Senior Sister that you’ve finished exercising. She should come here soon,” said Bai Xuanyu.

Zhang Ruochen took out a pot of divine blood, and gave 100 drops to each of them.

Such a huge amount of divine blood frightened them both. They dared not to accept it, wanting to refuse.

Zhang Ruochen said, “You’ve reached the Fourth Level Half-Saint before 100 years old, which means that you have high

talents. But your bodies are too weak to help you become saints.”

“If you each could refine 100 drops of divine blood, you could improve your cultivation and build up your bodies greatly. In the future, you might be able to become saints.”

Out of the desire to become saints, Bai Xuanshuang and Bai Xuanyu accepted the divine blood.

They both bowed to Zhang Ruochen, and said, “Thank you very much, my lord.”

Bai Xuanshuang’s eyes rolled and said secretly, “You mustn’t tell this to Senior Sister, my lord. Otherwise, she will scold us.”

Zhang Ruochen laughed and said, “You can’t tell this to other people, either. Otherwise, I might be killed for it.”

“No, no, no. We won’t!”

Bai Xuanshuang and Bai Xuanyu said repeatedly and retreated to hide the divine blood in a haste.

Bai Xuanshuang and Bai Xuanyu were both unfortunate people. Their ancestors also had suffered a lot from the destruction of the Sacred Central Empire.

Zhang Ruochen giving them two small pots of divine blood was a kind of compensation for the Bai Family.

But of course Zhang Ruochen wouldn’t give away divine blood randomly.

He saw that Bai Xuanshuang and Bai Xuanyu didn’t have any schemes nor did they look greedy, so he decided to give it to them.

If they were people with schemes, Zhang Ruochen wouldn’t dare to give them pricey gifts.

Qin Yutong came back in a light blue dress. She still wore a veil. A red ring made of jade hung to her slim waist, looking antique and beautiful.

She sat across from Zhang Ruochen gracefully, and passed two scrolls covered by white beast leather to Zhang Ruochen,

and said, “This is the latest Half-Saint Rank and the Half-Saint Outer Rank. Do you wanna take a look?”

“Really?”

Zhang Ruochen picked up the Half-Saint Rank and the Half-Saint Outer Rank and read them through quickly.

Neither rank had his name.

Even though Zhang Ruochen had killed two saints of the Demonic Sect, and had stolen the spotlight of the Nine Heirs.

The Saint Lady knew his real strength and didn't list him in the two ranks.

Both Sikong One and Sikong Two were included in the Half-Saint Outer Rank. They ranked No. 472 and No. 473.

They'd had a fight with Kong Hongbi, which made names for them.

The fight was short and neither party had used full strength. Therefore, it wasn't easy to estimate Sikong One and Sikong Two's real power.

So their rankings were comparatively low.

Besides them, another person's name caught Zhang Ruochen's eyes.

It was Le.

Le was placed in the ending of the Half-Saint Outer Rank, barely making it. But it still surprised Zhang Ruochen.

He didn't get the rich resources for practice like the Nine Heirs, but his speed was not slower than the Nine Heirs. It was crazy.

“I was right to teach him the Nine-Circle Life-Death Code. Maybe he will become the first person to have finished practicing the Ninth Circle.” Zhang Ruochen smiled.

The exercise of the Nine-Circle Life-Death Code was different from other authentic ways. It was an abnormal exercise, which could cost the person their life at any time.

The more dangerous it became, the closer to death, the quicker his cultivation would be improved.

Each time he died, his cultivation would be greatly improved.

But sometimes, the death would be fatal.

Because of the speciality of this exercise, Le's speed surpassed ordinary monks. Even Nine Heirs wouldn't be able to compare with him.

After reading the two ranks, Zhang Ruochen handed it back and put it on the table.

Qin Yutong looked grave, and said, "Another big thing has happened."

"What is it?" asked Zhang Ruochen.

Qin Yutong said, "It is said that the spiritual Qi in the Central Emperor City has dropped sharply. People say that that's because the true self of the Empress has left the city."

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen's face turned grave as well.

As the saying went, any mountains can be famous with the presence of an immortal, and the presence of a dragon can make any river sacred.

Because of the Empress's presence, all spiritual Qi in the Kunlun's Field had gathered in the Central Emperor City.

As a result, the Central Emperor City had always been the place that had the most spiritual Qi. And all monks gathered there.

The true self of the Empress hadn't left the city for years.

"Where should she go?" Zhang Ruochen frowned.

Qin Yutong said, "People are guessing that it has something to do with the chaos of war happening everywhere in the Kunlun's Field."

"It is said that because of her leave, in the Northern Region, some Blood Emperors of the Immortal Vampires have left the Kunlun's Field to hide overseas."

“In the Eastern Region, the ghost kings who had run away from the netherworld have hidden their traces and disappeared.”

“The Death Zen Sect in the Southern Region rested a little. The top powerful figures all disappeared overnight. They must be hiding from the Empress’s power as well.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled and said, “With her cultivation, a move of her true self would shake the whole world. Perhaps the savage kings in the Savage Barren Territory are frightened as well.”

Qin Yutong added, “Of course there is no telling whether the Empress might have gone somewhere to hide herself from the Celestial Way, as there was no word of her appearance in the Northern Region, Eastern Region or the Southern Region. Her whereabouts have become a mystery.”

Zhang Ruochen changed his looks frequently, and said, “At least, before the puzzle is solved, the powerful saints of the Death Zen Sect, the Immortal Vampires and the netherworld wouldn’t dare to make moves, but will hide. It’s good news to the human race.”

Qin Yutong nodded in agreement with Zhang Ruochen’s view.

After a while, Zhang Ruochen asked again, “Have you found the whereabouts of the other eight commanders of the Canglong Army?”

Chapter 1026 - Yan Honglie

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Qin Yutong felt Zhang Ruochen's strong will to kill again. She didn't expect that he really prepared to kill all the ten commanders of the Canglong Army.

Qin Yutong stared into Zhang Ruochen's eyes, and said, "The deaths of Guo Lu and Han Ying two days ago have shocked the whole Sacred City. The powerful figures in the Canglong Army are looking for you even today."

"I don't think now is the time for you to attack. You should hide in the Phoenix Dance Palace for a while, and wait for your chance."

Zhang Ruochen looked at the moon in the sky. He picked up his cup and took a sip. He said, "Now, every commander of the Canglong Army is looking for me in the Sacred City. It's the perfect timing for me to attack."

The moonlight fell on the palace hanging on the cliff and lit it up like a fantasy land.

Countless men had dreamed about sitting across from the Dancing Fairy. But Zhang Ruochen now paid no attention to her, but was in a contemplation of how to kill the ten commanders of the Canglong Army.

If the suitors of Qin Yutong knew this, they would definitely curse him for his absent mind.

Qin Yutong naturally wanted to kill the ten commanders of the Canglong Army to avenge her ancestors.

But she also knew that the Canglong Army must have strengthened their defenses under such a situation. It would be

ten times harder to kill a general now than before.

Zhang Ruochen gave the sharp look, and added, “After the commanders of the Canglong Army return to the Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion, or hide in the camp, I would lose my chance to kill them then.”

Qin Yutong said, “It’s very important. We have to arrange carefully and pick the perfect timing. We can’t take moves randomly.”

Meanwhile, Bai Xuanshuang walked in and reported with her hands cupped. “Senior Sister, the commander of the Sixth Base of the Canglong Army, Yan Honglie, has come to the Phoenix Dance Palace. He would like to spend 100 saintly rocks to see you. Will you meet him?”

“No.” Qin Yutong refused directly.

There were hundreds of young monks who would like to spend large amounts of money to see Qin Yutong each day. But only a few could really meet Qin Yutong.

Light flickered in Zhang Ruochen’s eyes. He stood up and said, “Why not? Since he’s here, why should we let him go?”

Qin Yutong shook her head immediately, and said, “Yan Honglie’s cultivation is as high as the end of the Ninth Level Half-Saint. He ranks No.4 in the ten commanders, far before Han Ying who ranked No.8 and Guo Lu No.10.”

“I used to think that I could seduce him with beauty and set up something. But I rejected the plan.”

Zhang Ruochen asked, “Why?”

Qin Yutong said, “His cultivation is too high. He has the opportunity to become a saint, and has no desire for women. He has come to the Phoenix Dance Palace many times, but I don’t think he’s here to pursue me. It’s very likely that he has suspected my identity and wants to test me. If we attack him recklessly, we can’t kill him, and we would probably expose ourselves.”

“Now we have to kill him,” said Zhang Ruochen.

Qin Yutong saw that Zhang Ruochen was determined. She wouldn't be able to stop him.

So, she made up a plan to assassinate Yan Honglie at the last minute. Then she sent for the other two powerful Ninth Level Half-Saint in the Phoenix Dance Palace, Yan Wenqi and Fu Shang, to work out a solution.

...

An hour later, a black battlewagon with a ghost head was seen riding out of the Phoenix Dance Palace to the wide street.

The battlewagon with a ghost head was pulled by two Sixth Level Warbeasts. 36 high cultivated guardians followed the wagon. Only the commanders of the Canglong Army could be so extravagant.

At the same time, a gorgeous wagon also rode out of the Phoenix Dance Palace, and followed the Ghost Head Battlewagon for a long distance.

Qin Yutong sat alone in the wagon. She was extremely nervous.

Yan Honglie was a supremely powerful figure under saints. Any mistake would cost her life.

“Me, Senior Brother Yan and Senior Brother Fu working together would be able to fight Yan Honglie. Plus him, we stand a chance to win.”

Qin Yutong was a careful woman. She couldn't help thinking that tonight's assassination was too risky. But now, since they had started it, they had to finish it. They had to place all their hope on Zhang Ruochen.

Yan Wenqi and Fu Shang suppressed their breaths in the dark, and followed the Ghost Head Battlewagon in the other two directions.

The carriage of the Ghost Head Battlewagon was so heavy that it rumbled while rolling on the stone plate.

Yan Honglie was a middle-aged man around 40 years old. He sat steadily in the wagon. His eyes were cold and his whole body was covered by blood red Qi of killing.

Two 16 or 17 years old maidens served him carefully in the Ghost Head Battlewagon.

One said, “The Dancing Fairy is too arrogant. She would dare to refuse Lord Commander! Isn’t she just a cheap whore of the brothel? What’s she proud about?”

“Yes! What kind of women can’t our Lord Commander have? We already showed respect to pay her a visit in the Phoenix Dance Palace,” said the other.

Coldness was seen in Yan Honglie’s eyes. His pupils had turned the strange blood red. He laughed malignantly, “Who says the Dancing Fairy didn’t want to meet me? Isn’t she coming alone?”

Two maidens were surprised. They didn’t know why the Lord Commander said this.

And the two Sixth Level Warbeasts which were pulling the carriage noticed the dangerous Qi and stopped all of a sudden.

Yan Honglie walked out of the Ghost Head Battlewagon, and saw the 36 guardians had been frozen by a strand of coldness, and had turned into ice sculptures.

Above his head, a layer of the light cover like a water curtain had enveloped the area within the surrounding dozens of kilometers.

It was dark and extremely quiet.

Yan Honglie appeared to be calm and made a weird laugh. He looked at the gorgeous carriage behind him, and said, “Why does the Fairy chase me? You find it hard to leave me?”

Qin Yutong sat in the carriage and said with an elegant and refined voice, “I’m just here to seeing Commander Yan off.”

Yan Honglie looked to his front, and saw two tall men standing about 300 meters before him, blocking his way.

The men were Yan Wenqi and Fu Shang.

Yan Honglie didn’t change his face and laughed, “So I was right. The well-known Dancing Fairy should be an evil survivor of the last dynasty! Alas, what a pity! Pity!”

“Attack.”

Qin Yutong was decisive. She gave orders to Yan Wenqi and Fu Shang directly.

Zoom.

Zoom.

Both of them played their body moves to appear within 30 meters of Yan Honglie in a second. They each made a print and went to attack him.

The print they played was called the Ten-sided Vanish Print, a kind of combined attack martial move.

If it was played by ten Ninth Level Half-Saints, the Ten-sided Vanish Print would be able to resist a saint for a while.

It was undefeatable under the saint state.

The more monks the print combined, the more powerful the Ten-sided Vanish Print would become.

Qin Yutong also made her print to combine with Yan Wenqi and Fu Shang, and threw the Ten-sided Vanish Print from three directions.

Yan Honglie raised his hands. Blazing and domineering flames went up from his feet to his headtop, changing into a fire cloud.

“Netherworld Fire Power!”

Yan Honglie stepped on the ground with one foot. Red flames like a 30 meter tall wave gushed in all directions from his foot with a boom.

The power of the Netherworld Fire was so terrible that it had melted the stone plate into complete magma.

The power of fire smashed the Ten-sided Vanish Print of Qin Yutong, Yan Wenqi and Fu Shang, and threw them backwards.

Fu Shang, the lowest cultivated among them, was severely wounded and even spit blood.

Qin Yutong and Yan Wenqi didn't suffer less. They fell on the ground pathetically. Their face lost color. Then, they raced

back quickly.

The cultivation of Yan Honglie was terrible. Far beyond their expectations, his cultivation must have arrived at the peak of the Ninth Level Half-Saint.

They couldn't fight him.

“Ten-sided Vanish Print?”

Yan Honglie glanced at them and gave a sneer. “With your cultivations, and only three sides of the Vanish Print, you would dare to try to kill me? If you had five sides, maybe you would stand a chance. But now you don't.”

The second Yan Honglie finished his words, his shadow dispersed into fire.

Qin Yutong felt an extremely dangerous Qi approaching them, and said, “No! Use the saint decrees! Run!”

“It's too late!”

Three fire giants were condensed in front of Qin Yutong, Yan Wenqi and Fu Shang respectively.

Three fire prints were hit by them.

Yan Wenqi and Fu Shang were hit in the first. The fire print hit their chests and broke most of their bones. They fell on the ground after the deadly attack.

“Ocean of Stars!”

Qin Yutong's hands made two prints. She transferred Holy Qi to her beautiful eyes.

Zoom.

Light particles gushed out from her eyes to cover the space in the surrounding 300 meters like a sky of stars, trying to resist the attack of the fire giant.

But the fire giant was a body of energy, which went through the thousands of stars like light particles, and hit the chest of Qin Yutong.

As it was known that Qin Yutong didn't have a strong body like that of Yan Wenqi and Fu Shang. Once she was hit, she

would surely die.

Qin Yutong accepted the fact that she would die soon.

But a bright sword light flew from behind her. It penetrated the fire giant with indomitable might.

Then a low screech was heard behind the fire giant.

“What a quick sword!”

Qin Yutong’s forehead was covered by thick and fragrant sweet drops. She looked behind the fire giant.

Yan Honglie was seen standing at his original spot, but a blood hole was seen penetrating his chest, which was of the size of a plate.

Crack.

Dozens of cracks appeared on Yan Honglie’s body. Then, it exploded and dozens of pieces of flesh flew away.

Zhang Ruochen held his sword and stood with his back facing Qin Yutong. He said, “You are to deal with the rest. And, next time, you just have to tell me the whereabouts of other commanders of the Canglong Army. It wouldn’t be so troublesome if I fought alone.”

Finishing his words, Zhang Ruochen’s body flashed and disappeared.

Qin Yutong stared at the broken body of Yan Honglie, finding it hard to calm down. He had killed another commander so easily?

Even though Yan Honglie had just died in front of her, she still found it hard to believe.

After a long time, she changed her shocked look. She smiled and said to herself, “What a proud person! But he has everything to be proud of. With his strength, the Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion and the Canglong Army will feel scared and uneasy in the coming days.”

Chapter 1027 - The Return of the Crown Prince

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The death of Yan Honglie shocked the people in the Royal Capital more than Guo Lu's and Han Ying's.

The Canglong Army was headed by ten reputable commanders. Together they had a million soldiers under their command, governing the military aspect of the Royal Capital. Their influence in the Royal Capital was no doubt significant, even to some influential families of the saints.

Who would have thought they would be killed within a few days?

A hidden powerful force was coming at Canglong Army and the people related to Lingxiao Heavenly King.

Han Ying and Yan Honglie could be killed by the same person.

Someone from the Half-Saint Rank and the Half-Saint Outer Rank must have visited the Royal Capital. Otherwise, no one would be able to kill the commander-in-chief without others knowing.

Everyone in the city thought so.

The shortlist candidates of the Half-Saint Rank and the Half-Saint Outer Rank had no more than two hundred cultivators.

Excluding those who wouldn't dare to offend Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion and including those who had deep hatred against the King, the number was even fewer.

Many had guessed it was Kong Hongbi who orchestrated the assassinations.

The Sacred Central Crypt had always been the opposing party to the Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion. The two could never get along. Further to that, there had been rumors saying that Kong Hongbi was in the city.

When Kong Hongbi was told about the rumors, he hissed, “So I am the suspect now?”

Saint General Gui Gu stood next to Kong Hongbi and said, “Following the death of the commanders, the saint elder of the Lingxiao Heavenly Mansion and the commander-in-chief of the Canglong Army have been deploying troops to wipe out forces of the Sacred Central Crypt in the Royal Capital.”

“There was no action taken against us previously because they had been waiting for the big fish. But the death of the three commanders have gotten on their nerves. They are going to do it by force this time.”

Kong Hongbi scoffed, “Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion and the Canglong Army are getting under my skin. Do not make me kill their remaining commanders.”

Kong Hongbi never wanted to start a war, unless it was necessary.

The war would only rip the two parties off while benefiting the other parties.

Saint General Gui Gu advised, “Don’t, young master. Someone has already made the move against Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion. We should sit aside and reap the benefits when the two are fighting against each other.”

“You are right.”

Kong Hongbi seemed to have cooled off, nodding at the suggestion. Then, his face showed an evil cunning smile and said, “The mysterious man who killed Guo Lu during the banquet in Cai Family Saint Mansion must be Zhang Ruochen.”

“It has to be him. He came to the Royal Capital along with Chu Siyuan. Other than him, there is no other young but powerful man that Chu Siyuan could find,” said Saint General Gui Gu.

Kong Hongbi commented further, “If that’s the case, spread the news. On top of that, tell everyone that Han Ying and Yan Honglie were killed by Zhang Ruochen. Only the Time and Space Descendant has the ability to kill someone without anyone knowing it.”

“Brilliant! That’s killing two birds with one stone.”

Saint General Gui Gu was delighted. He added further, “One, the war will no longer be necessary, for the Sacred Central Crypt has steered clear of the rumor.”

“Two, we could locate Zhang Ruochen through the people of Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion.”

“Three, we could set the Saint Painter Chu Siyuan up. While the Empress is missing, a feud between Confucianism and Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion would create a scene to the public.”

“But...”

“What is it?” asked Kong Hongbi.

Looking worried, Saint General Gui Gu said, “Though Zhang Ruochen is the wanted felon, he is not related to the Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion. Why would he expose himself by killing the three commanders? Some might not buy it even if we have spread the news.”

Kong Hongbi laughed, confident of his plan. “If we can accuse him of killing the commanders, why can’t we create a cause for others to believe his intention? If I’m not mistaken, the Sacred Central Empire had a crown prince whose name was also Zhang Ruochen.”

“He was assassinated when he was sixteen. Eight hundred years have gone by and the crown prince has long been forgotten.”

“We could use this against Zhang Ruochen.”

Saint General Gui Gu frowned. He asked, “What does a dead person of eight hundred years old have to do with Zhang Ruochen?”

“When the news is out, people will relate him to the dead crown prince. The Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion and the Canglong Army will never allow such person to live. What’s more, Zhang Ruochen is the Time and Space Descendant, the wanted felon...”

Kong Hongbi paused, his eyes widening.

He then let out a long sigh and said, “Even I myself was almost convinced that Zhang Ruochen was the crown prince.”

“Not possible.”

Saint General Gui Gu shook his head and said, “The Sacred Central Crypt has taken a look into his background. He is the prince from a faraway country in the east. His identity has been proven by many.”

“That’s true.”

Kong Hongbi waved the thought off, then said, “Do as I say, spread the rumors. We shall watch everyone’s reaction. Hehe.”

In the evening, when Zhang Ruochen was about to kill the fourth commander, everyone in the Phoenix Dance Palace was discussing some shocking news.

The Phoenix Dance Palace was the largest brothel in the Royal Capital, which made it the perfect place to plant seeds of gossip. Of course, the rumor that the Sacred Central Crypt planned on spreading started from the brothel.

“The one who killed Guo Lu, Han Ying, Yan Honglie is the Time and Space Descendant Zhang Ruochen?”

“Zhang Ruchen is in the Royal Capital. He is about to kill all of the commanders.”

“The Time and Space Descendant controls time and space. He is the only one who has the ability to kill all ten commanders of the Canglong Army.”

...

The ripple of the news soon spread to the entire city.

When Baixuan Shuang and Baixuan Yu heard the news, they were extremely surprised. The way they looked at Zhang

Ruochen changed.

They admired Zhang Ruochen, but the admiration had now mixed with some element of fear.

After taking the Withered Pill, Yan Wenqi and Fu Shang had recovered.

When the two heard the news, they could not digest that the powerful figure in the golden mask was actually the Time and Space Descendant Zhang Ruochen.

The name Zhang Ruochen was associated with a terrifying reputation. Recently, he had killed yet another two saints from the Demonic Sect.

As soon as Qin Yutong heard the news, she rushed to tell Zhang Ruochen who had just left the Phoenix Dance Palace.

Her radiant eyes fixed on Zhang Ruochen, and then she asked, “Are you the Time and Space Descendant Zhang Ruochen?”

Zhang Ruochen’s face was as calm as he had always been. He replied, “Does it matter?”

Qin Yutong’s heart raced. She knew the masked man standing in front of her was the man the world feared. Masking the excitement in her, she asked calmly, “Why are you helping us?”

Zhang Ruochen did not answer the question.

Meanwhile, another overwhelming piece of news emerged, and it shook the city at a greater scale than the first.

Not only was the news shared to the entire city, but also to the Central Emperor City and all the other sects.

It was world breaking news.

“Eight hundred years ago, the crown prince of the Sacred Central Empire Zhang Ruochen...he is alive. He has returned as the Time and Space Descendant.”

“Zhang Ruochen killed the three commanders to avenge his fallen kingdom.”

“The Empress knew about his identity, which explained why she gave the order of his arrest. She wanted him dead before he grew stronger.”

“Zhang Ruochen is the Time and Space Descendant. With the power of time and space, he can travel through time and revive Emperor Ming.”

The news went viral, under the instruction of the Sacred Central Crypt.

Even Zhang Ruochen was surprised at the news, wondering where the source came from.

“Could it be Lanyou?”

She was the first that came to his mind.

In all of the Royal Capital, she was the only one who knew of his identity.

“Why is she doing so? Could it be because I haven’t been looking for her since the day I arrived in the Royal Capital? And she’s using this to ask me to show up?” Zhang Ruochen shut his eyes, looking puzzled.

If the Sacred Central Crypt knew of his arrival, why wouldn’t Kong Lanyou?

The sole reason he had not been to the Imperial Mausoleum was because he was not prepared to meet her.

Was he going to meet her as the cousin? Or the crown prince of the Sacred Central Empire? Or as someone junior?

Their relationship was complicated, as it involved family and the responsibility they both bore as the Saint Elder of the Sacred Central Crypt and the Crown prince of the Sacred Central Empire.

Too many things had happened over those eight hundred years. Could they find the bond they shared as siblings still?

She’s asking to see me but with such an extreme method. Is that her way of asking me to join the Sacred Central Crypt?

Despite his refusal to believe it was Kong Lanyou, he could not think of anyone else.

Besides, only an influential party could spread the news to the whole of the city within a short period of time.

The Sacred Central Crypt was one of the influential parties.

Qin Yutong's eyes widened in astonishment. Even her petite body was trembling.

Zhang Ruochen tried to mask his inner turmoil and said, "I am going to kill the fourth commander, Liao Huacheng. Save your questions and ask upon my return."

"No."

Qin Yutong finally blinked her eyes and appeared in front of Zhang Ruochen in an attempt to stop him. She said, "Come to see Granny Bai Su with me. You cannot accomplish such a dangerous task alone. What if you get into trouble... What should I do then?"

Clearly, Qin Yutong believed that Zhang Ruochen was the Crown Prince. Her attitude to him had also changed.

Just then, Baixuan Yu and Baixuan Shuang came over with an old lady between them.

Author's Note: The wechat subscription account of 'God Emperor' is 'feitianyu5'. Subscribe for the latest updates and spoilers.

Chapter 1028 - Bai Su

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The old lady wore a muted color robe which made her complexion look paler. Her skin had grown dull and creased with age, and her head was bare, almost bald; just a few strands of grey hair flickered in the breeze.

She seemed very emotional, breaking Bai Xuanyu and Bai Xuanshuang's grip while rushing to have a close up look of Zhang Ruochen. Holding his hands, she broke down in tears. "My prince... my prince... is that really you? You have returned, haven't you?"

The old lady's cultivation was so strong that the space surrounding them felt as if it had been carved from the rest.

No one could see nor touch them though they were standing in the middle of a busy street.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes met the old lady's. He felt a strange sense of recognition and familiarity despite meeting her for the first time. He could also tell she wasn't faking her tears.

Someone at her age would not have broken down so easily.

Having been affected by her emotions, Zhang Ruochen did not attempt to hide his identity. He asked, "Do you know me?"

The old lady answered with her shaky voice, "I am Bai Su, Bai Su! You had two handmaids when you were younger, and I was one of them. Don't you remember?"

Zhang Ruochen was stunned for a moment, and stared at the haggard dying old lady in disbelief. He said, "You are Bai Su, Little Su from the Bai family? You were only nine years old when you came to the palace. It was a snowy night and your

cheeks went rosy in the cold. The elder of the Bai family sent you to the East Palace herself, and you became my handmaid ever since. At that time, you were only this tall. How have you grown... so..."

He did not say the word 'old.'

It had been eight hundred years after all. It was a miracle that she was still alive when many had died of old age.

Tears spilled down her wrinkled cheeks when she was reminded of her childhood memories. Overwhelmed with emotion, she fell to her knees. "My prince... You are the crown prince. Seeing you again before my life ends... I have no more regrets... I've had a worthwhile life!"

Qin Yutong, Bai Xuanyu and Bai Xuanshuang were astounded by the sight of Granny Bai Su kneeling in front of Zhang Ruochen. They followed after her and bowed, "Crown Prince."

"The Sacred Central Empire fell eight hundred years ago. I am no longer the crown prince. Get up, all of you."

Zhang Ruochen let out a long sigh, extending his hand to help Granny Bai Su up.

"The Empire is still standing so long as the crown prince is alive."

Keeping her emotions under control, Granny Bai Su asked, "My prince, is the Emperor back with you?"

Qin Yutong, Bai Xuanyu and Bai Xuanshuang did not get up off the ground. Their eyes flashed in anticipation.

The news of Emperor Ming returning would be even more exhilarating.

"No. I have been looking for him too."

Zhang Ruochen shifted his gaze at Granny Bai Su and said, "Bai Su, I have a lot of questions about the palace plot. Can I ask you in private?"

Granny Bai Su nodded.

They went to a cultivation residence back in the Phoenix Dance Palace.

Qin Yutong, Bai Xuanyu and Bai Xuanshuang waited at the entrance, leaving Zhang Ruochen and Granny Bai Su alone in the residence.

Bai Xuanshuang was delighted. She exclaimed, “He is the Crown Prince, and we are the first who have been in touch with him. What if... what if I become the wife of the Crown Prince? What should I do?”

Bai Xuanyu seemed more composed than her sister was. She answered, “Sister, there is nothing to worry about, for you will never be the wife of the Crown Prince. I think Senior Qin will be a good match for the Crown Prince.”

Bai Xuanshuang gritted her teeth in silent fury.

Qin Yutong stood slightly further from the sisters in silence, looking like a charming angel in a painting, her eyes gleaming with a gentle smile.

The Crown Prince’s appearance was indeed delightful news that made the three of them beam with joy.

In the cultivation residence, Granny Bai Su hunched forward, walking extremely slow. With a trembling voice, she said, “Eight hundred years ago, the Crown Prince was assassinated in the East Palace. The Emperor went missing on the same day. The palace and the imperial court went into complete chaos.”

Zhang Ruochen asked, “The day I was killed... Did you know what happened?”

Granny Bai Su shook her head and sighed, “I had no idea. That day, I went back to the Bai’s family mansion. When I heard of the assassination, it was already late in the evening. There were many sides to the story, and no one knew which was the truth.”

“What have you heard?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Granny Bai Su answered, “Some said that the Lady of House Peacock was seen at the East Palace after your death. And that

it was House Peacock that initiated the rebellion, attempting to take the throne from the Zhang's family.”

“There was another rumor saying that the one who murdered you was Princess Chi Yao of Chi Qing Central Empire.”

“Some even said that the plot was related to the Immortal Vampires, that this was the Blood Empress' revenge.”

Zhang Ruochen was intrigued when Granny Bai Su mentioned the Immortal Vampires. He asked, “How did this relate to the Immortal Vampires? Shouldn't the Blood Empress have been dead in the Bottomless Abyss already when the plot happened?”

“I found out about this later from Lord Twelve when he mentioned once that Emperor Ming and the Blood Empress shared a special relationship which had stopped the Emperor from banishing her to the Bottomless Abyss,” said Granny Bai Su.

Zhang Ruochen went into deep thought and remained silent.

He was puzzled at the fact that the Immortal Vampires had something to do with the plot.

Granny Bai Su continued further, “Later, Kong Shangling seized the throne, sending the Royal Capital chaos once again. Since then, I have never stepped foot into the Palace.”

“Thereafter, the Chi Qing Central Empire declared an open rebellion and there was yet another massacre at the Royal Capital. Some managed to escape but many did not.”

“Families who refused to serve the new empire were sentenced to death. The Bai's family was one of them, and all the women in the family had been abused.”

“I spent five years cultivating along your side, my Prince. With the supplements you gave me during those years, my body and cultivation level were rather powerful as compared to the others. I was then sold to a saint from the Phoenix Dance Palace at a high price and have been staying here ever since for the past seven hundred years.”

Granny Bai Su and Zhang Ruochen spent another six hours catching up on many things.

They included how she bumped into Lord Twelve, how she achieved the saint level, how she became the top management of the Phoenix Dance Palace...

Some stories she shared with grief and sorrow, where she would sob occasionally, like how she used to when she was a young, timid handmaid.

While tears were in her eyes, Granny Bai Su smiled and said, "I should have been dead two hundred years ago. But Lord Twelve has been sending me pills that could help extend my lifespan annually. That is why I am still alive today."

"The efficacy of the pills, however, has been reducing since a few years ago. Taking other factors into account, my life should end in another three month times. Seeing you again before I die has left my life with no other regret."

Granny Bai Su did not ask Zhang Ruochen of his experiences for the past eight hundred years. Instead, she asked whether she should inform Lord Twelve of his return.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and said, "No. Do not reveal this to anyone yet. The more people who know about it, the more danger I will encounter."

"That's quite true. Many outsiders have infiltrated our society."

Granny Bai Su was worried about Zhang Ruochen getting yet another attack.

She continued to comment, "Especially the officers from the imperial court. I can't imagine the consequences if they find out that you have returned."

After all, a rumor was not a fact, The imperial court would have a different take if the return of the Crown Prince was a fact.

While the rumor had gone viral, there had not been any concrete evidence showing that Zhang Ruochen was the crown prince of Sacred Central Empire.

When the rumor subsided, some rational monks would probably not buy it at all.

A rumor itself was not credible unless it was proven true.

“Keep this within the few of us and do not inform Lord Twelve. I will see him myself when the time comes,” said Zhang Ruochen.

Granny Bai Su asked, “What is your plan till then?”

Zhang Ruochen answered with a smile, “Cultivate, cultivate and cultivate! I hope to achieve the saint level soon. The title means nothing if I am not a saint. And I need your help on one matter.”

“What is it, my prince?”

Granny Bai Su bowed to Zhang Ruochen, She had always been courteous to Zhang Ruochen, then and now.

Zhang Ruochen looked concerned. After some hesitation, he said, “Could you investigate the source of the leak in my identity?”

“Yes, my prince.”

Granny Bai Su took this matter seriously; she was all ready to head out and investigate it by herself.

“Hold on,” Zhang Ruochen called out to her, taking out a black berry as large as a fist from the Spatial Ring.

“This is the Shenwan Fruit which I plucked from the Netherworld. Though I have no idea how long it has been growing on the nutrient and power of a god corpse, at the very least it can help extend your lifespan for a few more decades.”

“You have not changed a bit, my prince...you always share what you have.”

Rather than rejecting the fruit, Granny Bai Su accepted it with grace. She knew he would never take back what had been offered.

Besides, she needed the fruit for she had only a few months left to live.

Not long after she left the residence, Zhang Ruochen left too.

Qin Yutong had been waiting for him outside the residence. Bai Xuanyu and Bai Xuanshuang had already left along with Granny Bai Su.

“Crown Prince.”

Qin Yutong gave a graceful curtsy to Zhang Ruochen. She was gentle and graceful.

“Don’t address me as the Crown Prince. I do not want others to know my identity yet,” said Zhang Ruochen.

“Noted.”

Qin Yutong smiled gently, “Granny has reminded me not to tell anybody of your identity.”

Zhang Ruochen gave her a sideways look. “The fourth commander of Canglong Army, Liao Huacheng... is he based in the seventh district still?”

“You haven’t given up on the idea of killing him?”

Qin Yutong wanted to stop Zhang Ruochen. He was the crown prince, and no one could afford to take the responsibility if anything happened to him.

She would be the one to be blamed.

Meanwhile, Zhang Ruochen had already left the Phoenix Dance Palace.

Qin Yutong sighed, and then followed him. She couldn’t leave him alone for such a dangerous mission.

Chapter 1029 - Murderous Intent Reappears

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen wasn't a brash or impulsive man. It was just that the Canglong Army and Lingxiao Heavenly Mansion's actions had utterly angered him.

That was why he'd already made up his mind to kill ten generals and take revenge for those who'd died.

No matter what happened, nothing could change this decision.

When Qin Yutong hurried to City 7, Zhang Ruochen was already strolling out of a majestic palace with Liao Huacheng's head.

As the generals of the Canglong Army die one after another, it'll get harder to kill more. I must kill at least one more before news of Liao Huacheng's death spreads.

Even though he'd just killed a Ninth Level Half-Saint, Zhang Ruochen was still very calm. He looked at Qin Yutong with inquisitive eyes.

Qin Yutong could tell that Zhang Ruochen hadn't lost his mind. "I indeed have information on where another general is."

"Who is it?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

"Qingyi Chan, Flying General of Hanshan," Qin Yutong said. "She's the only female general and, like Yan Honglie, in the later stages of the Ninth Level. However...her combat ability is much stronger than his. She's third of the ten generals."

“If she’s in the same level as Yan Honglie but her combat ability is much higher, then she must have some powerful trump card, right?”

Zhang Ruochen wasn’t actually arrogant. Instead, he was extremely cautious.

He could kill Yan Honglie with one strike because he’d used the Eight Changes of Scale. He’d slowed down time and performed the fatal strike unexpectedly. His actual abilities were only a bit higher than Yan Honglie. This wasn’t an absolute advantage.

Now, rumors were spreading throughout the Sacred City that Time and Space Descendant Zhang Ruochen had killed three generals of the Canglong Army. The other generals would definitely be on guard.

It would be difficult for Zhang Ruochen to continue using the powers of time and space for sneak attacks. He’d been able to kill Liao Huachen just then mainly because Liao Huachen’s cultivation wasn’t that high. He was only in the beginning of the Ninth Level.

Zhang Ruochen had to be careful when facing opponents more powerful than Yan Honglie.

“Qingyi Chan has a Thousand-pattern Saint Weapon called the Ice Tripod,” Qin Yutong said. “It has strong defensive abilities and also horrifying attack strength. If she uses the Ice Tripod, she can easily defeat Yan Honglie.”

“She has a Thousand-pattern Saint Weapon? It will be troublesome to kill her.”

Zhang Ruochen grew thoughtful. Suddenly, alarms went off in him. He grabbed Qin Yutong’s wrist and pulled her into the Shooting Star Invisibility Cloak.

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen used the Spatial Move and brought Qin Yutong to a dark corner hundreds of feet away.

“Collect your aura,” Zhang Ruochen whispered in Qin Yutong’s ear. His eyes were serious.

Qin Yutong's soft body pressed tightly against Zhang Ruochen. She could clearly feel the heat coming off of Zhang Ruochen and her heart quickened.

She was curious as to what had happened.

“Dammit.”

A furious voice sounded, shaking the entire City 7 like thunder. The next moment, powerful saintly might swept out of the residence where Liao Huacheng had died.

Countless Monks in City 7 prostrated themselves on the ground in terror.

Qin Yutong felt immense pain in her back. It was like countless sharp needles stabbing into her. It wasn't true pain though. It was a Saint's mind scanning her.

She finally understood why Zhang Ruochen was so nervous. He'd sensed beforehand that a Saint was coming.

Qin Yutong immediately used a spell to suppress her aura to the minimum.

Tap, tap.

At that moment, soft footsteps came from hundreds of feet away, getting closer and closer to them.

Qin Yutong was extremely nervous. Her slender fingers subconsciously clutched Zhang Ruochen's shoulders. If the Saint discovered them, they would be totally dead tonight.

“The remaining aura suddenly cut off,” a deep voice said in the distance. It felt cold and heartless. “The Time and Space Descendant's tricks are indeed strange. Hmph!”

With that, the horrifying saintly might vanished.

The Saint had left.

Zhang Ruochen and Qin Yutong remained hiding inside the Shooting Star Invisibility Cloak. They didn't walk out impulsively. They waited for an hour before cautiously leaving City 7.

Zhang Ruochen didn't release Qin Yutong from the Shooting Star Invisibility Cloak until he was sure they'd reached a safe spot.

Zhang Ruochen looked very calm and sure. He didn't get distracting thoughts just because he'd had close interactions with a beautiful dancer.

Qin Yutong was wearing a veil, so her expression wasn't visible. She just exhaled softly. "Judging by his voice, he's the major general of the Canglong Army."

"You've seen him before," Zhang Ruochen asked.

Qin Yutong nodded softly. "I once danced in the Lingxiao Heavenly Mansion and saw him," she murmured. "I remember his voice. Lord, how did you sense beforehand that he was coming?"

Zhang Ruochen put his arms behind his back and flew to the top of a taller building. Looking down at the lights of the city below, he said, "A Saint's cultivation is very strong, but they're too strong to easily conceal themselves."

"For example, Empress Chi Yao's cultivation is number one in the world. This is why news spread immediately as soon as she'd left the Central Emperor City. She can't leave soundlessly like a regular Monk."

"Saints are the same. However, a Saint can't be compared to the Empress. Their moves can't cause as powerful ripples as her. They can also conceal their auras to a point. Only Monks stronger than them in Spiritual Power can sense their actions."

Qin Yutong was very intelligent and quickly understood what he was saying. "The Canglong Army's major general isn't as strong in Spiritual Power as you. That's why you can sense his every movement."

"I can sense his actions within 100 miles," Zhang Ruochen said. "Past that, my spiritual perception will weaken and I'll only know his general direction. If I didn't have the advantage of Spiritual Power, I wouldn't dare to kill so much in the Sacred City."

Zhang Ruochen's Spiritual Power was at the 48th level. He'd surpassed most Saints. Only Heavenly King Lingxiao could suppress his aura and successfully execute a sneak attack on Zhang Ruochen.

Otherwise, Zhang Ruochen would sense danger if a Saint was 100 miles away and immediately hide or escape.

Of course, with Heavenly King Lingxiao's status, he wouldn't go attack a Half-Saint junior no matter what.

Zhang Ruochen was the most worried about meeting a Spiritual Saint. They were very rare—less than one-tenth of the number of Martial Saints.

Plus, most Spiritual Saints belonged to the Inscription Guild and Confucius Way. They were true masters or Confucius Saints. They cared about their reputations and wouldn't go attack a junior in the Half-Saint Realm.

This was why it wasn't very possible for the Lingxiao Heavenly Mansion to ask a Spiritual Saint for help. Plus, they didn't know who Zhang Ruochen's next target was. Even if they could request a Spiritual Saint to help, it wasn't likely for them to capture Zhang Ruochen.

Hearing Zhang Ruochen's explanation, Qin Yutong finally understood and smiled gracefully. "With your tactics, the top ten generals of the Canglong Army won't be able to live for long."

Zhang Ruochen shook his head. "It's not that simple. The Lingxiao Heavenly Mansion may very well ask someone from the Half-Saint Rank or Outer Rank to fight me. Plus, the three strongest generals of the Canglong Army all have terrible abilities. They aren't easy to deal with."

Compared to a Spiritual Saint, it was obviously easier to request help from someone from the Half-Saint Rank or Outer Rank. The Lingxiao Heavenly Mansion may very possibly choose that. Perhaps they'd already contacted one of those strong cultivators.

"What should we do next?" Qin Yutong asked.

Cold light flashed past Zhang Ruochen's eyes. "I'll go kill Qingyi Chan now, but I need your help."

Then Zhang Ruochen took out the Thousand-pattern Saint Weapon Life-Death Mirror. Handing it to Qin Yutong, he said, "Qingyi Chan will definitely be prepared. The Canglong Army and Lingxiao Heavenly Mansion probably set up some things too. I don't know what dangers there'll be. When needed, activate the Life-Death Mirror and Destruction of the Thousand Patterns to help me."

Qin Yutong took the Life-Death Mirror and only spent an hour to learn how to use it with ease. Then they used physical techniques to disappear into the night.

The Canglong Army's camp was outside the Sacred City. However, each region inside the city had a Provincial Military Governor Residence. Each residence had around 3,000 soldiers that were responsible for the region's order.

In the past few days, all of the Canglong Army's generals returned to the city to capture Han Ying and Yan Honglie's killer.

Qingyi Chan was in the Provincial Military Governor Residence of City 24. Other than here, there were four high level Half-Saints at her side.

The residence was tightly guarded. They'd also activated a defensive formation. Even a top Saint would find it difficult to break in.

Qingyi Chan was a woman in her thirties. She wore cold metal armor and wasn't very ugly. It was obvious that she was very beautiful when she was young. However, she didn't really care about her looks and didn't pay attention to that. Thus, her skin was very rough and a bit sallow.

"I wonder who has such deep hatred for Zhang Ruochen to say that he's the Crown Prince from 800 years ago. Such nonsense."

Qingyi Chan scoffed coldly. She didn't believe the rumors at all."

Beside her, a high level Half-Saint said, “The Ministry of War has already investigated Zhang Ruochen and knows everything about him.”

Just then, footsteps sounded. A soldier ran over and lowered himself onto a knee before Qingyi Chan. “General, the major general sent two messengers with news that General Liao has fallen. He reminds you to be careful. He may come to assassinate you tonight.”

“The major general already sent a message earlier. Why did he send two messengers now...Oh, no.”

Qingyi Chan’s eyes narrowed. Cold light shot out of her and she immediately reached out. With the speed of lightning, she formed two hand prints and struck the kneeling soldier.

Chapter 1030 - Double Chan

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Crackle, crackle.

Struck by the two ice hand prints, the kneeling soldier instantly turned into hard ice. Then the man-shaped ice block cracked in dozens of places.

With a loud crack, the man shattered. His armor and flesh had all turned to ice crystals.

“Not Zhang Ruochen?”

Qingyi Chan’s expression changed again. She felt fine spatial ripples coming around three feet behind her. At the same time, tumultuous murderous intent exploded like a flood breaking the dam and swallowed her.

Whoosh—

Zhang Ruochen stepped out of the space and charged. He immediately put five time prints into his sword technique and used the Eight Scales of Change.

The surrounding time slowed a bit, but the sword quickened.

This sneak attack had to take Qingyi Chan’s life, so Zhang Ruochen used both time and space. If he couldn’t kill Qingyi Chan with one strike, the following battle would be very difficult.

Light flashed. The Abyss Ancient Sword’s tip was already at Qingyi Chan’s head. It was about to pierce the helmet.

Then an odd change occurred.

Qingyi Chan’s head shone with blinding green light. An ancient little tripod flew out of her skull and stopped the Abyss

Ancient Sword.

Boom.

There was the ear splitting sound of metal clashing. Sound waves rippled out, smashing a large portion of the buildings in the residence.

The ancient tripod spun quickly, forming seven green halos that surrounded Qingyi Chan.

“You actually melded the Ice Tripod into your skull.” Zhang Ruochen was shocked.

With a Ninth Level Half-Saint’s strong vitality, they wouldn’t die even if stabbed in the heart. They could take some precious pills to recover from their injury.

The most direct way to kill a Ninth Level Half-Saint was by stabbing their skull and destroying their Sea of Qi.

However, Qingyi Chan had put the Ice Tripod into her skull. This made her head the most heavily guarded spot. Zhang Ruochen had missed the best timing to kill her.

“You dared to come even though you know I have the Ice Tripod?”

Qingyi Chan huffed. Rich Holy Qi surged through her five Saintly Meridians with crashing sounds. Her five Saintly Meridians were like five wide saintly rivers.

Martial Holy Qi rushed to her head and filled the Ice Tripod. The ancient tripod’s green glow grew ten times brighter. It set off extreme power by just swaying. The power rushed at Zhang Ruochen.

Boom.

He was thrown hundreds of feet away.

The power from Qingyi Chan’s strike had surpassed what Zhang Ruochen could take. His organs shook violently. Immense pain registered in him.

In the end, Zhang Ruochen’s power was still far from someone in the later stage of the Ninth Level. However, his attainments in other aspects far surpassed them. With the addition of the

powers of time and space, he could counter someone in the later stage of the Ninth Level.

He would lose tragically if he fought directly.

Qingyi Chan extended a metal hand. Holding the dark green tripod, her eyes filled with scorn. “Zhang Ruochen, you entered the Half-Saint Realm less than a year ago and you already dare to kill Ninth Level Half-Saints. Do you really think you’ll be undefeatable if you control time and space?”

Zhang Ruochen circulated his Holy Qi and the pain in his organs disappeared. He smiled. “I entered the Half-Saint Realm less than half a year ago, but I haven’t only cultivated for a year.”

“I’ve been in the Half-Saint Realm for a century. My accumulation from the years is nothing you can imagine.”

Qingyi Chan was still very calm. She had an extraordinary temperament.

Zhang Ruochen indeed felt pressure from Qingyi Chan. He hadn’t felt this when he faced Liao Huacheng, Yan Honglie, and Han Ying. This made him even more careful.

Four high level Half-Saints flew in from four directions of the residence. Each had a battle flag and formed a battle formation.

Thousands upon thousands of ghostly images emerged in the formation. Some had unruly hair, some rode beasts, some gripped spears... The entire Provincial Military Governor Residence became ghostly and eerie.

The ghostly images overlapped on the four high level Half-Saints. Like Ghost Kings from the netherworld, the four Half-Saints emanated auras stronger than a Ninth Level Half-Saint.

Qingyi Chan smiled coldly. “I guessed that you would come, so I asked the princess of the Ghost Cultivation Race earlier to prepare a Grade Four Ghost King Formation for you.”

“Princess of the Ghost Cultivation Race?” Zhang Ruochen was surprised.

Graceful pipa music sounded within the residence. Zhang Ruochen looked in the direction of the music. He saw a girl in an inky black dress sitting in a navy pavilion.

The curvaceous frame was hidden in a ghostly cloud. Her slender and long fingers strummed the instrument strings lightly, playing a sad song.

In addition, there was one white and one black Wuchang King standing behind her. The two Wuchang Kings were close to ten feet tall. Metal chains wrapped around their ghostly shoulders and waists. They looked extremely tall and big while giving off an eerie feeling.

Zhang Ruochen remembered that Feng Yinchan of the Ghost Cultivation Race and Yin Xuanji of the Necromancer Race should be trapped in the netherworld.

The Thousand-bone Empress' stone tablet now blocked the passage between the netherworld and Kunlun's Field. How did they escape?

The girl in the fog stopped playing the pipa. "After our farewell in the netherworld, I really missed you," she said gracefully. "Zhang Ruochen, long time no see."

"You're Feng Yinchan?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

The girl with the pipa giggled. Her voice was resonant. "You didn't expect this right?"

"It's indeed unexpected," Zhang Ruochen said.

Qingyi Chan held the Ice Tripod with one hand. The other behind her back, she announced, "I planned everything and just waited for you to fall in before collecting the net."

"I already guessed that killing you wouldn't be easy." Still composed, Zhang Ruochen added, "Of course, it won't be easy to capture me either."

Qingyi Chan's eyes were cold. "I can't capture you with the current formations in the residence?"

Zhang Ruochen shook his head. "Still a bit off," he said with a strong voice.

In addition to the Grade Four Ghost King Formation, the residence also contained Qingyi Chan and strong cultivators of the Ghost Cultivation Race. It was definitely a pit of snakes. Even someone from the Half-Saint Rank or Outer Rank would find it hard to leave freely.

Was Zhang Ruochen sure he could escape?

Qingyi Chan didn't want to keep waiting lest something happened. "Attack," she ordered immediately.

The four Half-Saints waved their black battle flags and led millions of ghostly souls to attack Zhang Ruochen. With the addition of the ghostly souls, they'd become abnormally strong.

A red-haired elder waved his battle flag, creating a gust of icy wind and setting off thousands of ghostly images.

Looking over from Zhang Ruochen's position, one would feel like a stampede of soldiers and horses was flooding over. Like thousands of arrows shot at once, it was about to swallow him.

Whoosh.

Powerful Masculine Qi surged out of Zhang Ruochen. His body turned red and even had the sheen of firelight.

Having cultivated the Ninth Palm of the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm, the Masculine Qi within Zhang Ruochen was 1,000 times stronger than the average man.

Ghosts and dead souls feared Masculine Qi and the Great Spirit the most.

"Thousand-hand Dragon and Elephant." Zhang Ruochen hit his hands forward at once to execute the eighth palm. He released 35 times the combat power.

Strong Masculine Qi was sent forward with the palm strength.

Kaboom.

In an instant, hundreds of ghostly souls dissipated into fog. The red-haired elder was also sent flying.

The elder was shocked. He immediately retreated. Blood dripped from his hands that were holding the battle flag.

Zhang Ruochen was shocked too. After all, his palm print had been in the Saintly level but could only send the elder flying. It couldn't hurt him. How could the four Half-Saints become this strong with the help of the ghostly souls?

“Attack together. Finish quickly.”

Qingyi Chan attacked with the Ice Tripod. The delicate tripod enlarged and became huge. Finally, it was the size of a pavilion and emanated with terrifying strength.

The Icy Qi radiating from it turned the entire residence into a world of ice and snow.

In the distant pavilion, Feng Yinchan, in her black dress, began playing the pipa again. Her fingers flew and murderous intent peaked through her music. It felt like a warning of what was to come.

“Zhang Ruochen, I'll gift you two Wuchang Kings! Remember to return them when you go to Hell!” Feng Yinchan's giggles rang out like silver chimes.

She jumped and her mesmerizing figure landed on the top of the pavilion. Below her, the white and black Wuchang Kings flew out. They attacked Zhang Ruochen from two opposite directions.

The two Wuchang Kings had swallowed hundreds of regular Wuchangs. After continuously evolving, their cultivations were close to Ghost Kings. They only needed to go through a trial before changing.

“With so many ghostly spirits here, I think I need to invite two monks to send them off.”

Zhang Ruochen had communicated with Sikong One and Two in the scroll world beforehand. They were willing to come and send the dead souls back to the netherworld.

Asking them to come kill people would result in bad karma and affect their cultivations. However, asking them to send dead souls off was very good for their cultivations. It would challenge their Buddhist hearts too.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen was a bit worried if the two monks had read the scriptures for sending souls off before. Sikong One especially didn't look like a monk who read scriptures.

Chapter 1031 - The Line between Life and Death

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen released Sikong One and Two from the Universe Spiritual Map.

The two monks stood on either side of Zhang Ruochen. They put their hands together in prayer and looked very solemn. Brilliant Buddhist light radiated from them.

In an instant, expansive Buddhist chants sounded throughout the Provincial Military Governor Residence. The ghost souls in the Grade Four Ghost King Formation all retreated in fear.

Sikong One's deep timbre sounded, "The levels of these dead souls are too low. One scroll of Paradise Scripture will send you off."

Sikong Two shook his head. "The Paradise Scripture can only be used to redeem the lost souls of mortals. It isn't of much use to the shadow soldiers and ghost generals that have been sacrificed before."

Sikong One laughed as if he had everything under control. "Then a scroll of the Amitayus Scripture will be enough to send them ashes to ashes, dust to dust. Amitabha!"

"Amitayus Scripture has great accomplishments and power," Sikong Two said. "Master said it's used for Ghost Kings."

...

Sikong One and Sikong Two seemed very holy, like two esteemed monks. Even Feng Yinchuan started looking worried. The Thousand Buddha Way indeed had some ancient

scriptures that could redeem the souls of the shadow soldiers of the Ancient Ghost Cultivation Race.

Qingyi Chan was also a bit moved, never having expected that Zhang Ruochen was able to summon two high monks of the Buddhist Way.

If the ghost soldiers that Feng Yinchuan had brought over were all redeemed, their advantage would be flipped.

“Can’t you hurry up and chant to send them off?” Zhang Ruochen urged.

“I don’t know how,” Sikong One answered honestly.

Zhang Ruochen froze and then his expression darkened. He suddenly had the urge to yell at someone.

If you don’t know how to, why did you talk so arrogantly? So confidently?

Feng Yinchuan and Qingyi Chan both let out relieved breaths. They no longer had any worries and started attacking on all sides.

“My cultivation is very high. Even if I can’t recite the chant, I can still destroy the ghosts and demons with my fists.”

Sikong One’s eyes bulged out. He clenched his fists and the next moment, a long white tiger apparition appeared behind him. He charged toward one black and one white Wuchang.

Roar!

Sikong One punched with both fists, producing the sound of a tiger roaring in the forest. He sent the two Wuchangs hundreds of feet back.

Feng Yinchuan was shocked. How could two Wuchangs together not be able to fend off a monk?

“Could he be a strong cultivator from the Half-Saint Rank or Outer Rank?”

Feng Yinchuan had no time to think. Sikong One had already attacked, sending two more Wuchangs flying. They could only keep retreating.

Sikong Two sat in the center of the Grade Four Ghost King Formation. He took out a scroll and started chanting the scripture. Golden runes flew out of his mouth and into all directions.

The Buddhist runes fell on the shadow soldiers, purifying their evil Qi immediately. Then the shadow soldiers transformed into specks of light and buried into the dirt.

Sikong One couldn't read the chants, but Sikong Two could. In fact, he had very high attainments and was even more powerful than some Saint Buddhas. He lived up to his title as the Emperor Buddha's grand-disciple.

At the moment, Sikong Two was reading the Ksitigarbha. It could purify everything below the Ghost King level.

Sikong Two restrained the Grade Four Ghost King Formation, instantly relieving the stress on Zhang Ruochen. He looked over at Feng Yinchuan. "It's time for our battle."

"I can crush you with only my power." Huffing coldly, Feng Yinchuan sent the Ice Soul Tripod crashing down on Zhang Ruochen.

The Ice Soul Tripod was the size of a pavilion. It shone with blinding blue light and locked down on Zhang Ruochen. He couldn't escape at all.

"Break!"

Zhang Ruochen created a spatial crack, dozens of meters long, to face the Ice Soul Tripod.

Whoosh!

The Ice Soul Tripod shook violently and its size kept changing. It kept swerving too and was unpredictable. It actually escaped the spatial crack and fell upon Zhang Ruochen's head.

With no time to produce a second spatial crack, Zhang Ruochen could only take out the Abyss Ancient Sword. Performing the Nine-Life Sword Technique, he welcomed the tripod.

Facing it directly, Zhang Ruochen was slightly hurt and retreated. There were various deep footprints on the ground.

I can't use the advantages of the Sword Way, time or space from this long distance. I'm not her match at all. I can only have the upper hand and restrain her if I close in on her.

Thinking it through, Zhang Ruochen immediately rushed out. Whoosh, whoosh.

Performing the Spatial Move three times in a row, Zhang Ruochen changed his direction three times, leaving behind four shadows. He appeared within 30 feet of Qingyi Chan.

Qingyi Chan felt something wrong. She immediately activated her Holy Qi to retract the Ice Soul Tripod and block Zhang Ruochen's attack.

"Thunder and Lightning." Zhang Ruochen performed a move from the True-Thunder Fire Sword Technique. Then hundreds of Sword Qi shot out of the Abyss Ancient Sword. The dense Sword Qi enveloped Qingyi Chan.

The True-Thunder Fire Sword Technique was a saint level sword technique from the Taotian Sword line. It could activate the thunder and true fire of the world. Its changes were unpredictable and its might boundless.

As Zhang Ruochen stabbed forward, dozens of thick lightning bolts appeared within hundreds of feet in radius. They attacked Qingyi Chan all at once.

Crack!

Even with Qingyi Chan's high cultivation, the lightning still broke through her defenses. Her entire body was charred black and plumes of smoke rose up from her.

At this critical moment, the Ice Soul Tripod flew back.

Lifting up the Ice Soul Tripod, Qingyi Chan finally stopped the Abyss Ancient Sword's tip. Stabilizing herself, she roared, "Zhang Ruochen, with the Ice Soul Tripod, I can both attack and defend myself! Can you defeat me?"

"Even Thousand-pattern Saint Weapons vary in strength."

Zhang Ruochen attacked again. He kept performing the True-Thunder Fire Sword Technique to strike the Ice Soul Tripod.

Not only did lightning appear in this space, fire also burst from the ground. Qingyi Chan was forced to defend passively. Even with the Ice Soul Tripod, she was still injured. Her armor cracked and blood seeped out of her skin.

Zhang Ruochen's Holy Qi seemed to be boundless. He kept attacking with saint spells and didn't show any sign of his Holy Qi running dry.

After dozens of strikes, he finally caught the chance to use the Eight Scales of Change. His sword passed through the Ice Soul Tripod and cut down at Qingyi Chan's neck.

Crunch.

Qingyi Chan's throat was slit. The Abyss Ancient Sword left a long bloody line on her neck.

An average martial artist would definitely be dead with that kind of injury. However, instead of dying, Qingyi Chan just retreated and immediately sealed the veins in her neck.

Sikong Two had already destroyed the Grade Four Ghost King Formation. He'd heavily injured the four high-level Half-Saints, sending them flying to the ground.

Feng Yinchuan had lost to Sikong One too. She'd escaped from the Provincial Military Governor Residence with two Wuchangs.

Qingyi Chan's eyes filled with cold anger. "Zhang Ruochen," she said hoarsely. "I've miscalculated this time. Next time, I will definitely kill you and not give you any choice."

Blood spurted out of her neck again as she spoke.

Whoosh—

Blue wings grew out of Qingyi Chan's back. She escaped out of the Provincial Military Governor Residence in a streak of blue.

"Where are you going?" a feminine roar sounded from the ground.

One could vaguely see a beautiful figure shining an ancient mirror in the air. A pillar of blood-red light rushed out, attacking the escaping Qingyi Chan.

The light carried the Destruction of the Thousand-patterns, turning the sky behind Qingyi Chan blood red.

Qingyi Chan was forced to pour all her Holy Qi into the Ice Soul Tripod again. She also activated the Destruction of the Thousand-patterns to block the Life-Death Mirror.

“Kill.”

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes glinted coldly. He pointed forward and the Abyss Ancient Sword flew out. As a streak of black, it passed through Qingyi Chan’s various defenses. With a poof, it pierced her body.

She let out a pained cry and plummeted from the sky.

Zhang Ruochen retracted the Abyss Ancient Sword and rushed toward Qingyi Chan. He wanted to kill her while she was heavily injured.

“Junior, how dare you!”

Humongous saintly might flooded over from the horizon. It covered the sky in dark clouds and lifted icy wind.

The general of the Canglong Army hadn’t arrived yet, but a long spear already stabbed across the sky.

Like a shooting star cutting across the sky, the spear let out booms as it struck toward Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen was very decisive. He sliced off Qingyi Chan’s head, took the Ice Soul Tripod, and then used the Spatial Move to escape.

The spear stabbed through Zhang Ruochen’s afterimage and nailed onto the ground with an ear-splitting boom. In an instant, the ground cracked with the spear as the center and caved in. The entire City 24 shook.

Due to the powerful crash, thousands of pillars rushed out from inside the city. Hundreds of defense formations emerged at once.

When the dust settled, they discovered that the Provincial Military Governor Residence had become a scorched black ditch. There was a long spear stabbed into the bottom of the ditch. Flames spewed out of it.

When the general of the Canglong Army rushed over, Zhang Ruochen had already put Sikong One and Two back into the Universe Spiritual Map and covered Qin Yutong with the Shooting Star Invisibility Cloak. He'd hurried away and vanished.

Only the general's furious roar remained under the night sky.

Zhang Ruochen didn't stop until he reached an empty region. Half-kneeling onto the ground, he coughed out some blood.

"Your Majesty."

Qin Yutong looked worried as she helped Zhang Ruochen up. Her hands came away damp. They were quickly dyed red with blood.

There was a half-foot-long gash on Zhang Ruochen's chest. It was deep enough to see the bone and looked terrifying.

The Canglong Army's general's spear was a hair's breadth away from stabbing through his chest.

Zhang Ruochen sat cross-legged on the ground and activated his Holy Qi to dissolve the remaining power of the spear. His wound stopped bleeding.

Letting out a long breath, he glanced at Qin Yutong. "I need to do something else. You return to the Phoenix Dance Palace."

Qin Yutong furrowed her delicate brow. "But you're badly hurt. You must rest immediately to heal."

"Don't worry. I won't do anything I'm not confident in before I recover completely. I'll return as soon as I finish that task."

Zhang Ruochen stood up straight. He gave off a calm, confident, and elegant feeling.

Then he covered himself in the Shooting Star Invisibility Cloak and used a physical technique to rush out, disappearing under the night sky.

Chapter 1032 - Provocation

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen wanted to chase after Feng Yinchuan. He didn't want her to escape and become a lasting threat.

Feng Yinchuan controlled two Wuchangs. Her combat ability was comparable to some beings on the Half-Saint Outer Rank. Who knew if she had other tricks too?

During the golden era of the Ghost Cultivation Race and Necromancer Race, they were comparable to the Immortal Vampires. As the princess of the Ghost Cultivation Race, she must have many powerful trump cards.

Feng Yinchuan's cultivation wasn't very strong now. As long as Sikong One and Two could stop the two Wuchangs, Zhang Ruochen was confident he could kill Feng Yinchuan even when wounded.

Feng Yinchuan escaped out of the Provincial Military Governor Residence with two injured Wuchangs. She flew hurriedly toward the central region of the Sacred City.

When Zhang Ruochen caught up to her, she'd already escaped into the Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion. She'd entered through the towering and majestic palace gates.

Since Qing Yichuan could ask her to help defeat Zhang Ruochen, then the Ghost Cultivation Race and Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion must have some strong partnership.

I'm still late. If I let her escape, there will definitely be danger in the future.

Zhang Ruochen sighed, but he stopped. He didn't continue pursuing.

The Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion wasn't only a residence. It was a huge and ancient palace city. The ancient aura gave off a grandiose feeling.

The vast square before the palace was completely made out of jade. The towering city walls were like rows of mountain ridges. Electricity rippled across the walls with a magnificent feeling.

Standing on the ground and looking up at the city walls, one could see various opulent red palaces. Some were built along the mountain and reached into the clouds. The lights that came from them were like a starry sky. It felt mysterious and wispy.

The Lingxiao Heavenly Mansion was guarded heavily. Every now and then, there would be a team of guards riding tigers or lions. Carrying long spears, they would survey the city walls.

From afar, Zhang Ruochen gazed at the nameplate hanging above the palace gate. He narrowed his eyes at the words "Lingxiao Mansion," finding it painful to look at them.

Eight hundred years ago, the nameplate should have said "Emperor Ming Palace."

This was the royal palace of the Sacred Central Empire.

Zhang Ruochen took out a sword and had it float in the air. Then he took out Liao Huacheng's and Qing Yichan's heads. With a flash, the sword streaked out and nailed into the nameplate with the two bloody heads.

Boom.

The powerful Sword Qi shattered the purple nameplate with a strong collision force. It nailed into the wall with the two heads.

At that moment, dense runes emerged from the center of the palace. It formed a defense formation that covered the entire Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion.

"Who dares to attack the Heavenly King Mansion?" an angry roar thundered, shaking the Spiritual Qi in the air violently.

Who dared to attack the Heavenly King Mansion? Not even a Saint had such guts.

The Monks in nearby regions were all shocked and peered at the Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion.

“Oh my, someone shattered the nameplate with a sword. Is he declaring war with the imperial court?”

“Who is so wild? Is he captured?”

...

Loud wind sounded inside the mansion and various figures flew out.

The surveillance guards all gathered at the outer gate with their weapons out. They looked very angry and powerful.

“Look...It’s General Liao and General Qingyi’s heads... Someone killed them...” a terrified voice said.

Two generals had been killed and the palace’s nameplate was destroyed. This was undeniably a slap to the Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion’s face. They were humiliated.

A Saint arrived and personally ordered, “Seal the entire city and do not let him escape. For those that provoke the Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion, death is the only end.”

By the time the city was sealed, Zhang Ruochen had already escaped back to the Phoenix Dance Palace.

In a grand pavilion of the Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion, a group of domineering leaders of the Sacred City gathered around to discuss Zhang Ruochen.

This included five generals of the Canglong Army, three of the four lords, Princess Feng Yinchuan of the Ghost Cultivation Race, and Yin Xuanji of the Necromancer Race.

In addition, the top saint of the Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion and main general of the Canglong Army had also arrived with their true bodies. They sat at the front.

With such a scene, even other Saints would want to escape.

Who would’ve thought that they were only discussing how to capture or kill a Fifth Level Half-Saint junior?

Feng Yinchuan was very slender. She looked like a 14 or 15-year-old. In reality, this wasn't her physical body. Her body was left in the netherworld. She couldn't bring it out.

For her and Yin Xuanji, only their saint souls could escape from the netherworld. Her body now was chosen from the thousand-year corpses collected by the Necromancer Race. It was 70% compatible with her saint soul.

The owner of this body had been an immortal saint from ten thousand years ago. Even after living for almost a thousand years, she still looked like a teen girl. Her features hadn't changed even after death and were maintained for thousands of years.

After melding with a saint body, Feng Yinchuan's cultivation had indeed improved vastly. However, if the body wasn't 100% compatible with the saint soul, there were also big disadvantages. As her cultivation deepened, the disadvantages would become more obvious.

"Zhang Ruochen really did kill Qingyi Chan. I'm sure of this." Feng Yinchuan's voice was cold. "Zhang Ruochen has two powerful Buddhist monks with him. Judging from their physical features and martial techniques, I think they are Sikong One and Two from the Half-Saint Outer Rank."

Chi Yutang sat across from her and scoffed coldly. "No wonder Zhang Ruochen could kill so many generals after entering the Half-Saint Realm recently. He has such powerful helpers."

Feng Yinchuan glanced at Chi Yutang and smirked. She didn't bother reminding him. Zhang Ruochen indeed had two helpers from the Outer Rank, but he himself was powerful too.

Anyone who underestimated him had died tragically.

"Zhang Ruochen had once interacted with Sikong One, Sikong Two, and the Deity of the Blood God Sect at the headquarters of the Black Market in Tiantai State," the main general of the Canglong Army said.

"Their appearance isn't that shocking," he continued. "Even more troublesome is that Zhang Ruochen must have some

secret treasure that can completely cover his aura. I can't find him with my saintly senses at all. Plus, his Spiritual Power is very strong. He can sense a Saint's aura beforehand. Whenever I arrive, he's already escaped. He's despicable."

With that, the main general looked at his five generals and ordered, "Yan Tong, Bai Xinglou, you five don't leave the Lingxiao Heavenly Mansion these days, lest Zhang Ruochen assassinate you."

Yan Tong and Bai Xinglou were unconvinced. They rubbed their fists, eager to try and fight against Zhang Ruochen. Their cultivations were above Qingyi Chan and they were the strongest of the ten generals. However, they were forced to hide inside Lingxiao Heavenly Mansion by a junior in the Half-Saint Realm. They were naturally angry.

However, they couldn't go against their main general.

"I've received a message," the powerful Saint from the Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion said. "Chi Wansui will hurry back in two days. By then, we can easily set up a trap and kill Zhang Ruochen and his helpers."

"Second Brother is finally coming back! Haha!" Chi Yutang laughed. "This is great. I'd like to see how Zhang Ruochen will continue being so wild. No matter who, anyone offends the Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion will die."

What had happened tonight shook the Sacred City again.

"Two more generals had died. One of them is the strong Qingyi Chan. Five generals of the Canglong Army have died already."

"It's been proved that the killer is indeed Zhang Ruochen, the Time and Space Descendant. The princess of the Ghost Cultivation Race personally saw him use the powers of time and space."

"Zhang Ruochen's performance is so aggressive. He killed two generals in a row and personally went to the palace gate of the Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion. He shattered the nameplate and nailed the two generals' heads onto the wall."

After a night of buildup, news of Zhang Ruochen killing Liao Huacheng and Qingyi Chan spread throughout the city the next morning. The young Monks were all excited. They wished they were Zhang Ruochen and could also do such shocking things.

As for why Zhang Ruochen killed the five generals, no young person cared to find out. They just thirsted for power and becoming famous in a night.

More and more young Monks worshipped Zhang Ruochen in the Saint City. His fame was about to reach the level of Cai Jinglun, the new top of the rank, and Chi Wansui.

Of course, some also looked down on him.

“I heard that Chi Wansui will hurry back soon. Zhang Ruochen’s good days won’t last long. The Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion will definitely fight back.”

“They invited a princess of the Ghost Cultivation Race and a talent from the Necromancer Race just to take care of Zhang Ruochen.”

Chu Siyuan, who’d been visiting the Cai Family, had a terrible headache these days.

He’d never expected that Zhang Ruochen would make such a big deal and upend the Sacred City. If Zhang Ruochen continued, he would definitely cause true trouble.

Chu Siyuan used his Spiritual Power to try and find where Zhang Ruochen was hiding and stop his bloodshed. At the same time, he worried the Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion would use some extreme measures against Zhang Ruochen.

However, he’d failed.

A powerful Spiritual Power figure had covered Zhang Ruochen’s aura. Even Chu Siyuan couldn’t find him.

In my entire life, my Spiritual Power has never been weaker than anyone else. Who can hide from me?

Chu Siyuan was very stubborn. In anger, he pounded his chest with his fists. With a cough, he spat out blood.

He drew with his blood and used the power of the Blood Way to calculate again.

How could the Painter Sect's leader admit defeat?

Trying his hardest, Chu Siyuan finally found a general area. However, he couldn't lock onto Zhang Ruochen's specific location. Finding him would be like finding a pin in a haystack.

Chu Siyuan naturally didn't know that Zhang Ruochen had the Buddhist beads from Master Yintuoluo that could cover his aura.

It wouldn't be easy to find him.

Chapter 1033 - Long Time No See

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The Phoenix Dance Palace was a massive force, comparable to some middle age clans. It would be impossible for another force to control it.

However, 800 years ago, the royal Zhang Family gradually seeped into the Phoenix Dance Palace and became deeply rooted.

After that, Lord Twelve used many tricks to take control of a majority of the palace without anyone realizing. As for the Phoenix Dance Palace's force in the Sacred City, it was completely controlled by Lord Twelve.

Thus, Zhang Ruochen was absolutely safe in it.

After returning to the Phoenix Dance Palace, Zhang Ruochen entered the scroll world and started to treat himself. Even without the Withered Pill, Zhang Ruochen still recovered very quickly. He soon reached his peak state again.

At the same time, his cultivation had improved somewhat.

This time, he didn't leave immediately. He'd learned a lot from the battle with Qingyi Chan and also discovered his flaws.

His biggest weakness was naturally his cultivation plane.

The difference between a Fifth Level Half-Saint and a Ninth Level Half-Saint was like someone on the ground and someone in heaven. Other than abnormalities like Zhang Ruochen, even the nine Heirs couldn't cross that distance.

Ninth Level Half-Saints also had huge differences between one other.

Guo Lu, in the beginning stage, was on a different level from Yan Honglie and Qingyi Chan who were in the later stages of the Ninth Level.

Without using the powers of time and space, Zhang Ruochen would be in a very passive situation if he fought against a Monk in the later stage of the Ninth Level.

My internal injuries have mostly healed. It's time to try for the seventh aperture of the Seven-Apertures Blood Palm.

Once I successfully cultivate it, I'll have another trump card. I won't be forced to reveal that I'm the Time and Space Descendant whenever I fight against a strong enemy.

Right now, Zhang Ruochen still wasn't advanced in time and space. He was also wanted by the imperial court. If he revealed that he was the Time and Space Descendant, it was obviously a bad thing.

It was best if he didn't have to use the powers of time and space. If he used them, it must be for a fatal shot.

Each palm has seven apertures. I've already opened the sixth aperture in both hands. Only the aperture in the palm is left.

The seventh aperture was the biggest one in the palm. Once it was opened, the two palms would each form a Qi circulation. Any casual palm would unleash 30 times the original combat ability.

Zhang Ruochen stood below the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree and started cultivating the palm technique according to the chant in the Seven-Apertures Blood Palm scripture.

Boom, boom.

With each palm he struck out, his blood would flow like a river of stars and rush to his palm. A cloud of Blood Qi dozens of meters wide would appear before his palm.

For an entire month, Zhang Ruochen was immersed in practicing the palm technique. He seemed drunk on it and entered a mysterious state.

With the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree as the heart, dozens of miles in radius were covered in Blood Qi. One could only hear palm prints sounding continuously.

Opening the seventh aperture was not only difficult but also dangerous. Repeatedly practicing the palm technique and training his mindset could lower the danger.

At one point, Zhang Ruochen's blood turned boiling hot and bubbled violently. It started flooding toward the heart of his palm.

The heart of his palm was the seventh aperture, the Labor Aperture.

Boom!

His hands seemed to transform into two bronze bells. They produced a deafening noise from the collision.

In reality, the Labor Aperture was even sturdier than a bell. Trying to open it was as difficult as trying to pierce metal with water.

The Blood Qi crashed against the Labor Aperture more than 800 times to no avail. Instead, Zhang Ruochen's arms cracked open.

A drop of blood dripped from the crack to his fingertip.

Zhang Ruochen had cultivated the Five Elements Chaotic Body and had refined the souls of a saint dragon and elephant into his arms. He still couldn't bear the collision.

Any other human Monk would have disabled his arms from a single hit like that.

After more than 3,600 hits, Zhang Ruochen finally stopped. His first attempt at opening the seventh aperture had failed.

He couldn't help it. His arms were now a bloody mess. If he continued trying, it would be very dangerous.

When his arms healed, he began to reflect on what had happened.

Next, he immediately started his second attempt. He spent nine whole days and tried more than 4,200 times.

He failed once again.

Zhang Ruochen didn't give up, because he could feel that the Labor Aperture had started loosening. He could finally see hope for success.

He continued for his third attempt.

This time, he activated his Blood Qi and hit the Labor Aperture more than 4,900 times. The aperture grew looser and looser. It was about to open.

Kaboom!

After close to 5,000 hits, Zhang Ruochen's palms suddenly turned scalding hot. With that, his Holy Qi actually connected to the Spiritual Qi in the air.

“Success!”

Zhang Ruochen was overjoyed. He opened his hands and seven Blood Qi vortexes appeared immediately on his palms. The vortexes grew bigger and bigger. They seemed to be about to absorb the entire world.

At the same time, the seven apertures also formed their own Qi circulations. A powerful force flowed through the seven apertures.

How powerful would his palm be if he attacked?

According to the scripture, if I complete the seventh aperture, I can unleash 64 times the combat ability.

As of now, Zhang Ruochen had only opened the seventh aperture. He hadn't completed it yet.

According to his estimations, if he used all his might, he could unleash 40 times the power. That would far surpass the average saint spell.

Of course, he already had the foundation to complete the Seven-Apertures Blood Palm. Unleashing 64 times the power was only a matter of time.

Next, I will refine divine blood and saintify the seventh aperture to strengthen my palm power.

Zhang Ruochen took out a drop of divine blood. Holding it in his hands, he began to absorb the divine power and Blood Qi within it. Next, he activated that powerful saintly strength and directed it at his seventh aperture.

After refining 40 drops of divine blood, he'd raised the seventh apertures of both palms to the Saint Realm.

Now, Zhang Ruochen's hands both had seven glittering spots. It was like he was holding seven stars in each hand, and it gave off a very mysterious feeling.

Whoosh—

Zhang Ruochen raised his right hand. The saintified seventh apertures instantly grew dazzlingly bright. The air within hundreds of miles shook violently.

My hands have become the hands of a Saint. Even without using the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm or Seven-Apertures Blood Palm, I can still unleash a saint spell's power with my hands.

There were 144 apertures in total in a human's body. After saintifying all of them, one's physical body would become a Saint.

All 14 apertures in Zhang Ruochen's hands had reached the Saint Realm. He'd taken a great step on the way to transforming his body into a Saint.

Next were the 22 apertures on his arms, the 36 on his legs and feet, 36 on his core and organs, and 36 in his head.

Obviously, the apertures in one's limbs were easier to cultivate while the ones in the head were the hardest. Thus, Zhang Ruochen decided to first refine his arms, feet, legs, and then his core and organs, and finally his head.

After refining the 40 drops of divine blood, my cultivation has reached the later stage of the Fifth Level of the Half-Saint Realm.

With my current cultivation and palm power, I won't lose even if I go against Qingyi Chan with only my palm technique.

With the help of the powers of time and space, it won't be hard to kill her.

Since he'd improved greatly, Zhang Ruochen stopped cultivating in isolation. He walked out of the scroll world.

...

Snowflakes the size of goose feathers fluttered down in the Sacred City. The red buildings were covered in a layer of white.

The Sacred City was abnormally lively today. Every household was covered in decorations and lanterns. Everyone had a joyous smile on their face, even the cultivators.

Tonight was New Year's Eve. They would welcome the New Year soon.

Cultivators were humans too. Even if they were training elsewhere, they would try to go home and eat the New Year's Eve dinner with their families. They would also give advice to the juniors of their families and gift weapons and pills.

New Year's Eve was a happy moment for everyone. They all wished to be reunited with their families.

Zhang Ruochen put on a long silver robe and walked down the snow-covered street by himself. He left behind a lonely track of footprints.

It was a familiar city, but there were no familiar people.

Granny Bai Su had told him that it was the Sacred Central Crypt that spread the rumor. It was because of them that the entire city knew he was the Crown Prince of the Sacred Central Empire.

From now on, Zhang Ruochen's path would be even more difficult.

On New Year's Eve when he was 16 years old, the entire Sacred City had been filled with lights. It was so lively and filled with so much noise.

Today, it was still lively and filled with noise, but Zhang Ruochen couldn't feel any warmth. He only felt endlessly

lonely and lost.

Before leaving the Phoenix Dance Palace, Granny Bai Su and Qin Yutong had specially told him that they'd prepared dinner. They'd hoped that he would go back earlier and eat with everyone.

However, Zhang Ruochen didn't feel like it at all. He just wanted to walk and be alone.

“Zhang Ruochen!”

A familiar female voice came from ahead.

Zhang Ruochen stopped and looked up to the front of the street. His eyes brightened as he said, “You... How did you find me?”

Huang Yanchen with her sapphire-blue hair, like a beautiful goddess, stood a few hundred feet away and was looking at Zhang Ruochen. She was tall and had snow-white skin. Her cold aura was like an ice mountain, becoming one with the fluttering snowflakes.

“I knew you were in the Sacred City, so I especially came out tonight to find you. Zhang Ruochen, long time no see.” Huang Yanchen's voice was very cold, but she still smiled faintly.

“Long time no see indeed.” Zhang Ruochen also smiled.

To be able to see Huang Yanchen on this special day, a bit of warmth found its way back into Zhang Ruochen's heart.

He didn't think about how Huang Yanchen could find him. Perhaps it was fate.

People with no fate wouldn't find each other, no matter what.

People with fate could be together forever no matter how unsuitable they were.

Chapter 1034 - Seeing the Lights in all the Homes

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

There was a servant around 16 or 17 years old beside Huang Yanchen. She wore a pale yellow dress and her little face was extraordinarily delicate.

She studied Zhang Ruochen with a pair of curious eyes.

Zhang Ruochen also noticed the servant beside Huang Yanchen. She was only around five feet tall. She had a pair of pointed ears, silver hair, a thin waist, and spirited eyes. Her skin looked translucent, like shimmering jade.

She was completely different from other servants. She had a special aura that gave off an extraordinary feeling.

“Your servant seems to have very high cultivation.”

Zhang Ruochen studied her carefully with a faint smile.

Clad in the pale yellow dress, the servant looked shy and embarrassed. She hid behind Huang Yanchen instinctively.

“She’s a servant that the Chen Family gave me,” Huang Yanchen said. “Her name is Qing Mo. Her physique is very special and has high potential too. Her only flaw is that she hasn’t interacted with the outer world much and lacks experience.”

Huang Yanchen was now an Heir and the Empress’ disciple. The Chen Family in the Eastern Region obviously treated her differently.

The servant they gifted her wasn’t an ordinary Monk either.

“Qing Mo greets Lord Zhang.” The servant walked out and bowed to Zhang Ruochen.

Huang Yanchen and Zhang Ruochen walked side by side. The woman was beautiful while the man was handsome. They stepped on the snow and walked down the street, attracting many shocked gazes.

A beat later, Huang Yanchen finally spoke. “I heard much news about you after coming to the Sacred City. They said that you killed five generals of the Canglong Army. There are also rumors that you’re the Crown Prince of the Sacred Central Empire from 800 years ago.”

“Do you want an explanation?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

There were deep genuine emotions in Huang Yanchen’s blue eyes. “I only care about your safety. I don’t wish for anything to happen to you.”

“I am indeed the Crown Prince,” Zhang Ruochen said honestly. “I was the last crown prince of the Sacred Central Empire 800 years ago.”

Not only were Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen married in name, they’d also done it already. He felt like he shouldn’t keep some things a secret.

“You don’t seem shocked.”

Zhang Ruochen glanced at Huang Yanchen. Her expression was calm and devoid of any surprise.

“I’d gone specifically to investigate the Crown Prince and had some guesses long ago,” Huang Yanchen said. “I didn’t ask before because I knew that you’d tell me at the right time.”

After cultivating for 15 years in the Tianlun Mark, her mindset has improved greatly. Zhang Ruochen could sense this fact clearly.

Smiling, Zhang Ruochen asked, “Since you know my identity now, do you plan on being on my side or Empress Chi Yao’s side?”

When he said this, he was also telling Huang Yanchen clearly that he and Empress Chi Yao were on two opposite sides.

One was a criminal wanted by the imperial court. One was a disciple of the Empress. However, they just had to be a couple. Even Zhang Ruochen didn't know how they could continue down this path.

Huang Yanchen stopped walking and stared at Zhang Ruochen. "I'll forever be on your side. This won't change no matter what happens."

She'd clearly made a great decision and would sacrifice a lot for this. From now on, she would have to withstand pressures from all sides with Zhang Ruochen. The entire world would be her enemy.

Huang Yanchen's expression turned serious. "There's something else. Chi Wansui has returned to the Sacred City. If you go against the Lingxiao Heavenly Mansion and Canglong Army again, you must be extra careful."

"Today's New Year's Eve. Let's not talk about killing," Zhang Ruochen said, chuckling. "It's so hard for us to reunite. How about we find a place and drink together?"

"Sure!" Huang Yanchen thought carefully and said, "I heard that there's a Kongyue Mountain outside the Sacred City. There's an ancient tower at the mountaintop. It has 74 levels and thousands of years of history. Today is New Year's Eve. The Sacred City must be very lively. If we stand at the top of the tower, we should be able to see all the city lights."

Zhang Ruochen's eyes turned dazed. He thought of Chi Yao from 800 years ago.

When he was 16 years old, Chi Yao had also said that she wanted to see all the lights of the Sacred City. Thus, Zhang Ruochen had brought her to Kongyue Mountain and stayed at the top of the tower for the entire night.

"What's wrong?" Huang Yanchen asked after seeing that Zhang Ruochen was dazed.

Zhang Ruochen took a deep breath and squeezed out a smile. Shaking his head, he said, "Nothing. I just thought of some things that I shouldn't think about. Let's go to Kongyue Mountain now."

Instead of flying, Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen walked to the top of Kongyue Mountain.

After that, Zhang Ruochen released the Elephant-swallowing Rabbit and Demon Ape. He had them stand guard outside the tower and not let any Monks enter.

“Lord Chen, don’t worry,” the Elephant-swallowing Rabbit said, patting its stomach. “I will definitely guard the mountain seriously. No one will be able to take a step in.”

By the time Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen made it to the top, the sky had already darkened.

There was a sea of stars in the sky. There was a sea of lights below it too.

Like a little girl, Huang Yanchen rested her porcelain-like face against Zhang Ruochen’s chest. “It’s so quiet here and the view is beautiful. If only it could be like this forever.”

“I also thought like this 800 years ago.” Zhang Ruochen’s eyes were sharp. “However, even if the tree wants to stay still, the wind won’t stop. It’s not easy to find peace and quiet.”

“Yes!” Huang Yanchen nodded. Her glossy lips moved as she said, “The dead souls in the east, the Death Zen Sect in the south, the Immortal Vampires in the north... There are signs of chaos all over Kunlun’s Field. No one can enjoy peace alone.”

“Brother Chen, I think you should gather the old members and establish a clan first, then become a powerful force in one area. When the time comes, take over the Empress’ world and re-establish the Sacred Central Empire.”

Zhang Ruochen caressed Huang Yanchen’s beautiful face. He shook his head and chuckled. “Eight hundred years have already passed. There are those who are still loyal to the Sacred Central Empire, but there are more calculative people.”

“With my current cultivation, I can’t control them yet. Once I call them back, I may be taken advantage of. They would use me as their puppet. The thing I need to do now is to raise my own cultivation.

“When I’m strong enough, people will come and submit to me even without my status as the Crown Prince.”

Zhang Ruochen had always thought that he could only be strong if he himself was strong. If he borrowed help, there would always be many hidden threats.

He rarely revealed his worries, but tonight was a special day. The woman beside him was also very close to him. It wasn’t that big of a deal to say the things he was thinking.

Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen stopped discussing the world. Instead, they talked about their recent experiences.

Zhang Ruochen also asked about his mother. After learning that she was alright, he was relieved.

The night grew darker. The snow came down harder too.

Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen shared a flagon of wine and rested against each other. Rather than cold, there was ineffable warmth.

Half-sober and half-drunk, Kong Lanyou’s image flashed across Zhang Ruochen’s mind.

Tonight was New Year’s Eve. Was she still at the Royal Tombs? Was she alone? Was she feeling lonely?

“Yanchen, I need to bring you somewhere.”

Zhang Ruochen picked up the half-asleep Huang Yanchen, but his eyes were pointed in the direction of the Royal Tombs. No matter how Kong Lanyou treated him, she was still his cousin. As the elder one, shouldn’t Zhang Ruochen be more generous?

Some things had to be faced.

“Where are we going?” Huang Yanchen asked sleepily.

There was no coldness about her now. She was like a dazed teenager, following Zhang Ruochen down the tower.

“You’ll understand after we get there,” Zhang Ruochen said.

When they reached the bottom of the tower, Zhang Ruochen smelled a peculiar scent of meat. The fragrance had surpassed the level of delicious.

Crackle, pop.

In the distance, there was a huge bonfire. The servant called Qing Mo was roasting a seven-meter-long beast. The meat had already become golden and the enticing smell covered the entire Kongyue Mountain.

The Elephant-swallowing Rabbit and Demon Ape still had a bit of a demon's Qi. They sprawled behind Qing Mo and drooled like hungry kittens.

“Sister Qing Mo, how much longer will it take?” The Elephant-swallowing Rabbit was so hungry that it was about to go crazy. Its eyes were bloodshot and it dug two ditches by pawing on the ground.

The Demon Ape also stared at Qing Mo pleadingly.

Qing Mo pursed her lips with a bit of disdain and said, “You two eat so much. You've already eaten four beasts and you're still hungry? Especially you, Guoguo. You're so tiny. How can you eat so much meat?”

The Elephant-swallowing Rabbit rubbed its chubby cheeks against Qing Mo's side. “It's because Sister Qing Mo's barbeque meat is the best. You're on a whole other level than Lord Blackie and Lord Chen's cooking skills.”

Qing Mo tapped the Elephant-swallowing Rabbit's head. “Alright, it's done. You can eat now!”

Zhang Ruochen walked over to try some of the meat that Qing Mo had cooked. The fragrance was extremely tantalizing. Even though Zhang Ruochen didn't have to eat food anymore, he still couldn't resist it.

However, as soon as Qing Mo spoke, the Elephant-swallowing Rabbit and Demon Ape pounced and upended the bonfire. They fought each other and devoured crazily. An instant later, the huge beast was completely gone. Not even a single bone remained.

The Elephant-swallowing Rabbit patted its round stomach. “Sister Qing Mo, you really have talented hands. Not only is the meat you cook delicious, it's also like spiritual medicine and can improve cultivation.”

Qing Mo couldn't stand how greedy the Elephant-swallowing Rabbit was acting. She covered her smile with a hand and suddenly saw Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen below the tower. She immediately rose to bow. "Greetings, Princess and Lord Zhang."

The Elephant-swallowing Rabbit and Demon Ape were worried that Zhang Ruochen would berate them, so they pretended like nothing had happened. Immediately straightening, they got up and left. They started patrolling the mountain with menacing expressions.

"Lord Chen told me to patrol the mountain," the Elephant-swallowing Rabbit sang as it walked. "After patrolling the east mountain, I'll patrol the west."

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and sighed. Blackie had influenced the Elephant-swallowing Rabbit and Demon Ape too much. They were more and more unreliable.

In the end, Zhang Ruochen didn't berate them. He took Huang Yanchen, Qing Mo, the Elephant-swallowing Rabbit, and Demon Ape away from Kongyue Mountain and toward the Royal Tombs.

Chapter 1035 - Royal Tombs

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The Royal Tombs were in the west of the Sacred City. It was in an open mountain ridge. Looking from afar, it was pitch black and very eerie.

There were layers of dark clouds in the sky that covered the stars completely.

Before the Sacred Central Empire was destroyed, the Royal Tombs had been a forbidden zone. It had been heavily guarded and no Monk could approach it.

Eight hundred years had passed. Now, the land outside was covered in accumulated snow and fallen leaves. Weeds grew freely, giving off an abandoned and desolate feeling.

Actually, the Royal Tombs weren't only a forbidden zone. It was a place where killing was forbidden too.

The ancestors of the royal Zhang Family had used great emperor-level techniques to construct more than one Emperor-level formations and protect the tombs.

When the Sacred City had been conquered, some Saints had tried to break into the Royal Tombs and steal the treasures inside. However, none of them had come out alive.

As the Crown Prince of the Sacred Central Empire, Zhang Ruochen naturally knew how to enter it. He could avoid the formations' attacks by following some special paths.

"Follow me closely and don't make mistakes," Zhang Ruochen reminded. "Otherwise, there will be big problems."

After entering the mountain range where the Royal Tombs were, the air grew colder and eerier. Will-o'-wisps flew out of

some places, transforming into skulls, dragons, snakes, and soldiers.

“These aren’t regular will-o’-wisps. They’re the flames formed by a great emperor-level formation. Any Saint who gets touched by them will be burned to ashes.”

Hearing this, the Elephant-swallowing Rabbit’s limbs trembled. Its legs turned to jelly and it didn’t dare to make any missteps.

The Royal Tombs took up a vast space. It was boundless. Zhang Ruochen’s group walked for dozens of miles, but they’d still only traveled across a tiny portion. The surrounding mountains, gullies, and forests were silent. It stood in stark contrast to the liveliness of the Sacred City.

Suddenly, the Elephant-swallowing Rabbit let out a strange cry. Everyone stopped in surprise.

“What’s wrong?” Zhang Ruochen hurriedly activated his Holy Qi and formed palm prints with his hands. He was ready in defense.

The Elephant-swallowing Rabbit pointed into the near distance. “There are footprints.”

Qing Mo let out a breath. She’d been very nervous and thought they’d really run into danger. “Guoguo, those are only footprints. Don’t freak out over nothing. I almost died from fear.”

Qing Mo stuck out her tongue and twisted the Elephant-swallowing Rabbit’s ears, almost lifting it up.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t lower his guard though. He walked to the footprints to investigate them. The surroundings were covered in dense verdure, so the footprints weren’t covered in snow.

“The footprints are still fresh. Someone must have come during the past two days. Who could enter the Royal Tombs?”

The footprints were of varying sizes and depths. They didn’t come from one person. Clearly, they weren’t Kong Lanyou’s.

“Everyone, be careful. Some people probably broke into the Royal Tombs.” Zhang Ruochen’s expression was serious.

One must know that the Royal Tombs were an extremely dangerous area. Anyone who could avoid the various great emperor-level formations and reach this area were above-average people.

The group continued forward.

A while later, they found blood on the ground. A battle had occurred not long ago.

The Elephant-swallowing Rabbit sniffed powerfully. It rushed into an open space and dug out a bunch of dirt, sending the thick snow flying.

It dug out six bodies from the ground. They’d been burned black and had become scorched corpses. They were like six man-shaped matches.

Zhang Ruochen walked to one and cut open the top layer with the Abyss Ancient Sword and revealed the skeleton inside.

The skeleton gleamed like metal and was extremely hard. Strands of pure Holy Qi poured out too. It was evident that these people had very strong cultivations when they’d been alive.

“Huh?” Zhang Ruochen had a new discovery.

There were some strange patterns on the bones that shimmered with gold light.

“Those are corpse patterns,” Huang Yanchen said. “Only Monks from the Necromancer Race and Death Zen Sect can inscribe them. You can produce powerful battle corpses after carving them onto a corpse’s bones, skin, and meridians.”

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes darkened. After slicing open the other five burnt corpses, he discovered corpse patterns on all their bones.

“These must be the battle corpses produced by the Necromancer Race.”

Zhang Ruochen had seen that the Death Zen Buddhist Way had records about the corpse patterns. They had a Buddhist style and were completely different from the corpse patterns on these six burnt bodies.

The Necromancer Race had a very deep heritage and was skilled in many ancient and secret spells. They could enter all sorts of dangerous relics and steal the corpses of ancestors of many clans.

One could only create powerful battle corpses by using powerful bodies.

The Necromancer Race didn't only rob Saint graves. Apparently, at their peak, they'd even entered an ancient god's grave and stole half of a deity's corpse.

“Did the Necromancer Race break into the Royal Tombs to steal the corpse of Emperor Ming?”

Other than the emperor's corpse, there was nothing else that was worth it for the Necromancer Race to risk everything and break into the Royal Tombs.

Zhang Ruochen clenched his fists. Fury burned in his eyes.

His ancestors' spirits shouldn't be disturbed. His ancestors' bodies shouldn't become battle puppets of other people.

The Necromancer Race's actions were clearly more despicable than the Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion.

“There are six battle corpses here,” Huang Yanchen said.

“They were probably created with Saint bodies, but were disabled by some type of fire. It's evident that there's a powerful guard in the Royal Tombs.”

“Guard?”

Zhang Ruochen immediately thought of Kong Lanyou.

Of course, it was possible that it wasn't her.

With Kong Lanyou's cultivation, if she attacked, the battle corpses would probably have been burned to ash. How could they be preserved so completely? The corpses didn't have Kong Lanyou's aura either.

Zhang Ruochen had the Elephant-swallowing Rabbit and Demon Ape bury the six burnt corpses again. “We’ve only discovered six destroyed battle corpses but no Monks of the Necromancer Race. Where did they go?”

“Perhaps...they’ve already escaped,” Qing Mo said timidly.

“That would be great if it’s true,” Zhang Ruochen said.

He’d already made a note of this in his mind. If the Necromancer Race dared to offend his ancestors, then he would make them pay no matter what.

As they continued forward, their view grew wider.

There were various huge stone tablets between the mountains, as well as tombs scattered all over.

Each tomb was taller than a mountain and emanated an intimidating aura. The eerie Qi released from the tombs solidified into clouds with purple, silver, and gold light.

Zhang Ruochen crossed a dark green stone bridge and went toward a shorter tomb. Even though it was shorter, it was still around 100 feet tall and built from huge boulders.

There was an ancient stone tablet before the tomb. It was hundreds of feet tall. Standing before the tablet, Zhang Ruochen was like a speck of dust.

There were lines of words inscribed on the back of the tablet. On the front, there were only two powerful words: Empress Tomb.

There was no specific name.

It was empty and there were no fallen leaves before it. The snow that fell down didn’t cover the dark green stone completely. Clearly, someone had come to sweep it recently.

“Mother, I’m sorry. I haven’t come to see you in 800 years.”

Zhang Ruochen knelt on the ground and kowtowed to the tomb. Huang Yanchen walked to his right and also knelt down to kowtow.

Behind them, Qing Mo, the Elephant-swallowing Rabbit, and Demon Ape all knelt down to face the tomb with serious

expressions.

In the near distance, at the edge of the square, a beauty with white hair walked out of a huge parasol tree.

It was Kong Lanyou.

Staring at Zhang Ruochen who was kneeling on the ground, her beautiful eyes were filled with complicated feelings. Crystal tears flowed out.

She'd received Zhang Ruochen's letter long ago and knew that he was still alive, but she'd still suffered. She was afraid that the letter had been forged.

Thus, she stayed before her aunt's grave and never left it.

She was only sure that her cousin was still alive when she personally saw Zhang Ruochen enter the Royal Tombs and kneel before her aunt's grave.

After kowtowing to his mother, Zhang Ruochen stood up again. He looked to the edge of the square and stared at Kong Lanyou.

The Elephant-swallowing Rabbit's eyes widened. It shook in fear and then forced itself to be calm again. "Someone actually broke into the Royal Tombs! Lord Chen, you all retreat and I'll go meet her."

It didn't dare go against Kong Lanyou alone, so it dragged the Demon Ape along.

Standing before Kong Lanyou, the Elephant-swallowing Rabbit clenched its claws into fists. Its demonic Qi flared as it thundered coldly, "Are you a human or ghost?"

Kong Lanyou didn't reply. Her resentful eyes kept staring at Zhang Ruochen who was walking towards her. Tears fell down like a curtain of beads.

"You think I can't do anything about you if you don't talk? You're forcing me to attack!"

The Elephant-swallowing Rabbit didn't attack personally. It pushed the Demon Ape to test Kong Lanyou's cultivation.

The Demon Ape charged and extended a huge palm to smash down on Kong Lanyou's head.

Kaboom!

The Demon Ape crashed against an invisible wall and flew out like a huge leather ball. It fell onto the ground with a boom.

Kong Lanyou remained standing in place.

The Elephant-swallowing Rabbit gasped. Its teeth chattered as it realized it was facing a great enemy. It retreated immediately.

“Lord Chen, this is a strong cultivator. What should we do?” It was ready to run for its life.

Zhang Ruochen ignored it. He walked straight toward Kong Lanyou. The distance between them kept shortening—ten steps, nine, eight...

Terrified, the Elephant-swallowing Rabbit yelled, “Lord Chen...be careful, she's really a strong cultivator... Don't underestimate your enemies...”

Chapter 1036 - One Tear, One Bead

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Kong Lanyou's tears pinged when they dropped onto the ground. Each teardrop had solidified into a translucent bead. They glittered.

With her cultivation, a drop of her blood was able to pierce a mountain. A strand of her hair could cut a river.

A teardrop was naturally filled with saintly might as well. They were tens of thousands of times more valuable than the world's most precious gems.

The Elephant-swallowing Rabbit picked up a teardrop the size of a mung bean. White saintly light instantly flooded out and covered its small claws.

Shocking divine power rushed into the Elephant-swallowing Rabbit, making its body crack and pop. In that instant, its physical strength increased substantially.

“This is good.”

The Elephant-swallowing Rabbit's eyes gleamed greedily. It grabbed the teardrops and shoved them into its mouth. It could tell that the white-haired woman wasn't an enemy, so it ate without any worry.

At the moment, the white-haired woman was hugging Lord Chen. She was probably a lover that Lord Chen took care of on the side.

It felt that Lord Chen was being a bit too much. After all, Princess Yanchen was right there. Even if he was the Crown

Prince and had a special status, he should still be more reserved. He couldn't be so obvious.

What woman wouldn't get jealous?

However, the Elephant-swallowing Rabbit didn't think too much when it saw the teardrops that kept falling to the ground. It pounced instantly and picked them up, shoving them into its mouth.

After eating six beads, it felt something wrong. Its entire body swelled and felt burning heat surge out.

One teardrop contained a terrifying amount of divine power. A regular person couldn't digest it at all and could die from bloating.

The Elephant-swallowing Rabbit was very greedy and had eaten six in a row.

The six teardrops hung in its body like six small suns. Its body kept expanding until it was dozens of meters tall. Flames shot out of it.

A huge burning rabbit appeared before everyone.

"Lord Chen, save me..." the Elephant-swallowing Rabbit cried, rushing toward Zhang Ruochen.

At the moment, Zhang Ruochen was enjoying his reunification with Kong Lanyou. They hadn't seen each other in forever and had many things to talk about. They didn't want to care about the rabbit at all.

Kong Lanyou waved her hand as if swatting a fly and sent the rabbit flying hundreds of feet away.

Glancing at the Elephant-swallowing Rabbit, Zhang Ruochen smiled but wasn't worried for it. This rabbit was very unique. It could even digest the Divine Blood-red Earth, so it definitely wouldn't die from swallowing six teardrops.

Kong Lanyou stood in the snow. Her long hair, even whiter than the snow, fell to the ground. Her eyes were still misty.

"Eight hundred years ago, I thought that you'd left me forever and would never come back. I don't know how I lived through

these 800 years. I seemed to have only done two things: cultivate and take revenge. Eight hundred years later, you appear again. My heart had died, but now, I see a shred of hope again.”

“Do you know how shocked I was when I first heard news about you?” she continued. “How happy? How fearful?”

“Cousin, you’re so cruel. What reason could you have that would make you lie to me twice? I remember that you’d never lied to me before. You’ve always been straightforward with me. You’ve always cared about me the most. Don’t you know that my heart was torn apart whenever you lied to me?”

With that, pings sounded on the ground again. A large amount of translucent teardrops rolled.

Her emotions, pent-up for 800 years, were vented out at this moment. She couldn’t hold back at all.

Staring at Kong Lanyou’s face, Zhang Ruochen let out a long sigh.

He’d thought that Kong Lanyou wasn’t the Kong Lanyou from before. Eight hundred years would definitely change someone entirely.

Now, he discovered that she hadn’t changed at all.

The one who’d changed was he.

He didn’t dare to meet Kong Lanyou’s eyes. Looking into the distance, he said, “I didn’t think that you’d still be persistent after 800 years. Can’t time dilute someone’s feelings?”

Kong Lanyou looked at him with pitiful eyes. “Have you always been laughing at me inwardly, thinking that I’m still as stupid as before? I hadn’t become smarter after 800 years.”

“No.”

After a long silence, Zhang Ruochen extended a hand and patted Kong Lanyou’s hair softly. I’m sorry, he thought. I shouldn’t have lied to you or suspected you.

Kong Lanyou rested her face softly against Zhang Ruochen’s chest. Closing her eyes, she extended her snow-white arms and

hugged Zhang Ruochen tightly.

Right now, she didn't look like a Saint Elder of Sacred Central Crypt at all. A happy smile ghosted her lips.

She really hadn't changed at all in 800 years.

There were always some people who had the most genuine and purest feelings. No matter how much time had passed, their hearts would still be exactly the same as before.

Just as Kong Lanyou had said, she'd only done two things throughout the 800 years: cultivated and taken revenge.

"Lord Chen, save me... I'm burning to death... I can't..."

The fire on the Elephant-swallowing Rabbit burned even brighter. It ran toward Zhang Ruochen again.

Kong Lanyou sent it flying again. This time, it flew dozens of miles away. She really didn't want it to come back.

In the distance, Qing Mo watched Zhang Ruochen and Kong Lanyou hug. Unhappiness colored her little face. Biting her lip lightly, she said, "Princess..."

Huang Yanchen glanced over and cut her off.

Zhang Ruochen and Kong Lanyou talked about many things, from childhood memories to recent experiences. They had a tacit agreement about not bringing up some sensitive things. They clearly didn't want to ruin the atmosphere.

Kong Lanyou had calmed down and she smiled often.

"There's something I have to tell you," Zhang Ruochen said, trying his best to use a calm tone. "I've married Princess Yanchen."

Kong Lanyou bit her lips. Her smile was wiped away immediately. "Brother Chen, don't you think you should introduce us? We're a family now, after all."

Huang Yanchen walked over and stood with Zhang Ruochen. Instead of a cold expression, she had a rare smile on her face.

Zhang Ruochen pointed at Kong Lanyou. "Cousin, Kong Lanyou." Then he pointed at Huang Yanchen to introduce her.

However, Kong Lanyou spoke first. “No need to introduce her a second time. I know that she’s your wife, Huang Yanchen. Cousin, I have a question. Have you moved on from Chi Yao so quickly?”

“What’s the point of bringing up the past?”

Zhang Ruochen’s smile disappeared. He didn’t answer Kong Lanyou and just turned around to stare at the headstone in the distance.

“For the next few days, I’ll stay to guard my mother’s tomb.”

Kong Lanyou didn’t force Zhang Ruochen to answer her question. “I’ll accompany you.”

Zhang Ruochen nodded. “When I entered the Royal Tombs, I saw battle corpses left behind by the Necromancer Race. There were signs of a battle too. Did you defeat them?”

“I never left this place.” Kong Lanyou’s eyes turned thoughtful. She shook her head and suddenly thought of something. “Perhaps it’s that person.”

“Who?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“That person must be a tomb guard. I met him more than once in the Royal Tombs. However, he was always hidden. He thinks that he can hide from my senses but doesn’t know that I’ve already sensed him.”

So there really was a guard. Zhang Ruochen was instantly reassured.

With the guard’s abilities and the emperor-level formations of the Royal Tombs, the Necromancer Race wouldn’t be able to easily steal his ancestors’ corpses, no matter how mysterious their tricks were.

Just then, the Elephant-swallowing Rabbit made another weird sound in the distance. Leaving a blazing trail, it flew back. “Lord Chen, save me... I saw a ghost! He chased me and wanted to eat me. Thankfully, I lost him!”

Zhang Ruochen furrowed his brow, feeling a headache coming. He really wanted to knock the rabbit unconscious so it would stop freaking out all the time.

Qing Mo stood behind Huang Yanchen. Covering her mouth, she giggled. “The Royal Tombs has a sacred strength that can kill ghosts so there aren’t any evil beings. Guoguo, did your brain melt?”

“No, it really is a ghost. It looks just like a living being.”

Guoguo rushed to Qing Mo and panted heavily.

Seeing how serious the Elephant-swallowing Rabbit was, Qing Mo grew more convinced. Curious, she asked, “What exactly does the ghost look like?”

Gesturing with its claws, the rabbit said, “He looks like a menacing old monk with yellow teeth and leering eyes. He almost grabbed my tail, saying he wants to eat me. Thankfully, I ran fast enough. Otherwise, the consequences are unimaginable!”

Seeing how serious it was, Zhang Ruochen’s expression turned grave too.

Whoosh.

An old monk appeared in Zhang Ruochen’s sight.

Zhang Ruochen uttered a small noise and immediately looked to the center of the square.

The old monk was dressed in a loose robe and held a wine gourd. Like a real ghost, he appeared out of thin air before them all.

Guoguo’s fur stood up straight. Pointing at the old monk, it screamed, “Ghost! Lord Chen, it’s that old ghost!”

Only surprise flashed past Zhang Ruochen’s eyes. His emotions didn’t actually fluctuate.

Kong Lanyou’s cultivation was very advanced. No matter if the old monk was friend or foe, he probably didn’t dare to cause trouble.

He was only surprised because he’d seen this old monk at the Cai Family’s banquet. Everyone had thought that he was an independent martial artist who was there for free food.

Kong Lanyou walked over. Powerful Holy Qi rippled off of her, forming layers of saintly halos. Her eyes were as bright as stars. “This isn’t where you should be,” she warned. “Leave immediately.”

The old monk’s eyes were fearful when they fell upon Kong Lanyou. Then he turned toward Zhang Ruochen. He lowered onto one knee and saluted Zhang Ruochen with his fists. “Zhao Fu of the 36 Heavenly Spirits of the Guarding Dragon Pavilion. I came to guard the Royal Tombs under the pavilion lord’s orders. Since the Crown Prince has arrived, I must come to greet you.”

Clearly, the old monk had been hiding and watching Zhang Ruochen’s every move. He hadn’t shown himself until he was sure of Zhang Ruochen’s identity.

Chapter 1037 - Internal Chaos of the Sacred Central Crypt

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The old monk held a badge from the Guarding Dragon Pavilion. The badge was made out of a unique material that could not be replicated by others.

Zhang Ruochen had never seen a member of the Guarding Dragon Pavilion, but he had to recognize the man's identity.

Who would've thought that the legendary Guarding Dragon Pavilion really existed?

Zhang Ruochen returned the badge to Zhao Fu. "Where are the other members of the Guarding Dragon Pavilion?"

Zhang Ruochen's cultivation was still very low, but Zhao Fu was very respectful and didn't dare offend him. "Our members are dispersed throughout the Kunlun's Field. We all have different identities and missions. Only the pavilion lord knows everyone's identity."

Furrowing his brow, Zhang Ruochen continued asking, "What exactly is the Guarding Dragon Pavilion's mysterious mission?"

Zhao Fu shook his head and smiled. "Your Majesty, I only know that my mission is to guard the Royal Tombs. I do not know the missions of others. However, the pavilion lord will definitely know."

Zhang Ruochen asked some other questions, such as where the pavilion lord was and if the Guarding Dragon Pavilion had

taken away the Sacred Central Empire's treasury 800 years ago.

However, Zhao Fu knew very little. Zhang Ruochen couldn't find out any substantial information.

Zhao Fu told Zhang Ruochen that his master had died. Before dying, he gave Zhao Fu the way to contact the pavilion lord. He could only use it during the most critical emergencies. Otherwise, it was the pavilion lord who contacted him.

Zhang Ruochen didn't tell Zhao Fu to contact the pavilion lord. This didn't mean that he didn't want to summon back the members of the Guarding Dragon Pavilion. He just felt that the time wasn't right yet.

Right now, the state of Kunlun's Field was changing very quickly. Dark currents flowed and unpredictable catastrophes could erupt at any time.

Whoever made the biggest commotion would attract the most attention and die the quickest.

"Actually, cousin, you can summon the members too," Kong Lanyou said. "If you issue the call for action, you'll be protected by the Guarding Dragon Pavilion and Sacred Central Crypt. In addition, there are the descendants of the royal Zhang family and our old supporters. We can totally take down the Sacred City and reestablish the Sacred Central Empire. You can proclaim yourself emperor and counter Chi Yao's First Central Empire."

She continued, "Right now, the imperial court's army is restricted by the dead souls in the east, the Death Zen Sect in the south, and the Immortal Vampires in the north. They can't deal with us at all. We can take advantage of this and strengthen. We can expand our territory and completely shatter the First Central Empire."

Zhang Ruochen shook his head. "Your idea is good, but unfortunately, you only thought about the problem's surface."

Kong Lanyou bit her lips and her expression turned angry. Zhang Ruochen didn't care about her dignity.

After all, she was a Saint Elder of the Sacred Central Crypt. She had 800 years of experience and extremely high cultivation. Everyone feared her. However, Zhang Ruochen still treated her like a little one and directly rejected her suggestion.

“You don’t think so? Then let me analyze the current situation to you,” Zhang Ruochen said. “First of all, the dead spirits of the east, the Death Zen Sect of the south, and the Immortal Vampires of the north all aren’t the First Central Empire’s match. If Chi Yao decides to destroy them, she can do it easily.”

Kong Lanyou naturally knew how terrifying the First Central Empire’s strength was. She also knew how horrifying Chi Yao’s cultivation was. However, she still didn’t understand what Zhang Ruochen meant. She was confused.

Looking at her, Zhang Ruochen shook his head, thinking, She really hasn’t gotten smarter after all these years.

“I suspect that Chi Yao is training soldiers,” Zhang Ruochen said.

“Training soldiers?”

Zhang Ruochen nodded in confirmation. “The First Central Empire started a golden age for the Martial Way. There are countless Saints and everyone is brilliant. However, humans have been at peace for centuries. We’ve become arrogant and proud. We’ve forgotten the days where we fought for survival with the savage beasts.”

“If I was Chi Yao, standing at the peak of Kunlun’s Field and seeing this situation, I would also attract some forces to challenge my soldiers.”

Huang Yanchen’s eyes shone. “The Empress purposely refuses to clean up the mess in the three regions? Won’t many innocent humans die? How can she be so cold?”

Kong Lanyou thought carefully and her eyes turned cold. “From what I know of her, it’s really something she’ll do. Cousin, you know her the best. Her calculations go deeper than anyone.”

Immediately after, Zhang Ruochen continued, “Secondly, the stone tablet left behind by the Thousand-bone Empress can only seal off the netherworld and living world for a few years. It won’t be long before even more and stronger dead spirits pour into Kunlun’s Field.

“That is a true disaster. The entire Kunlun’s Field united might not be able to fend them off. Faced with such a catastrophe, if we reestablish the Sacred Central Empire to fight against the First Central Empire now, what meaning is there other than killing more of us?”

“There are too many hidden dangers in the Kunlun’s Field. Many ancient forces and powerful heads are still laying low, waiting for the right time. If we jump out first to reestablish the empire, we’ll definitely become everyone’s targets. We won’t have a good ending.”

Merely Pluto and the Blood Empress already made Zhang Ruochen feel very unsettled. Plus, Kunlun’s Field didn’t only have these two hidden threats.

After all, the Immortal Vampires weren’t the only ancient race.

Disregarding the others, if the Necromancer Race and Ghost Cultivation Race dared to cause trouble, they must have some hidden tricks.

The Kunlun’s Field was too big. People like Zhang Ruochen could come back to life 800 years after his death. Who knew what other illogical things were possible?

With Kong Lanyou’s current status and cultivation, she naturally knew many secrets about Kunlun’s Field. Her small mouth moved, but she didn’t say anything. She continued listening to Zhang Ruochen’s explanation.

Zhang Ruochen’s tone calmed down a bit as he said, “Thirdly, can the Sacred Central Crypt really follow the royal Zhang Family again?”

Hearing this, Kong Lanyou bit her lip. What must come will always come, she thought.

Not avoiding it anymore, Zhang Ruochen asked her straightforwardly, “Lanyou, you should give me an

explanation about Peacock House, right? Why did you do it 800 years ago?”

He had to ask it sooner or later. If not, there would always be something between him and Kong Lanyou.

Kong Lanyou didn't dare to meet his eyes. She looked into the distant tombs and said, “Cousin, I was still young back then. I didn't know why those things would happen at all, until... I didn't find out the truth until centuries later.”

“What's the truth?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Kong Lanyou fluttered her lashes with a pleading expression. “I can't tell you right now.”

“It's just the truth. Is it that hard to say?” Zhang Ruochen didn't understand.

What exactly was Kong Lanyou hiding? Why wasn't she willing to reveal it?

Eight hundred years had passed. Many things had happened and passed. What was the point of hiding it still?

Kong Lanyou shook her head forcefully. “Please, Cousin, don't force me. When I think I can tell you, I'll definitely tell you everything.”

“Alright. I won't force you.” Zhang Ruochen sighed.

Finally, Kong Lanyou let out a breath. She didn't want to hide the past from Zhang Ruochen, but she had no choice. Some things weren't as simple as they seemed.

“I'm the Saint Elder of the Sacred Central Crypt,” Kong Lanyou said. “If I wish, I can command the various groups of the crypt. Cousin, no matter when you wish to reestablish the Sacred Central Empire, I'll aid you at first notice.”

With Kong Lanyou's current cultivation and status, Zhang Ruochen was very touched that she could still say those things.

However, the Sacred Central Crypt had already split off from the old supporters of the Sacred Central Empire. They had very deep conflicts. Even if they were forced to reunify, there would still be hidden threats.

To Zhang Ruochen, it would be better to develop the Sacred Sect with all his power and create a force that truly belonged to him.

Zhang Ruochen didn't ask Kong Lanyou if his identity was exposed because of her. He believed that Kong Lanyou wouldn't do something like that.

There was only one other person left: Kong Hongbi.

Kong Hongbi probably wants to use other forces to find me. He might not know my true identity, he thought.

Seeing the cold light flash past Zhang Ruochen's eyes, Kong Lanyou asked, "Cousin, what are you thinking about?"

"Nothing."

Zhang Ruochen smiled. He didn't reveal the conflicts between him and Kong Hongbi. He didn't like relying on other people. If he could solve something by himself, he would definitely do it personally.

Only if he was personally strong would he be truly strong.

Following that, Zhang Ruochen remained in the Royal Tombs. In addition to guarding his mother's tomb, he also cultivated to improve himself.

After refining divine blood, his cultivation had successfully reached the pinnacle of the Fifth Level.

One day, Zhao Fu brought news. "There's internal chaos in the Sacred Central Crypt. The imperial court's army is mustering to take advantage of this chance and destroy them."

The Sacred Central Crypt wasn't unified within. They'd gathered dozens of forces from the previous dynasty. The Peacock House was only the biggest amongst them.

The various forces had different interests. It was possible for them to have conflicts.

Receiving this news, Kong Lanyou planned on returning. "Cousin, will you go back with me? After I settle the conflicts, I can help you become the crypt leader."

“No,” Huang Yanchen said, walking out immediately. “The Sacred Central Crypt has just fallen to chaos and the imperial court’s army has already gathered. Isn’t it a bit odd? I suspect this has something to do with the Empress. She probably left the Central Emperor City with plans to eradicate the Sacred Central Crypt. Won’t it be too dangerous for Brother Chen to go back with you?”

Kong Lanyou thought carefully. Huang Yanchen’s words weren’t completely without logic. “Cousin, I’ll come find you after I settle the conflict.”

Zhang Ruochen thought it was strange as well, but he knew that Kong Lanyou had to hurry back. The people of the Peacock House were still in the Sacred Central Crypt.

Kong Lanyou hadn’t changed in 800 years, but her responsibilities had become heavier. She was no longer that innocent little girl nor just Zhang Ruochen’s cousin. She was a Saint Elder.

“Lanyou!” Zhang Ruochen called. “Be careful,” he reminded her. “If you see Chi Yao, don’t go straight against her. One day, I’ll personally go to her palace and make her pay for everything.”

Kong Lanyou made a noise of agreement and nodded. Then she disappeared from the Royal Tombs as a streak of white light.

Chapter 1038 - An Upper Class Void World Was About To Be Exhausted

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen didn't stay long in the Royal Tombs, for Qingmo and Elephant-swallowing Rabbit had heard a shocking message when they had been purchasing food outside.

It's about the Blue Dragon Void World.

The Blue Dragon Void World was on the edge of total exhaustion. The space became extremely fragile. The plate broke in parts. Each day, there were violent earthquakes and volcanic eruptions.

All native saints born there had left the world.

The Qi of living creatures in saint level was extremely terrible. Once they were given out, they would largely crack the fragile Blue Dragon Void World.

The Qi of saint lives could break the Rules of the Heaven and the Earth. At last, the saints themselves would die tragically.

The Void World soldiers garrisoning in the Blue Dragon Void World had passed words back via some secret means.

It was said that after each eruption, large amount of jewels would be carried out from the bottom, including saintly rocks and saint jades.

A Void World soldier at the Heavenly Realm had once collected a dozen of saintly rocks, which had made him

wealthier than a lower level Half-Saint who had gathered wealth for more than dozens of years.

Another Void World soldier at the Fish-Dragon Realm had once found a crystal-clear saint jade. After he finished refining it, he had reached the state of Half-Saint overnight. Even himself had no clue what had happened to him.

As the Blue Dragon Void World was about to exhaust, all valuable materials would condense into the essence like saintly rocks or sacred medicine, or other more precious saint objects.

It was said, the main material to refine the Divine Origin Pill, “Saintly Source Sacred Liquid” was only produced at the time of a Void World’s exhaustion.

The reason why a Half-Saint could save years or dozens of years’ practice by taking in a Divine Origin Pill was that he had robbed the origin of a world to trade for his own cultivation.

The Saintly Source Sacred Liquid was extremely rare to find, which made the Divine Origin Pill invaluable. Even the households from the Middle Ages would have spent years to produce one.

And the Seventh Level Divine Origin Pills, the Eighth Level and the Ninth Level couldn’t even be found in those households nor the ancient sects.

Therefore, the Saintly Source Sacred Liquid which was used to refine higher level Divine Origin Pills would only show up when the Upper Class Void World was about to exhaust.

How many Upper Class Void World were around the Kunlun’s Realm? No more than ten.

An Upper Class Void World could last for billions of years, if it were not destroyed on purpose.

The Kunlun’s Field had higher level Divine Origin Pills, but all inherited from Middle Ages. Even the few had been used to cultivate Nine Heirs.

Now that an Upper Class Void World, Blue Dragon Void World was about to exhaust, enormous high level Saintly Source Sacred Liquid would be released. Maybe there would also be rare heavenly treasures. How could people not feel excited?

“Becoming a Half-Saint overnight”, “Pick up saintly rocks everywhere”, “Enormous Saintly Source Sacred Liquid will be condensed”... all words spread among people.

All monks in Kunlun’s Field felt excited and wanted to go to the Blue Dragon Void World at once.

Those ancient sects, houses from Middle Ages and saint families had known the news about the Blue Dragon Void World in advance. They had prepared well and were ready to leave at any minute.

Everyone knew that there would be fierce fight in the Blue Dragon Void World, but none could stop themselves from getting involved.

If you didn’t go to rob, fight and take the risk, others would have the chance to acquire those treasures and rise to suppress you.

When it came to competitions, neither you would move forward or you would fall behind.

Not long ago the words went out, the Immortal Vampires and the Death Zen Sect also sent their powerful figures to the Blue Dragon Void World.

Meanwhile, the beast clans in the Savage Barren Territory were also about to join. Some creatures on the Half-Saint Rank and the Half-Saint Outer Rank appeared in the Central Region, making big sensations.

Among them, the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, ranked No.3 on the Half-Saint Rank had broken into a pass of the First Central Empire, swallowing 130,000 human troops garrisoned there, including a Saint of War.

The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon declared, “You humans would better not go to the Blue Dragon Void World to rob the treasures. Otherwise, your young generation will die out.”

In ancient times, the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon Sect had been fed on saint creatures, fighting with deities.

The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon from the Savage Barren Territory was not an heir, but a Taigu Remain with the purest blood.

After it came of age, it would surely become an unparalleled king.

On the Half-Saint Rank edited by the Saint Lady, the heir of the Sword Emperor, Xue Wuye only ranked No.4.

The ranking of the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon ranked higher than Xue Wuye. It was clear that its power would be terrible.

On the same day, the Royal Prince of the Kun [enormous legendary fish which could change into a roc], who ranked No.6 on the Half-Saint Rank, had surged out from the sea and come to the coast of the Kunlun's Field to give a strike with full strength.

The area in thousands of kilometers had been shaken by it. A part of the plate had been taken off from the Kunlun's Field to become an isolated island.

The Royal Prince of the Kun had also declared, "All clans of savage beasts who lived in water would also go to the Blue Dragon Void World to take the treasures. Human Half-Saints would better stay out of it. Once you got involved, you would call for humiliation."

The savage beasts living on land of the Savage Barren Territory and the savage beasts living in water had come to a mutual understanding that they would unite and fight human race together, leaving no chance for humans to rob the resources of the Blue Dragon Void World.

They wouldn't dare to fight humans in the Kunlun's Field as the cultivation of Empress Chi Yao was so terrible that all the savage beast kings had to lie down.

But saint creatures could not enter the Blue Dragon Void World. Over there, the savage beasts would show their

advantages, which would be enough to crush young human talents.

The appearance of the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon and the Royal Prince of the Kun was a sign of the savage beasts.

If Chi Yao didn't cultivate the Nine Heirs, the most powerful human among the saints, Kong Hongbi would only rank No.34 on the Half-Saint Rank. Humans wouldn't stand a chance to win the savage beasts in robbing resources.

Even if Chi Yao had cultivated the Nine Heirs, humans would only have shortened the distance. The savage beasts still had absolute power to win.

After Zhang Ruochen left the Royal Tombs, he heard many messages about the Blue Dragon Void World in the Sacred City.

“The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon was too arrogant! Master Lidi would be strong enough to crush it.”

Many human monks felt indignant, wanting very much to vanquish the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon by themselves to reclaim human race's dignity.

“Master Lidi does rank higher than the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon on the Half-Saint Rank. But among the top 10, there are only three humans, but 7 savage beasts. Once the war happened, it would inflict great losses on our young talents.”

“So what? Are we scared of them?”

The threats of the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon and the Royal Prince of the Kun didn't scare off human monks. On the contrary, more talents were prepared to go to the Blue Dragon Void World.

Huang Yanchen sighed, “It would surely be a bloodbath in the Blue Dragon Void World. If the young human talents die out, there would be a gap in the top human power in the future. When the time came, the whole human race would come to an end.”

Zhang Ruochen said, "If human talents didn't compete for the resources, we would fall behind the savage beasts and wait for their suppression as well."

Qingmo frowned, and asked, "What should we do?"

Zhang Ruochen laughed, and said firmly, "That Empress Chi Yao did have the vision to have built the Chaotic World Mountain outside the Realm, and bases in each Void World."

"There must be a base in the Blue Dragon Void World as well. If the human talents were slaughtered by the savage beasts, they could hide in the base and keep their lives."

Light could be seen in Huang Yanchen's eyes. She said, "Chen, what's your plan? Should we go to the Blue Dragon Void World?"

"Of course, we will."

Zhang Ruochen didn't blink. Obviously, he had already made the decision.

An Upper Class Void World was about to exhaust. Such a chance would be rare in thousands of years. Once he missed this one, he wouldn't have a second chance.

Dangerous as it was, he had to take the risk.

To go to the Blue Dragon Void World, they had to go to the Chaotic World Mountain first, then got on the Void World Ship.

There were also some worm holes in the Kunlun's Field, which connected with the Blue Dragon Void World. Some of the worm holes were in the Savage Barren Territory, some were overseas, and the others were only known by the households from the Middle Ages and ancient clans.

"So, we are leaving for the Chaotic World Mountain now?" asked Huang Yanchen.

"Yes, now."

Zhang Ruochen didn't return to the Phoenix Dance Palace. After all, it was a famous brothel.

If Huang Yanchen found out that he visited the brothel very often, there might be unnecessary misunderstandings.

There were Void World Ships to the Chaotic World Mountain in the Sacred City. But, Zhang Ruochen couldn't use his real identity to take the ship.

So, he changed his appearance into that of the Son of Deity of the Blood God Sect, Gu Linfeng.

Then he gave Huang Yanchen the Gold Phantom Mask to put on.

Huang Yanchen's identity was unusual.

She was not only one of the Nine Heirs, but also the finance of Zhang Ruochen. She'd better not get recognized.

It had to say that after Huang Yanchen put on the Gold Phantom Mask, her beauty looked different. Apart from her coldness, she was mysteriously beautiful.

They had to go into the base of the Canglong Army to get on the Void World Ship.

The news of the Blue Dragon Void World had spread around the Sacred City. Monks from different places all rushed out the gate to the base of the Canglong Army after they heard the news, in fear of insufficient seats once they were late.

Walking out of the gate of the Sacred City, and getting away from the influence of the City Defensive Formation, Zhang Ruochen detected the Qi of Blackie immediately.

"It has escaped from Lin Suxian?"

Lin Suxian was not highly cultivated enough to kill Blackie. Zhang Ruochen wasn't worried about it.

Zhang Ruochen smiled and raced to a place without people, taking Huang Yanchen and Qingmo with him. He soon saw Ghost King Bloodmoon and Blackie.

Ghost King Bloodmoon stared at Zhang Ruochen, and said, "Luo Xu asked me to give two things to you. The fat cat is one of them."

Then, Ghost King Bloodmoon waved her sleeve to throw Blackie to Zhang Ruochen.

Blackie rolled on the ground like a fluffy meatball. It scolded, "I warn you for one more time, I'm not a thing! Believe it or not, entering the Universe Spiritual Map, I will make you pay a heavy price!"

Blackie couldn't stop itself from rolling until it got to Zhang Ruochen's feet.

It stood up and shook its fur. Feeling ashamed, it let out its sharp fangs and claws to fight Ghost King Bloodmoon desperately.

"Blackie!"

Zhang Ruochen stopped Blackie, then asked Ghost King Bloodmoon, "What's the second thing that Elder Luo Xu asked you to give to me?"

Chapter 1039 - Ten Saints

Blood Armor

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Ghost King Bloodmoon took out a blood red jade belt and handed it to Zhang Ruochen.

Was this sent by Elder Luo Xu?

Zhang Ruochen wondered and received the jade belt. A feeling of coldness passed to his palm.

The belt was heavy. It was made of ten pieces of arc jade. Each jade had abstruse prints and inscriptions.

Zhang Ruochen poured his spiritual power into the belt, and saw endless blood mist. He also heard the deafening splash of water, as if a vast blood sea was gushing to him.

Zoom—

Ten tall human shadows appeared in the blood sea. They stood on the sea surface and each played a complex move.

The magnificent palm play.

The illusive lance play.

The space-cracking broadsword play.

...

Ten human shadows played ten different Martial Ways.

At last, the ten human shadows turned into ten blood columns and ran to Zhang Ruochen with ten strong strands of perverse Qi.

Bang!

Zhang Ruochen pulled back his spiritual power at once, and retreated for three steps. His face lost color.

Huang Yanchen saw the change of Zhang Ruochen's face, thinking that Ghost King Bloodmoon might have tried to hurt him.

So she moved her finger to let a white sword light out from her fingertips, hitting Ghost King Bloodmoon.

"Wait," said Zhang Ruochen.

The saint sword halted in midair, still making piercing noise. Apparently, Huang Yanchen didn't let her guard down.

Zhang Ruochen stared at the belt gravely, and asked, "What is this?"

Ghost King Bloodmoon gave a cold glance to Huang Yanchen, and said calmly, "Ten Saints Blood Armor."

A surprised look appeared on Zhang Ruochen's face. He said, "The Ten Saint Blood Armor from King Taige of the Immortal Vampires."

Not long ago, King Taige had put on the Ten Saints Blood Armor and borrowed the power of the ten saints, attempting to kill Luo Xu. But he had underestimated Luo Xu's power. He had failed to kill Luo Xu, and had been killed instead.

Of course, even Luo Xu couldn't kill King Taige with his Ten Saint Blood Armor easily.

At last, Luo Xu had to borrow the Ancient Abyss Sword to crack the Ten Saint Blood Armor, forcing King Taige to implode his saintly source.

Ghost King Bloodmoon said, "Luo Xu has asked a Weapon Refining Grandmaster to repair the Ten Saints Blood Armor. But human monks would have to have a strong willpower to resist its perverse Qi in order to use it."

Zhang Ruochen touched the belt with his fingers, recalling the experience that had just happened. He nodded and said, "Surely strong willpower is needed to control the Ten Saint Blood Armor. Otherwise, the user would be controlled by it."

Understanding the story, Huang Yanchen put away her saint sword.

Ghost King Bloodmoon said, “He said that few human monks have that kind of willpower. You are one of them. So he gives the Ten Saints Blood Armor to you as a gift.”

“Did Elder Luo Xu ask you to pass word along with them?”

Elder Luo Xu must have had an intention to give Zhang Ruochen the Ten Saints Blood Armor at this moment.

After all, the Ten Saints Blood Armor was rare and precious enough to become the treasure of the Luo Saint Clan. How could he give it to a young man who he had only met once?

Ghost King Bloodmoon said, “He seemed to have mentioned that the Ten Saints Blood Armor has absorbed the blood of ten human saints and millions of common people. He wished that after you put it on, humans would bleed less.”

Apparently, Luo Xu was talking about the battle which was about to happen in the Blue Dragon Void World. He had anticipated that many human elites would die.

“I see.”

Zhang Ruochen nodded thoughtfully, then buckled the belt around his waist. He poured Holy Qi into it.

Ka ka!

Red brilliance appeared on the jade belt and scales grew from his waist piece by piece. At the end, the scales covered Zhang Ruochen’s whole body.

The blood red armor was decorated with light and color. Star-like light particles flickered inside the armor.

Zhang Ruochen pinched his fists. Then, the Ten Saints Blood Armor made a splashing noise, and ten saint shadows appeared in ten directions to him.

With Zhang Ruochen’s current cultivation, he couldn’t display the power of ten saints with the Ten Saints Blood Armor on.

But his defensive power and attack had reached a new height. He could kill an ordinary Ninth Level Half-Saint with just one

blow of his fist.

Zhang Ruochen withdrew the Holy Qi, and the armor fell back into a belt.

“Ten saint’s blood and bones, blood of millions of common people, and with a large amount of saintly rocks and saint jade, the armor is really extraordinary.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled and remembered the kindness of Elder Luo Xu in his heart. If he had the chance, he must pay him back in the future.

Ghost King Bloodmoon entered the Universe Spiritual Map again to keep improving her cultivation by taking in the deadly Qi contained in the stump of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree.

As for Blackie, after it heard the news that the Blue Dragon Void World was about to be exhausted, it kept rolling its eyes. Nobody could tell what it was thinking about.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t want to take Blackie with him, in case monks who had met it before would recognize it and suspect him. He wanted to send Blackie back to the Scroll World.

But Blackie struggled to refuse. It even changed its black fur into white, and said, “I’ve changed my appearance. Nobody would recognize me.”

Zhang Ruochen was shocked as he never knew that Blackie could change its color. He said, “If you can change into a person, it would be safer.”

“Zhang Ruochen, cats are the most supreme species in the world. Why should I change into a human, an inferior creature?”

Blackie turned its fluffy round face and looked arrogant.

Zhang Ruochen rubbed his jaw and walked around Blackie for two circles. He said to himself, “After knowing you for so long, I don’t even know you if you are a female or a male.”

Zhang Ruochen reached out a hand to grasp Blackie’s tail, trying to find out its gender.

Even if Blackie spoke the human language, its voice was small and shrill like a cat. It was hard to tell its gender according to its voice.

So Zhang Ruochen was curious and wanted to find out.

All fur on Blackie's body stood up. It fled and kept cursing, the content of which was to warn Zhang Ruochen that he should show some respect to it and behave himself. Otherwise, he would be in great trouble.

"I just want to take a look. Why make a fuss about it?" Zhang Ruochen sighed.

"Bring it up again, I will not let you go," Blackie opened its eyes widely and warned him again.

Zhang Ruochen finally stopped. Not wanting to waste time, the three people and a cat went to the base of the Canglong Army.

As an upper class Void World, once the Blue Dragon Void World was exhausted, numerous treasures would be produced, which would surely throw all monks of the Kunlun's Field into frenzy.

But Zhang Ruochen had still underestimated the craziness of the monks.

Heavy wind-cracking sounds were heard frequently in the sky. Carriages of all big families and sects kept crowding in on the ground.

It was known that any monk who dared to go to the Blue Dragon Void World to take the resources was a human talent.

The base of the Canglong's Army was crowded with humans. They scrambled for the tickets of the Void World Ship.

The arrival of Zhang Ruochen's group did attract many monks. Of course, most of them were attracted by Huang Yanchen and Qingmo.

Qingmo was originally pretty with clear eyes and delicate facial features, like a so-called spirit from the snow world.

And she had an unusual quality which made her different. Even monks of high mind states would want to admire her and even to own her.

And all were clear that Qingmo was just a maiden.

As her owner, the woman in the golden mask would surely be incomparably beautiful.

Zhang Ruochen had found that many monks cast hostile and jealous looks to him.

Beautiful women are dangerous.

Zhang Ruochen sighed, and felt fortunate at the same time.

At the beginning, Zhang Ruochen thought about calling Murong Yue and Han Qiu out from the Scroll World and bringing them to the Blue Dragon Void World to search for resources as well. They would take the chance to practice the Extreme Yin Body and Form of Darkness to the utmost.

It was known that Murong Yue and Han Qiu also had extraordinary beauty. If he took them all with him, Zhang Ruochen would have irritated everyone and faced resistance and suppression.

Zhang Ruochen made up his mind that he would call them out after they arrived at the Blue Dragon Void World.

Huang Yanchen seemed to understand Zhang Ruochen's trouble. She grinned and said lightly, "It's good fortune to have women's company, but also bad fortune."

Zhang Ruochen seemed to have taken it easy. He laughed, "If I am put in trouble because of my wife's beauty, shouldn't I be proud of it?"

Saying this proved that Zhang Ruochen was confident to deal with the troubles.

Huang Yanchen smiled even more brightly, like the ice mountain had just melted.

But Qingmo was rather innocent. She didn't realize that lust was contained in those people's looks, so she smiled back to them.

Seeing Qingmo's smile, the monks became more fervent with evil desires.

If they didn't know that Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen were not ordinary people, they might have already done things that crossed the line.

Of course, some people with powerful backgrounds had grown a strong interest in Huang Yanchen and Qingmo.

Among them, a tall soldier walked to Zhang Ruochen's company.

He stared at Huang Yanchen. He cupped his hands and laughed. "My lady, the tickets of the 13th voyage of the Void World Ship have sold out. If you want to go to the Chaotic World Mountain, you'll have to wait for the next one."

Huang Yanchen had put away her smile, and asked coldly, "When's the next one?"

"At least two days from now."

The soldier observed Huang Yanchen closely and smiled. Then he changed his words. "I am the commander of the tenth base of the Canglong Army, Chi Zhongshan. I believe you've heard my name. It wouldn't be difficult for me to manage to get a few ship tickets for this voyage."

Chapter 1040 - Son of Deity?

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Huang Yanchen didn't really know about Chi Zhongshan's name.

But she did care about the tickets for the Void World Ship. So she asked, "Commander Chi, what's the price of your tickets?"

"The price?"

Chi Zhongshan shook his head gracefully and handed two crystal cards to Huang Yanchen. "Two tickets will cost not a single Spiritual Crystal. I will give you two beauties as gifts. It happens that I am going to the Blue Dragon Void World as well. May I invite you two come with me?"

Huang Yanchen didn't accept Chi Zhongshan's tickets, but looked at Zhang Ruochen with tenderness and love, as if she was asking for his opinion.

Chi Zhongshan only took out two tickets, trying to seduce the two beauties to get on the ship with him.

They were more than just two ship tickets. They stood for many treasures in the Blue Dragon Void World.

Plus, Chi Zhongshan had the identity as being a commander of the Canglong Army, and the cultivation of a Ninth Level Half-Saint. Going with him would mean having the protection of a powerful figure.

Such tempting conditions would attract any woman.

Chi Zhongshan was confident about himself. After all, Zhang Ruochen was just a nobody in his eyes, who didn't deserve to compete with him.

If there were any really strong figures in the Sacred City, how could Chi Zhongshan not know?

All monks surrounding them looked at Zhang Ruochen with pity.

He was innocent, but he had the thing that all people wanted to take.

The boy had no strong background, but travelled with two extraordinary beauties. The way he chose was a total shame on himself.

Of course, some monks believed that Chi Zhongshan was too despicable. He had scared the young man with his identity and cultivation, and then tempted the two beauties with two ship tickets. What a monster!

Zhang Ruochen stared at Huang Yanchen and frowned.

He didn't expect that Huang Yanchen would look at him with such a look. Wasn't she inviting trouble?

With the way she looked at him, if Zhang Ruochen didn't handle the trouble the hard way, he would be laughed at by all monks onsite.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen didn't fear this trouble. The ten commanders of the Canglong Army had been on his list long before. He had been anxious enough that he didn't have the chance to attack them, and now one had come to his face voluntarily.

Why should Zhang Ruochen treat him with courtesy?

Zhang Ruochen walked to the front of Huang Yanchen to face Chi Zhongshan directly, and said, "If Commander Chi does have extra ship tickets, can I have one, too?"

Coldness flashed in Chi Zhongshan's eyes. It was bold of him to stand out and ask.

"Sorry, I only have three tickets. The last one is saved for myself," said Chi Zhongshan.

"Since you have three tickets, I will take them all."

Zhang Ruochen reached out a hand and asked for them directly.

Chi Zhongshan's face turned dark. "Didn't you hear my words?"

"Didn't you hear my words? Give me your three tickets, and I will pardon your offensive behaviors."

Zhang Ruochen was strong-minded. Coldness could be seen in his eyes.

Dozens of soldiers in armor of the Canglong Army came around and surrounded the three at the center. But Zhang Ruochen kept a cold face and showed no fear at all.

Monks nearby all talked in low voices with smiling faces.

"The boy is bold to argue with Chi Zhongshan in the base of the Canglong Army."

"Only two explanations for it. He has either a strong background, or a dumb head. In my eyes, he's the latter. Hehe!"

Chi Zhongshan stared at Zhang Ruochen with a scathing and scornful look. "The man is an evil remainder of the last dynasty. Capture him and throw him in jail."

Dozens of soldiers of the Canglong Army picked up their lances to attack Zhang Ruochen.

"How dare you!"

Zhang Ruochen gave a scornful hum. The power of blood red Qi spread out and threw all the soldiers of the Canglong Army backwards. They all fell on the ground, being badly battered.

Each soldier had blood stains on their body. Apparently they were wounded severely and couldn't get up from the ground.

"You have the power."

Chi Zhongshan stepped forward with heavy strength, surprisingly pressing the ground inwards. "Let me deal with you, see what you've got and how you could dare to fight the Canglong Army."

A strong strand of Holy Qi burst out to cause ripples to attack Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen appeared to be calm. He raised his palm and poured Holy Qi into the Seven Kill Boxing Glove. The dazzling light of blood covered up his arm.

All monks onsite could testify that it was Chi Zhongshan who had deliberately picked a fight with him, and even tried to capture him as an evil remainder of the last dynasty.

As the Son of Deity of the Blood God Sect, how could he stand it?

Even if Zhang Ruochen did kill Chi Zhongshan, the Canglong Army wouldn't dare to punish him. After all, the Son of the Deity of the Blood God Sect was not a common person.

The fight was about to happen. And an old voice was heard.

“Stop it.”

An old man in blood robes who was about the age of 60 rushed out from Zhang Ruochen's back. He turned into a blood shadow and crashed into Chi Zhongshan.

Even though Chi Zhongshan had a high cultivation, he had to step back for dozens of meters. His arms were hurt and numb.

But the old man in blood robes didn't move at all. His eyes were sharp. And he didn't treat Chi Zhongshan with seriousness.

Chi Zhongshan felt surprised to himself. With his cultivation at the beginning of the Ninth Level Half-Saint, he shouldn't have been hit back by the enemy so easily! How high was the cultivation of the enemy?

The old man in blood robes hummed with despidement. “Chi Zhongshan, do you think you can do whatever you want as a general of the Canglong Army? How dare you offend the Son of Deity of our Blood God Sect?”

The Son of Deity of the Blood God Sect?

All monks opened their eyes widely and stared at Zhang Ruochen with shock.

They came to the realization that Zhang Ruochen did have the background to argue with Chi Zhongshan.

It was known that the Son of Deity of the Blood God Sect had once fought Kong Hongbi, the young master of the Sacred Central Crypt, for a beauty. Why would he fear Chi Zhongshan?

“The Son of Deity of the Blood God Sect is truly a womanizer. Wherever he goes, beauties surround him.”

Low voices were heard in the crowd.

The old man in blood robes bowed to Zhang Ruochen.
“Greetings, Your Highness, Son of Deity.”

Although the old man in blood robes showed up in time and did help Zhang Ruochen out, Zhang Ruochen felt lost in that he had lost a good chance to kill Chi Zhongshan.

Footsteps were heard in the back.

A crowd of monks rushed into the camp of the Canglong Army.

The crowd was led by the Saintess of the Blood God Sect, Shangguan Xianyan, and Cai Jinglun of the Cai Family. There were hundreds of them, some young, some old. They all had reached the state of Half-Saint.

The appearance of hundreds of Half-Saints at the same time created a strong shock, although there were already thousands of human elites gathering in the camp of the Canglong Army.

Most of the Half-Saints were from the Cai Family.

Some of them were family members of the Cai Family, the others were strong figures who had subordinated to it.

And the monks here were only a half of the Cai Family. The rest wouldn't go to the Blue Dragon Void World, but stayed to guard the Kunlun's Field.

Zhang Ruochen was surprised as well. He said to himself.
How powerful can a household from the Middle Ages be?

There were nine rings of Holy Light on Shangguan Xianyan's body, making her look holy. But she was a witch. Her frown

and laugh were extremely enchanting. She laughed, “The whole Blood God Sect has been looking for the Son of Deity. Look at you, you’ve come to the Sacred City for entertainment. Which beauty did you choose this time?”

Her voice was very soft, even softening some of the monks’ bones. And with her snow-white fine skin, plump breasts and butt, the pretty figure made it hard for people to stop themselves from being excited.

Shangguan Xianyan walked directly to Zhang Ruochen, and observed Huang Yanchen carefully. “She had a nice figure. But what about her face?”

All of a sudden, Shangguan Xianyan reached out a hand, which turned into dozens of shadows to attack Huang Yanchen, attempting to take the golden mask off Huang Yanchen’s face.

Zoom.

With a shake of her body, Huang Yanchen moved away like a shadow. She avoided the attack of Shangguan Xianyan easily.

It was known that Huang Yanchen had practiced in the Tianlun Mark for 15 years and taken in numerous heavenly and earth treasures. She had reached the eighth level of Half-Saint.

Although her current cultivation couldn’t compare with those on the Half-Saint Rank and the Half-Saint Outer Rank, hers was close to theirs.

How could Shangguan Xianyan touch a corner of her clothes?

Shangguan Xianyan shrank her eyes with surprise. She looked at Zhang Ruochen, and laughed. “Your little lover has a high cultivation. What’s her story?”

Zhang Ruochen felt a little headache now. He didn’t expect that he would run into monks of the Blood God Sect and Shangguan Xianyan. As it happened, things might turn out differently.

Zhang Ruochen asked, “Why should you bother asking? Go to the Chaotic World Mountain and do the business first. But, before that, I have to do another thing.”

Other commanders of the Canglong Army had come around. It was impossible for Zhang Ruochen to kill Chi Zhongshan.

But as the Son of Deity of the Blood God Sect, it would disgrace the sect if he just let Chi Zhongshan go. Even if Zhang Ruochen didn't do it himself, other monks of the Blood God Sect wouldn't withstand it.

Zhang Ruochen stared at Chi Zhongshan, and said, "Kneel. Apologize to me. Then I will forgive you."

"What did you say?"

Chi Zhongshan was furious. His hands pinched into fists.

As the commander of the Canglong Army, King of the Middle Regions of the imperial court, although less dignified than the Son of Deity of the Blood God Sect, he couldn't stand being humiliated by the enemy like that.

"Don't spoil yourself. I give you a chance. You have to cherish it," Zhang Ruochen said coldly, like a demon who had let out his fangs.

Since he was the Son of Deity of the Blood God Sect, he had to act with the Son of Deity's might.

Chapter 1041 - Told a Lie

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The new Son of Deity of the Blood God Sect was more overbearing than the words said. It had gone beyond the monks' knowledge.

People onsite left him a new comment. "He has not only lust for women, but a desire to murder. He's so badass that people should get away from him."

All the other four commanders of the Canglong Army appeared.

Yan Tong, the best of them, stood out, trying to rescue Chi Zhongshan from the situation.

The cultivation of Yan Tong had reached the peak of the Ninth Level Half-Saint. He was the No.1 of the ten commanders, also the elder brother of Yan Honglie, and a well-known figure in the Sacred City.

Because of his connection with the Canglong Army and the Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion, he could talk with some powerful saints. He had the influence several times stronger than Chi Zhongshan did.

Yan Tong put on a smile, and cupped his hands. "Your Highness, Chi Zhongshan did offend you first. I apologize to you on his behalf. And here are three drops of divine blood. Please accept them, Your Highness."

Then Yan Tong took out three drops of divine blood and handed them to Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen didn't accept them. He gave a cold glance at him, and said, "Three drops of divine blood? Even 300 drops

of divine blood are not enough to please me.”

Yan Tong’s hand stopped in midair awkwardly. A smile froze on his face, and a fleeting coldness showed in his eyes.

The Son of Deity of the Blood God Sect was so arrogant that he didn’t even respect him. Did he really think he had become the Hierarch of the Blood God Sect?

Zhang Ruochen didn’t pay attention to Yan Tong, but glared at Chi Zhongshan with coldness. “Kneel and apologize. This is your last chance.”

Three monks of the Blood God Sect stood out and activated their Saint Soul Territory. They moved around and crowded Chi Zhongshan at their center.

Shangguan Xianyan, on behalf of the Blood God Sect, had brought a few monks here to unite with the Cai Family in the Sacred City this time.

But the monks coming along with her were all powerful figures.

Especially the old man in blood robes who had thrown Chi Zhongshan back, who had reached the peak of the Ninth Level Half-Saint, comparable to Yan Tong.

“Gu Linfeng, you push me too hard...”

Chi Zhongshan roared, blood veins of his whole body standing up.

“Do it,” Zhang Ruochen ordered coldly.

The three powerful figures of the Blood God Sect acted together to attack Chi Zhongshan. None of them had a lower cultivation than Chi Zhongshan. Therefore, he couldn’t escape.

The other four commanders of the Canglong Army roared at the same time, trying to help Chi Zhongshan.

Although Chi Zhongshan had offended him first, if he got humiliated here in the base of the Canglong Army, the reputation of the Army would be taken away and laughed at by all monks in the world.

But they were stopped by other monks of the Blood God Sect.

As for other soldiers of the Canglong Army, they wouldn't dare to rush forward. It was a fight among high talents, and ordinary people would die there most certainly.

Qingmo walked to Huang Yanchen and stuck out her tongue. She passed words to Huang Yanchen silently. "Princess, Lord Zhang is so overbearing! He has become a totally different person."

"As the Son of Deity of the Blood God Sect, he would get suspected if he didn't act overbearing."

Huang Yanchen's dark blue eyes stared at Zhang Ruochen, and she smiled. "Besides, it's natural to treat different people with different attitudes."

Crack!

The sounds of two bones breaking were heard at the same time.

Chi Zhongshan's legs suffered a powerful hit and broke from their knees. He moaned and knelt on the ground.

"Gu...Linfeng..."

Chi Zhongshan shouted. He pressed his hands on the ground and tried to stand up. But he was suppressed again.

Zhang Ruochen walked to Chi Zhongshan, and collected the three ship tickets from his body. He glanced at him, and laughed. "If you had given the tickets to me earlier, there wouldn't be so much trouble."

Then, Zhang Ruochen looked at the crowd, and asked, "How much is each ticket of the Void World Ship?"

"30,000 Spiritual Crystals," someone shouted.

Zhang Ruochen took out a saintly rock and tossed it to Chi Zhongshan. He said lightly, "Business is business. I don't take things from others for free. The three ship tickets are mine. You can use the rest of the money to buy pills and cure yourself."

"Let's go."

Zhang Ruochen held three tickets in hand and went to the Void World Ship in the head, appearing to be at ease and unconventional.

A huge splash was heard in the crowd behind him.

“What a Son of Deity! He’s so generous that he has tossed a saintly rock casually.”

“To get a saintly rock, even if I had to kneel for three days and nights with broken legs, I’d say yes.”

Another monk sneered. “Don’t you know that a man prefers death to humiliation? Who’s Chi Zhongshan? He’s a figure who will probably become a saint in the future! The Son of Deity of the Blood God Sect has made him kneel in public. It will surely become a stain on his whole life.”

“Although Gu Linfeng is ferocious, he is a man of principle.”

“Do you call that principle? It is a blunt humiliation. He tossed a saintly rock, but Chi Zhongshan would never pick it up.”

...

Chi Zhongshan’s eyes were bloodshot. He felt angry and ashamed, so he shouted and hit the saintly rock with a strong blow of his fist.

With a bang, the saintly rock was smashed.

Patterns appeared on the ground like a large thick cobweb.

“Gu Linfeng, I will never let it go!”

The Holy Qi of Chi Zhongshan spread up, shaking some innocent monks away.

The other four commanders of the Canglong Army all appeared to be furious.

Yan Tong’s eyes were grave and gloomy. Finally he pressed down his anger, and comforted Chi Zhongshan. “Gu Linfeng is arrogant because of his identity as a Son of Deity of the Blood God Sect. His own cultivation is low. After we arrive in the Blue Dragon Void World, we will surely have a chance to get back at him. Cheer up, now.”

“After I arrive in the Blue Dragon Void World, I will break his body into thousands of parts.”

Chi Zhongshan used his Holy Qi to cover up his whole body. He floated in midair, with the look of the strongest murderous intention.

Zhang Ruochen walked with Huang Yanchen and got on the Void World Ship. Other monks all fled away, worrying that they would offend this ruthless person of the Blood God Sect.

Zhang Ruochen appeared to be at ease. As a Son of Deity, he had to build up his might.

Zhang Ruochen passed words to Huang Yanchen silently. “Senior Sister, you just brought trouble to me on purpose. It doesn’t seem like you.”

“Really?”

Huang Yanchen said, “To my knowledge, you once had a fierce fight with the Young Master of the Sacred Central Crypt for a woman. And you even turned your back on the Demonic Sect and killed two saints of the Demonic Sect for her. Is it true?”

Since Gu Linfeng was Zhang Ruochen, the thing that they had done in the headquarters of the Black Market in the Tiantai State should have been done by him alone.

How could she not feel jealous that her husband had taken the risk to offend both the Sacred Central Crypt and the Demonic Sect and fight them, for another woman?

Huang Yanchen had the Gold Phantom Mask on, so Zhang Ruochen couldn’t make out her expression.

Zhang Ruochen laughed, “She’s just a friend.”

“So, you can fight the world for a friend, but not for me?”

Huang Yanchen stared at Zhang Ruochen straightly.

Kong Lanyou had practiced for 800 years and yet had an innocent mind. But Huang Yanchen had only practiced for 15 years, and she had grown so sophisticated. A single question of hers was too hard for Zhang Ruochen to answer.

Zhang Ruochen moved his lips and said nothing.

The more he said, the more mistakes he would make.

Huang Yanchen spoke casually, and stopped walking all of a sudden. She looked at Zhang Ruochen. “Chen, why have you become the Son of Deity of the Blood God Sect?”

Zhang Ruochen saw that Huang Yanchen stopped asking and felt a little relieved. “I had some important errands to deal with. It was complete coincidence that I competed for the position of the Son of Deity.”

Huang Yanchen ground her teeth slightly. “But I heard that the Son of Deity and the Saintess of the Blood God Sect will mate and practice together in the future.”

Zhang Ruochen knew that it wouldn't be easy for him to get away, so he tried to calm himself down. “I didn't do it for Shangguan Xianyan.”

“So what's your purpose? What's the errand that's so important you can't even tell me?”

Apparently, he had joined the Blood God Sect to save the Saint Lady.

But if he told her, wouldn't things get worse?

“Alright! I was to approach Shangguan Xianyan when I fought for the position of the Son of Deity.”

Now he had to pick an easier side. He didn't want to involve the Saint Lady.

After all, the Saint Lady was too outstanding. Once Huang Yanchen found out that he had a past with the Saint Lady, she would surely feel self-conscious, with a sense of crisis.

It wouldn't be good for him nor her.

So he'd better try to hide it from her.

Zhang Ruochen put on a serious face, mixing truth with lies. “The Grand Elder of the Shangguan Clan, Saint King Que, was my teacher. He should know the things happened 800 years ago. But from the things that have happened lately, I

doubt that the Shangguan Clan had deep connections with the Immortal Vampires.”

Huang Yanchen said, “You suspect that the coup that happened 800 years had things to do with the Immortal Vampires, so you approached Shangguan Xianyan for a chance to get in the Shangguan Clan and find out?”

Zhang Ruochen nodded, and said, “Even if the coup had nothing to do with the Immortal Vampires, I have to investigate it. And I want to know whether my teacher is still alive.”

But Huang Yanchen shook her head, “No, no...”

“What’s wrong?” Zhang Ruochen didn’t change his face.

Huang Yanchen said, “You have the ability to change your appearance, which makes it so easy for you to get in the Shangguan Clan. Why should you approach Shangguan Xianyan in the Blood God Sect? Wouldn’t it be a little harder in this way?”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t expect Huang Yanchen to have become so cautious now. He found it a little hard to adapt to it.

He told a lie, and now he had to tell more lies to make up for it. At the end, he would expose more weak points.

Meanwhile, the wind of fragrance came to them.

Then, rings of white saint lights spread out between Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen. An extremely beautiful woman stood in the middle of them.

Shangguan Xianyan smiled with enchantment. “Your Highness, the way you dealt with Chi Zhongshan was full of the character of the Blood God Sect.”

The Cai Family and the Blood God Sect had ordered the ship tickets in advance. Hundreds of Half-Saints all had gotten onboard the same ship with Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen.

“Follow me. I have some important errands to discuss with you alone. It’s top secret to our sect. Nobody should know it besides us.”

Shangguan Xianyan added “alone” deliberately. She glanced at Huang Yanchen with demonstration and provocation. Then, she reached out a soft hand to catch Zhang Ruochen’s wrist, and walked to a cabin underneath the deck, appearing to be intimate with him.

Zhang Ruochen was struggling to find an answer to Huang Yanchen’s questions. The coming of Shangguan Xianyan helped him out.

But wouldn’t the misunderstanding between them grow deeper?

Chapter 1042 - Coming to the Chaotic World Mountain Again

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“Going to the Blue Dragon Void World this time, there will surely be wars, fighting for resources between sects and even races. Higher level members of the Blood God Sect have made the decision to unite the Shangguan Clan and the Cai Family to take advantage over the others.”

Shangguan Xianyan looked serious and told Zhang Ruochen some of the arrangements in the Blue Dragon Void World.

Zhang Ruochen hadn't been in the Blood God Sect when the plan was made.

At first, the Hierarch of the Blood God Sect had appointed Shangguan Xianyan, Hai Lingyin and Wei Longxing to command all monks of the Blood God Sect.

But as the Son of Deity reappeared, Shangguan Xianyan had to tell him the plan.

Zhang Ruochen held his arms and nodded. “Both the Shangguan Clan and the Cai Family are great households from the Middle Ages. It's a strong union that the Blood God Sect has made with them. We will be invincible.”

Shangguan Xianyan laughed. “Monks of the Blood God Sect and the Shangguan Clan have gone to the Chaotic World Mountain through other wormholes.”

“What else?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“Nothing for the moment.”

There was a tempting smile on the crystal-clear cheeks of Shangguan Xianyan. “What’s the fun in talking about the business? How about we talk about...other things?”

Her lively eyes winked slightly and stared at Zhang Ruochen with touching expressions.

And the Void World Ship had a violent shake.

Shangguan Xianyan’s soft body fell forward and leaned on Zhang Ruochen.

But Zhang Ruochen took a step back before she fell. Shangguan Xianyan failed to lean on him, and almost fell on the ground awkwardly.

Shangguan Xianyan looked at Zhang Ruochen with hidden bitterness. “Why did Your Highness step so far away? Am I going to eat you?”

Zhang Ruochen touched his nose and walked to her step by step. He laughed. “That’s not true. But I don’t like proactive women. I prefer taking control.”

Then, Zhang Ruochen raised his hands to press forward at a quick speed. Surprisingly, he had gone through the nine rings of Holy light and grasped Shangguan Xianyan’s arms and pressed her against the wall.

Shangguan Xianyan’s soft and tender body were completely lifted above the ground. Only her toes could touch the floor slightly.

Zhang Ruochen’s hands clamped on her arms like pliers and also blocked her veins, making her unable to move.

Shangguan Xianyan’s face lost color. She was out of breath. And her breasts moved up and down fiercely like the surf.

She didn’t know that the cultivation of Gu Linfeng was so strong.

Catching her was as easy as catching a chicken.

Zhang Ruochen looked at her eyes closely, then her tall nose and crystal-clear lips.

At last, he stared at the deep cleavage and the white skin in front of Shangguan Xianyan's chest. He laughed. "You have some stuff. You can't wait for it, can you?"

Shangguan Xianyan's lips shook, afraid of speaking.

Zhang Ruochen finally released her and waved. "Whatever you are thinking about, you'd better let it go. Otherwise, you'll be the unlucky one. Go out now! I have no interest in you tonight."

Shangguan Xianyan didn't react to his words. She tidied up her messy clothes and walked out of the cabin like a shadow.

Huang Yanchen looked at Shangguan Xianyan with curiosity, standing outside.

Shangguan Xianyan also looked at Huang Yanchen with a cunning smile. She stuck out her little tongue to touch her lips, and chuckled. "His Highness is really a romantic talent. I admire his ability in certain aspects more and more."

The Void World Ship started to fly into the wormhole with the propulsion of the Formation and do the Space Jump, making a buzz.

The giant pressure gushed to all the monks from all directions.

Zhang Ruochen closed his eyes and held his breath to feel the spatial waves caused by the Void World Ship crossing the wormhole.

As long as he could understand the truth of the wormhole, Zhang Ruochen could use the power of space to build a wormhole to do the Space Jump by himself.

Spatial Move could only step over hundreds of meters, but Space Jump could cross thousands of kilometers' distance and even two Void Worlds.

The difference between them was incomparable.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen couldn't do the Space Jump with his current cultivation and spiritual power.

As long as he could practice the Great Spatial Move to its utmost, he would make remarkable achievements.

According to the record of the Time and Space Secret Guide:

Each Great Spatial Move would enable the person to cross the space of dozens of kilometers. If the practitioner had a delicate control over the Spatial Rules, he could cross hundreds of kilometers.

Boom.

The ship took a violent shake, entering a dark and cold Void Space.

A more than 500-kilometer-long black mountain lay in front of the ship. The rocks were covered by a giant Battle Formation, giving off grand and magnificent Qi.

Chaotic World Mountain.

It was the transfer station of all Void Worlds outside the Realm, and also the base of the Void World Soldiers.

Recently, the Chaotic World Mountain had been busier than before. Large arrays of Void World Ships flew to it from different directions all the time, and transported monks of Kunlun's Field here like hummingbirds coming back to their nests.

Apparently, they all targeted the Blue Dragon Void World.

Luckily, monks got transported to the Blue Dragon Void World each day. Otherwise, vast as the Chaotic World Mountain was, it wouldn't hold the human monks who were coming endlessly.

Zhang Ruochen walked out of the cabin and stepped on the deck. He looked to the Chaotic World Mountain and saw the thickly dotted human shadows. He was a little shocked, and said, "How vast is the Kunlun's Field!? How many talents!?"

Facing hundreds of Half-Saints, figures on the Half-Saint Rank would have to flee at once.

And here were more than a hundred Half-Saints.

Even a strong figure like the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, No. 3 on the Half-Saint Rank, or the Royal Prince of

the Kun, No. 6, would die here once they intruded upon the Chaotic World Mountain.

Huang Yanchen came to Zhang Ruochen's side and looked to the Chaotic World Mountain as well. "You'd better watch out for Shangguan Xianyan. It is known that the Saintess of the Blood God Sect is not just the mate of the Son of Deity. Once the Son of Deity dies, she will become the future Hierarch."

Zhang Ruochen said, "Do you think that I've been enchanted by her? Or are you jealous of her?"

Huang Yanchen gave Zhang Ruochen a cold glance and looked in another direction. "You have to figure out the situation. This time the Blood God Sect has united with the Shangguan Clan and the Cai Family. But only one person could communicate with all three forces. The person is Shangguan Xianyan. And she was the initiator of this union."

Zhang Ruochen looked in the direction that Huang Yanchen was looking toward the Void World Ship. He saw Shangguan Xianyan's figure.

Now, she was standing with two leaders of the Cai Family, Cai Jinglun and Cai Yunji, talking. Nobody knew what they were discussing.

Zhang Ruochen rounded his lips. "So what?"

Huang Yanchen said, "It would be easy for her to kill you once we entered the Blue Dragon Void World."

"If she did have the ability, how about we put her as the future Hierarch?" Zhang Ruochen still smiled.

Even Qingmo didn't want to watch this. "Lord Zhang, wake up. Don't let that witch confuse you. Otherwise, it would be terrible."

"How terrible would it be?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

Qingmo couldn't answer this, so she looked at Huang Yanchen, seeking help.

Huang Yanchen said no more words. She gave Zhang Ruochen a cold look and fell silent.

Arriving at the Chaotic World Mountain, the ship slowly landed and people stepped onto the ground.

Monks of the Blood God Sect, led by Hai Lingyin and Wei Longxing, had arrived at the Chaotic World Mountain earlier. They waited below.

Seeing Shangguan Xianyan getting off, they bowed to her. “Greetings, Saintess Your Highness.”

They both had stronger cultivation and talents than Shangguan Xianyan. But they were lower in identity and status than her. Naturally, they had to bow to her.

Among the monks of the Blood God Sect, a voice was heard. “Master Gu!”

Then, a red monkey rushed out to Zhang Ruochen. It laughed, “I told them that he would come along. They didn’t believe me!”

The red monkey was Sun Dadi.

The appearance of Zhang Ruochen was a surprise to them all. Even Hai Lingyin and Wei Longxing were a little shocked.

Then, all the monks of the Blood God Sect bowed to Zhang Ruochen as he passed by them.

Shangguan Xianyan walked to Zhang Ruochen, and said, “Leading figures of the Blood God Sect, the Shangguan Clan, and the Cai Family will go to the World Pub to negotiate the details regarding entering the Blue Dragon Void World. Will you join us?”

Before Zhang Ruochen could talk, Sun Dadi shouted, “Since it is a meeting between the leaders of the three forces, how can it happen without the Son of Deity of our Blood God Sect? How can it happen? I’m asking, how can it possibly happen?”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t want to join the meeting. Nor did he want to get involved in the union of the three forces.

As Huang Yanchen had said, Shangguan Xianyan wasn’t as attractive as she appeared to be. She was surely a dangerous woman, whom Zhang Ruochen wanted very much to keep his distance from.

But in front of his people, as the Son of Deity of the Blood God Sect, Zhang Ruochen had to go.

At last, Zhang Ruochen made a gesture of inviting people.
“Let’s go!”

Monks of the three forces gathered like a flood, walking to the World Pub in mighty contingents. All other monks dodged aside.

Chapter 1043 - Ten Leading Figures

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

All leading figures gathered in the World Pub. They were all famous figures who had huge pressure on other monks.

There were four leaders from the Blood God Sect: Gu Linfeng, Shangguan Xianyan, Hai Lingyin and Wei Longxing.

Among them, Hai Lingyin and Wei Longxing were top figures, supreme beings under saints. The Son of Deity, Gu Linfeng, and the Saintess, Shangguan Xianyan, appeared to be weak.

Surely, Shangguan Xianyan had a special identity, commanding many powerful figures of the Blood God Sect and the Shangguan Clan. If put in the fight, Hai Lingyin and Wei Longwei wouldn't be able to defeat her.

The weakest person in their eyes was Gu Linfeng. He only had a cultivation of Fifth Level Half-Saint, and a few loyal subordinates.

Apart from his identity as the Son of Deity, he had nothing.

In the eyes of monks of the Cai Family and the Shangguan Clan, Shangguan Xianyan was the true leader of the Blood God Sect. They looked at Gu Linfeng with much disdain, contempt and mockery.

There were three leading figures of the Cai Family.

Other than Cai Jinglun and Cai Yunji, there was an old man, the General Manager of the Cai Family Saint Mansion, Cai Jin.

Cai Jin was a Ninth Level Half-Saint, who was more than 200 years old. Although he was no longer young and his vigor had faded away, he was surely an extraordinary person to have become the general manager of a household from the Middle Ages.

Cai Jin's reason for coming to the Blue Dragon Void World this time was to find the saint medicine for him to become a saint.

There were also three leaders of the Shangguan Clan.

The leading person was a man about the age of 30. He looked pale, making people feel that he was sick.

The man named Shangguan Yi was the No. 1 most powerful figure under saints in the Shangguan Clan. He was also in the Half-Saint Outer Rank.

The other two leaders were a pair of young and beautiful twins, Shangguan Linglong and Shangguan Nihong.

No simple figures could have become the leaders.

The talents of Shangguan Linglong and Shangguan Nihong were no less than those of Shangguan Xianyan.

They both had sat in the seats of kings at the Kunlun Heir's banquet. And they both had fought in the Sword Technique Conference hosted by the Yin and Yang Sect on behalf of the Taichi Sect.

They had the strengths of both Shangguan Clan and the Taichi Sect. And, they had both drunk the Supreme Saint Heavenly Tea at the Kunlun's Heir's banquet. Their cultivations surged in recent times, almost getting to the Fourth Level Half-Saint.

The Supreme Saint Heavenly Tea was made of the Saintly Sources of eight beast Supreme Saints with 37 kinds of thousand-year-old saint medicine after 300 years of refinery.

Taking the Supreme Saint Heavenly Tea, their cultivations had surged and surpassed monks of their generation.

It was imaginable that once they acquired some heavenly treasures in the Blue Dragon Void World and improved their cultivations, they would become stronger than Shangguan Yi.

There were ten leading figures of the three forces.

Among them, the top three figures were the new Second Place in the imperial examination, Cai Jinglun from the Cai Family, Shangguan Yi from the Shangguan Clan, and Hai Lingyin from the Blood God Sect.

Shangguan Yi spoke first. “According to our Head, after we’ve found the Saintly Source Sacred Liquid and saint medicine in the Blue Dragon Void World, we should give them to Shangguan Linglong, Shangguan Nihong and the Saintess of the Blood God Sect first. As long as they could reach the Ninth Level of Half-Saints, we would have three top powerful figures by then.”

“I think we are all clear that the more top figures we have, the more freedom we would have in the Blue Dragon Void World.”

Cai Jin laughed. “Isn’t the Saintess of the Blood God Sect also a member of the Shangguan Clan?”

Shangguan Yi said, “The resources in the Blue Dragon Void World are rich enough to cultivate more than just the three of them. Why should General Manager Cai Jin argue about it?”

Cai Jinglun stopped Cai Lun’s words. “I agree with this arrangement. According to our Head, the resources we got in the Blue Dragon Void World would be used firstly to improve our cultivations. Then we could collect the treasures and take them back to Kunlun’s Field.”

“Same with our Shangguan Clan Leader.”

Shangguan Yi laughed and then kept coughing, as if he was seriously sick.

The people went on to discuss and arrange many things.

But nobody had asked for Gu Linfeng’s opinions. They deliberately left him out.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t bother to get involved. He sat aside by himself at ease, drinking tea.

Someone did remember him after a long while.

Cai Jin's old eyes stared at Zhang Ruochen, who was sitting beside Shangguan Xianyan. He said, "We've decided to take up a nice spot on the spiritual mountain after our three households have entered the Blue Dragon Void World. Then we will spread out and search for heavenly treasures. In this way, we could either attack or retreat to defend ourselves. What do you think, Son of Deity, Your Highness?"

Other leading figures all stared at Zhang Ruochen with different expressions.

Shangguan Linglong, Shangguan Nihong and Cai Yunji all stared at him with contempt. After all, the Son of Deity of the Blood God Sect had a notorious name. Not only did he have lust for women, he was terribly overbearing, looking nothing like a man who could achieve great deeds.

And he had only reached the Fifth State of Half-Saint. Therefore, few people onsite treated him seriously.

Zhang Ruochen laughed, "No. Just make the decision by yourself. I just thought about an important errand that needs to be dealt with. I'll leave now. Excuse me. Excuse me."

Zhang Ruochen stood up and walked out of the World Pub after he finished his words.

Cai Yunji slammed his fists on the table and sneered, "Xianyan, why did your Blood God Sect choose such a useless Son of Deity? In my opinion, the Blood God Sect will come to an end once it's fallen into his hands."

"It's our Son of Deity's character. Never mind him. Don't let this hurt our friendships."

Shangguan Xianyan's beautiful eyes looked at the gate as she put on a weird smile.

Walking out of the World Pub, Zhang Ruochen went to a secret place. Then he used his spiritual power to pass the word.

In a short time, a slight ripple of spiritual power appeared in the air.

Zoom—

An old man arrived, crossing the space. He walked out and kneeled on one knee on the ground. "Greetings, Your Highness, Son of Deity."

The old man was Zhao Shiqi, the Fifth Banner Lord of the First Base of the Nether Heavenly Palace.

It was not widely known that Zhao Shiqi had been taken in by Zhang Ruochen, becoming a spy placed inside the Blood God Sect by Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen asked, "Has your spiritual power reached the 48th level?"

Zhao Shiqi was a little delighted. "Were it not for the cultivation of the Son of Deity, I could never have achieved it in such a short time."

Before he had left the Blood God Sect, Zhang Ruochen had once visited Zhao Shiqi alone. And he had given him three dewdrops on the first leaf, "Blue Dragon," of the Seven Star Sacred Tuber.

With these three dewdrops, Zhao Shiqi made great progress in his spiritual power.

"No wonder the Seven Star Sacred Tuber is the sacred medicine. Even the dewdrops on it have such magical power."

Zhang Ruochen nodded, and took out another jade bottle. He looked at Zhao Shiqi, and said, "There are 30 dewdrops of the Blue Dragon leaf in the bottle."

Zhao Shiqi gave a fervent look.

Just three dewdrops had improved his spiritual power from the 47th level to the 48th level.

Getting 30 dewdrops would give him a big chance to reach the 49th level.

Zhang Ruochen didn't hand the bottle to Zhao Shiqi directly. He asked, "Don't you know anything about the Saintess?"

Zhao Shiqi said in a hurry, "I'm about to tell you, Your Highness. The Saintess has spent lots of resources to buy people over. Several Banner Kings in the Nether Heavenly

Palace have collaborated with her. It is also said that Wei Longxing also has a close connection with her. People saw them plotting together. The Saintess might want to aim at you, Son of Deity. Your Highness must be careful.”

Since Zhao Shiqi had noticed something different about the Saintess; Shangguan Xianyan must have plotted something.

Zhang Ruochen nodded his head thoughtfully, then he threw the bottle over. “Improve your spiritual power to the 49th level as soon as possible. I have special missions for you in the Blue Dragon Void World.”

Zhao Shiqi was more than a Spiritual Half-Saint, but also a Beast Tamer. After they arrived in the Blue Dragon Void World, he would be put to good use.

Sometimes, a Beast Tamer was more useful than a bunch of Ninth Level Half-Saints.

Getting the Blue Dragon leaf dewdrops, Zhao Shiqi felt excited. He retreated at once to refine the dewdrops and improve his spiritual power.

Zhang Ruochen put his hands behind his back, and said to himself with a slight laugh, “I didn’t see this before, but the witch is truly ambitious. She seduced me first, trying to get me to let my guard down.”

All of a sudden, a wave appeared in the space surrounding him.

Zhang Ruochen felt something was different, and raised his head to look above him. He saw a jade rune hovering about 30 meters above the ground, completely blocking the space surrounding him.

Meanwhile, a middle-aged man in blood robes crossed the light curtain to walk to him. He laughed. “The Saintess did underestimate you. Even she didn’t expect that Your Highness had placed a spy inside the Sect. Everyone thinks that Your Highness is just a useless person who only has a lust for women. We were so wrong.”

“So you were sent by Shangguan Xianyan?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“I forgot to introduce myself. I’m Qin Yu, Banner King of the Fourth Base of the Nether Heavenly Palace.”

Qin Yu held a black lance in his hand. The tip of the lance was blood red, giving out fiery light.

To have become a Banner King, Qin Yu did have a strong cultivation, almost getting to the middle of the Ninth Level Half-Saint.

Zhang Ruochen showed no fear, and laughed. “Is Shangguan Xianyan so desperate to fight against me?”

Chapter 1044 - Facing Each Other

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Author's Note: Huang Yanchen knew that Zhang Ruochen was the Crown Prince of the Sacred Central Empire 800 years ago, so she called him "Chen Ge." This was not a mistake. Zhang Ruochen called her "Senior Sister." It was not wrong either.

...

Qin Yu didn't answer his question, but only said, "What's the meaning of asking so many questions? You are gonna die anyway."

It was a piece of cake for a powerful figure at the middle stage of the Ninth Level Half-Saint to kill a Fifth Level Half-Saint. It was doomed that the Son of Deity would be killed by his lance.

Chi chi.

Qin Yu drew the lance on the ground, then fire burst out from its tip and enveloped the whole space.

To end the fight quickly, Qin Yu was prepared to give his whole strength.

Zoom.

His arms shook a little.

The black lance changed into an angry dragon and lit up thousands of lines of flame. It stabbed toward the center of Zhang Ruochen's eyebrows.

The lance was getting close to penetrating Zhang Ruochen's head, but it slowed down all of a sudden.

In this second, the time was put on pause.

“Life-death Changes of Scale Eight.”

Zhang Ruochen used the most powerful move of the Scales Sword Technique. With a flash of the sword light, a light curve was formed. And Qin Yu's head flew away in the next instant.

Qin Yu had wanted to end the fight quickly. So did Zhang Ruochen.

Qin Yu's head hit the ground, making a pounding sound. His eyes were still opened widely, displaying the feeling of shocked. He asked with a hoarse voice, “Who...are...you?”

“Your head has been cut off, and you are still alive?”

Zhang Ruochen pressed his hand down through space. The pressing of his Holy Qi crushed Qin Yu's head.

As for Qin Yu's Half-Saint Light, Zhang Ruochen took it and threw it into the monster ape in the Scroll World.

The Ancient Abyss Sword flew out and refined the lance at the level of a Hundred-pattern Saint Weapon. Dozens of inscriptions inside its sword body increased immediately.

Burning Qin Yu's corpse into dust, Zhang Ruochen then took off the rune hovering in midair and held it in his palm.

The block went off immediately. And the surrounding space showed up again.

“It's worth studying how such a rune was able to block the space.”

Zhang Ruochen used another strand of spiritual power and poured it inside the rune to detect its inscriptions.

It was an advanced rune which had a large amount of abstruse inscriptions. It was surely the work of a spiritual saint.

“What a surprise that he had used the Five Elements Inscriptions to copy a rune from spatial inscriptions. Once the rune was activated, it could communicate with Spatial Rules

and isolate the space. Although it is a little complicated, it's practical," Zhang Ruochen laughed.

Zhang Ruochen could refine a similar rune by himself. He could carve spatial inscriptions directly inside the runes.

The way was easier, but the runes would work better.

Zhang Ruochen didn't plan to refine similar runes, for he could isolate and block the space by releasing the Space Domain. Why should he seek the help of a rune?

Zhang Ruochen put the rune away, and said to himself, "Murder has begun before we land on the Blue Dragon Void World. Last time's warning to her seems to have taken no effect."

Zhang Ruochen found Huang Yanchen and Qingmo first, then called Sun Dadi and Zhao Shiqi silently.

Not long after, the five people and one cat met together.

"I just got assassinated."

Zhang Ruochen told them everything happened directly.

"Killer sent by the Saintess?"

Zhao Shiqi changed his face into shock. Apparently he didn't expect the enemy to take moves so quickly.

"Maybe and maybe not. But she has something to do with it," Zhang Ruochen said.

Sun Dadi screeched, and said with startles, "The Saintess wants to kill you? I thought that she was in secret love with you! Did the love...turn into hatred...?"

Sun Dadi looked at Huang Yanchen as he said the words, as if he was asking if it had something to do with her.

Zhao Shiqi appeared to be calm. He asked, "What's your plan, Your Highness?"

"Kill her."

Huang Yanchen was determined. A strand of coldness gushed out. She had regarded Shangguan Xianyan as an eyesore for a long time, and was ready to attack in extreme ways.

Zhao Shiqi was scared to sweat. He tried to convince her out of it, “We would get punished by the Sect Rules if we kill the Saintess without evidence. Besides, Shangguan Xianyan is surrounded by powerful figures, and she had a good relation with both the Cai Family and the Shangguan Clan. Even if we could kill her, we wouldn’t get away with it.”

Even the careless Sun Dadi put on a serious face, and said, “What should we do? Wouldn’t it be more dangerous to stay with her?”

Apparently, Sun Dadi stood firmly with Zhang Ruochen. He considered things from Zhang Ruochen’s view.

Now, there seemed to be only one choice left for Zhang Ruochen.

It’s to flee right away.

Zhang Ruochen glanced at them, and laughed. “Let’s go. Let’s meet the Saintess.”

It was not his style to be scared off by a Saintess as a Son of Deity.

Even if he had to leave, he had to tell Shangguan Xianyan first that he was capable of fighting her.

Zhao Shiqin’s face lost color because of fear. He didn’t expect that the Son of Deity would make such a decision. Wasn’t he afraid of walking to the death?

But Huang Yanchen looked delighted and followed him before others did.

...

...

In a courtyard of the World Pub.

Shangguan Xianyan stood at the center of nine layers of saint light. She scolded with coldness, “Wei Longxing took the liberty to make the decision by himself. Who gave you the permission to attack Gu Linfeng now?”

Wei Longxing sat on the stone stool. He had put on the five-colored saint armor. The fierce might of him made him like an

unrivalled god of war.

He didn't change his face, and laughed. "Gu Linfeng had an extraordinary talent. If he found the resource in the Blue Dragon Void World, he would become an unrivalled figure immediately. Who could fight him by then? The earlier we get rid of him, the better."

Shangguan Xianyan gave it a careful thought, and calmed down. Light flickered in her eyes. "Next time, you can't make the decision without my permission."

Wei Longxing's cultivation was high enough to almost compare with figures on the Half-Saint Outer Rank. Apparently he didn't treat Shangguan Xianyan seriously.

But he was a little afraid of the old man standing behind her.

The old man was a great saint of the Blood God Sect, also the most powerful last resort of her.

The Hierarchy of the Blood God Sect had used a secret method to borrow the remaining power of the Blood God through sacrifice, to have sealed the cultivation of this great saint and suppressed his cultivation to the highest limit of the Half-Saint.

The seal wasn't as simple as sealing his cultivation. It was complicated and dangerous.

In general, if the old man didn't crack his seal and release his cultivation in the state of saint, he would not crack the space of the Blue Dragon Void World.

Although the old man may have almost same body strength and cultivation of Wei Longxing.

But his understanding of the Saintly Way and his achievement in Saint Spell were far ahead of Wei Longxing. Wei Longxing couldn't win him in fights.

Shangguan Xianyan asked, "Who did you send over?"

"Qin Yu," Wei Longxing said.

Shangguan Xianyan nodded slightly. "It is easy for Qin Yu to kill Gu Linfeng."

In fact, Gu Linfeng in Shangguan Xianyan's eyes was just a proud person who had an extraordinary talent. He had neither real strength nor brain. It wouldn't be hard to deal with him.

After Gu Linfeng died, she would surely become the future Hierarch of the Blood God Sect.

After all, the Blood God Sect couldn't select the third Son of Deity. They couldn't make an exception like that.

Time passed by, but Qin Yu didn't return.

"Could there be any incidents?"

Shangguan Xianyan slightly frowned her black brows.

"It can't be. Qin Yu's cultivation is much strong enough to kill Zhang Ruochen," Wei Longxing was confident.

A sound was heard outside the door to the courtyard.

"You want to take my life with just a Qin Yu? Haven't you underestimated me?"

Gu Linfeng appeared in the courtyard when the last word was heard.

Seeing Gu Linfeng in person, even Shangguan Xianyan and Wei Longxing felt hard to calm down.

It was one thing that Qin Yu had failed to kill Gu Linfeng.

Why should Gu Linfeng come to them? Maybe he had ways to deal with them?

At the minute, Shangguan Xianyan found it hard to read Gu Linfeng. His doings were totally against common sense.

Fierce might was given from Zhang Ruochen's body. He looked totally different than his normal days. He stared at Shangguan Xianyan and Wei Longxing, and said, "Say it! Who wanted to kill me?"

Shangguan Xianyan stayed silent and didn't say a word, trying to figure out whether Gu Linfeng had secret methods.

Wei Longxing was only shocked at the beginning. He soon recovered from it and stood up. He said with strength, "I sent Qin Yu to kill you. Why? You are unhappy about it?"

It was felony to plot against the Son of Deity.

Since Wei Longxing dared to admit it, he should have the confidence to never let Gu Linfeng get out of here.

Chapter 1045 - Military Base in the Blue Dragon Void World

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen's eyes trained on Wei Longxing. "You're quite brave."

"I wanted to tell you that you're brave too. You know I will kill you, but you still dared to come. Do you know what death is?"

Holy Qi poured out of Wei Longxing. His five-colored saint armor dazzled, covering the entire yard in light. Only his aura was able to demolish the buildings in the yard.

Kaboom.

He punched and it made a thunderous sound. Five-colored Qi consolidated together, forming a fist image the size of a building.

It was the first time even for Shangguan Xianyan to see Wei Longxing attack with full force. It was terrifying.

The power from merely one punch was countless times stronger than someone at the pinnacle of the Ninth Level of the Half-Saint Realm. He could probably gravely injure someone like that with one punch.

Is this close to the abilities of the Outer Rank? Shangguan Xianyan thought. I wonder which of the Three Trials of the Pre-Saint Wei Longxing has passed already.

Whoosh—

Just then, white sword light flew out from behind Zhang Ruochen.

The sharp Sword Qi solidified into a huge three-foot-wide, 30-foot-long sword shadow. Carrying cold Qi, it crashed against Wei Longxing's fist print.

With a boom, Wei Longxing retreated violently, falling hundreds of feet away.

A blue-haired girl with a golden mask appeared beside Zhang Ruochen. She stood primly there, holding a white saint sword.

That shocking sword that had forced Wei Longxing had been her strike.

"I thought you'd be powerful because you were so arrogant," Huang Yanchen said coldly. "You aren't much though."

The ground between Huang Yanchen and Wei Longxing had been pulverized. It was evident just how terrifying that strike had been.

Sun Dadi rushed in from the outside. Seeing the Sword Qi rays that were still shooting around, he instantly yelled, "So cool!"

Just then, the blood-robed elder behind Shangguan Xianyan pushed up a 30-foot-wide shield of light to cover her. Thus, she didn't get hurt by the Sword Qi.

Her pretty eyes stared at Huang Yanchen and Gu Linfeng in obvious shock. Gu Linfeng's little lover was able to defeat Wei Longxing?

People like Wei Longxing could kill a group of Half-Saints alone. Even a Saint would find it difficult to kill him. There were very, very few powerful females like this in Kunlun's Field. Why would she go with Gu Linfeng? Was it because he was the Deity of the Blood God Sect?

Wei Longxing's arms trembled. He realized there was a problem.

His opponent's sword technique was extremely scary. Thankfully, he wore the five-colored saint armor. Otherwise, he would have definitely gotten hurt.

The previous clash had caused a huge commotion. All the Monks in the World Pub were alerted.

Cultivators of the Shangguan Clan, Cai Family, and Blood God Sect all hurried over and appeared outside the yard. The leaders of the three forces all walked in.

“Deity, what happened? Why are you so angry?” Hai Lingyin walked over with a smile. He appeared between Huang Yanchen and Wei Longxing to stop the fight.

Hai Lingyin’s cultivation was higher than Wei Longxing. He was the top fighter in the Blood God Sect below the Half-Saint Realm. He was qualified to break up the fight.

Zhang Ruochen glanced at Wei Longxing. “Senior Brother Hai, according to our sect’s rules, what is the punishment for assassinating the Deity?”

There were no emotional changes on Hai Lingyin’s face. It wasn’t clear whether he knew about this or not.

“Deity, is there some misunderstanding? How would Wei Longxing dare to assassinate you?” Hai Lingyin was still smiling.

“He admitted it himself,” Zhang Ruochen said.

This time, even Hai Lingyin didn’t know what to say. He just retreated to watch things unfold.

Shangguan Xianyan pursed her small red lips and put on a mesmerizing smile. “Wei Longxing was just joking with the Deity. Please do not take it seriously. How about I apologize personally?”

Now that everyone was watching, even if they successfully killed Gu Linfeng, it would still cause huge consequences. Once news reached the Blood God Sect, Shangguan Xianyan would be punished severely too.

Plus, Gu Linfeng wasn’t someone who could be bullied either. Just that girl with the gold mask was difficult to deal with.

If they wanted to kill Gu Linfeng, the three forces would have great losses.

“Just a joke? Saintess, if I make a similar joke with you, I hope you can smile too.” Zhang Ruochen looked over at Wei Longxing. “Farewell. We’ll meet again in the Blue Dragon Void World.”

Shangguan Yi and Cai Jinglun were clearly on Shangguan Xianyan’s side. As for the supposedly-neutral Hai Lingyin, who knew what he was really thinking?

Faced with this situation, it wasn’t possible to kill Wei Longxing. That was why Zhang Ruochen chose to leave.

News of the Blood God Sect’s Deity and Saintess splitting was definitely big news. It quickly spread throughout Chaotic World Mountain, causing quite a ripple.

“The Blood God Sect’s Deity and Saintess have always been a couple. How can they split?”

“It must be because they’re competing for the spot of the future Hierarch.”

“Judging now, the Saintess definitely has the upper hand, allying with the Shangguan Clan and Cai Family. The Blood God Sect’s Deity has caused the three forces to unite. The Saintess might become the Hierarch in the future.”

“I actually hope the Deity will become the Hierarch. Then he can marry the Saintess and take care of her slowly, haha.”

...

There was another huge alliance in the Chaotic World Mountain.

With the Lingxiao Heavenly Mansion and Wan Family as the head, it was an alliance with dozens of soldier saint clans.

The five generals of the Canglong Army were obviously there.

After hearing the news, Chi Zhongshan became overjoyed. He laughed heartily. “Haha! This is satisfying. After the Deity leaves the Blood God Sect’s camp, he’ll be like a homeless dog. It’s the best chance to take revenge.”

Zhang Ruochen led Huang Yanchen, Qing Mo, Zhao Shiqi, and Sun Dadi out of the World Pub. They walked toward the

Void World Ship.

He'd never planned on staying in the alliance formed by the three forces. It was actually good that he had a chance to leave.

Blackie climbed out of his pocket and cackled. "I finally don't have to hide around. When we reach the Blue Dragon Void World, I'll show my true colors."

The group boarded the Void World Ship, officially traveling to the Blue Dragon Void World.

This was a huge world. It was very far from Kunlun's Field. It hovered in the black, vast, and cold universe. Sitting in the ship, they looked into the distance. It seemed that blue Qi was shrouding a planet.

The ball of blue Qi was shaped like an egg. There were many planets around it. Every planet was like a speck of dust compared to the Blue Dragon Void World.

When the Void World Ship passed through the atmosphere layer, there were violent scrapes. The booms were as if a red fireball was shooting down. They quickly reached the ground.

The Ministry of War had built five military bases in the Blue Dragon Void World. The base that this ship landed in was in a desert in the center of the world. It was called Yingsha City Base.

After years of development, this desert city had become beautiful with sturdy high walls that could fend off all sorts of dangers.

In the city, there were countless human Monks. They were all elites who'd hurried over recently. Yingsha City had never been so busy before.

When Zhang Ruochen passed by an armored Void World Warrior, he stopped the man and asked, "Why is everyone grouping in the base instead of looking for opportunities?"

The warrior laughed dryly. "You've just arrived today, right?"

"Yes," Zhang Ruochen said.

The warrior sighed. “The Yingsha City Base has been surrounded by 12 savage beast tribes. We can’t break through at all. In the past few days, thousands of human elites have been massacred, all becoming food in the beasts’ stomachs.”

“Just now, more than 100 top fighters from a saint family tried to break through the siege, but they were all killed. No one could escape back.”

Sun Dadi was frustrated. “How can the beasts come here without Void World Ships?” he thundered.

“I heard that there are many wormholes in the Savage Barren Territory that lead straight to the Blue Dragon Void World.” This warrior had stayed in the Yingsha City Base for a long time. He knew many secrets.

Sun Dadi put his hands on his hips. “If we knew this, we would’ve steered the Void World Ship elsewhere. We shouldn’t have come here.”

The warrior laughed coldly. “If you don’t land in a base, you’ll only die sooner. Before the Void World Ship lands, you’ll already have been smashed to smithereens by the savage beasts.”

Zhang Ruochen touched his chin lightly. “Twelve beast tribes actually united. Are they trying to trap the humans here and then take the Blue Dragon Void World’s treasure?”

“Just thinking about it makes me upset. We must break through them.” Sun Dadi couldn’t stop rubbing his hands. Powerful battle intent flooded out.

The Void World Warrior glanced at Sun Dadi with disdain. “A while ago, the true body of the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon appeared near the base. It was the size of a mountain. Merely its aura made many Monks shiver in fear.”

Hearing “Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon,” Sun Dadi’s legs trembled too. Smiling sheepishly, he said, “There’s nothing interesting about fighting. Looking at the scenery of the Yingsha City Base seems nice too.”

Chapter 1046 - Great Spatial Move

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon had the ability to kill Saints. Recently, it had broken into a pass of the First Central Empire. It had swallowed 13,000 human soldiers and even ate a Warrior Saint.

Probably no human below the Saint Realm really had the abilities to fight the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon.

“I heard that Chi Wansui, ninth of the Half-Saint Rank, will personally come to the Yingsha City Base. If he fights the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, we humans will be able to put up a fight against the 12 beast tribes.”

The Void World Warrior’s expression was heated. It was the respect and reverence toward a top fighter.

The 12 beastly groups surrounded the military base completely. Without the leadership of a top fighter, no Monk could break free at all. If Chi Wansui came, he would also bring hope. He was like a pillar of support that wouldn’t fall, becoming the psychological leader of the base’s cultivators.

Zhang Ruochen climbed onto the 300-foot-tall city wall and looked outside. Yellow sand reached as far as he could see.

Using the Heavenly Eye, Zhang Ruochen could see extremely far. He spotted the traces of some savage beasts.

Hundreds of miles away to the east of the city, there were some rolling hills of sand. The entire place was filled with Black Scorpion Beasts. Tens of thousands took up about 100 miles of land in radius.

They were huge. Even the most average Black Scorpion Beast was around seven feet long. Some bigger ones were dozens of feet long. Their auras were very shocking too.

According to a warrior on the city wall, the Black Scorpion Beasts had a Beast King very close to the Saint Realm. It was gold all over and hundreds of feet tall. It had once attacked the military base.

However, the base had constructed a very strong defensive formation and defeated the Beast King.

Zhang Ruochen checked the other directions. He also saw tens of thousands of beastly groups taking up their own area. They'd completely blocked all the paths for the human cultivators.

“Brother Gu, what should we do?” Sun Dadi asked.

“Find a place to stay first,” Zhang Ruochen said. “Then we’ll think of a way to rush out. Zhao Shiqi, this will be your responsibility. I will continue to observe if there are any places among the 12 groups with weaker defenses.”

Zhao Shiqi was a 48th level Spiritual Half-Saint. His tactics couldn't be compared to a regular Monk and quickly found somewhere to stay in the center of Yingsha City.

After night fell, Zhang Ruochen put on the Shooting Star Invisibility Cloak. Collecting his aura, he walked out of the city alone and charged toward one direction.

During the day, he'd noticed that the defense was a bit weak here. He wanted to try and see if he could secretly break through it.

However, around 40 miles later, he activated a hidden formation. A mass of fireballs and electricity flew in the sky. Thousands of beasts attacked his position too.

At the same time, there was an earth-shaking roar. A golden scorpion the size of a mountain rushed out from under the yellow sand. The scorpion king's aura was terrifying. It created sandstorms within 100 miles of it.

The scene was like the end of the world.

Even people at Wei Longxing and Huang Yanchen's level weren't its match.

Zhang Ruochen immediately retreated and returned to Yingsha City.

Boom!

The golden scorpion king was countless times bigger than the city walls. It extended a claw and struck downward, crashing against Yingsha City's outer light shield.

The 300-foot-tall city wall trembled.

The defensive formation was activated in the city. A beam of white light 10 meters wide shot out, sending the golden scorpion king flying. However, the attack only hurt the scorpion instead of killing it.

"Humans, you will come out of the city one day and I will eat you all."

A human-like voice came out of the scorpion king's mouth. The sound waves hurt one's eardrums and spread throughout the city. Of course, it feared the military base's attack formation too. In the end, it chose to retreat instead of continuing to attack.

Zhang Ruochen lifted the Shooting Star Invisibility Cloak, revealing himself. Looking at the retreating scorpion, he sighed deeply.

"Such powerful defensive abilities. Yingsha City's attack formation can kill a Saint, but it only hurt the beast. It must be an ancient creature with the purest of ancient bloodlines. Practically no human can defeat it."

The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon was already difficult to deal with. Now that there was this Golden Scorpion King, how would the humans survive?

If the savage beasts got control of the Blue Dragon Void World's treasure, they would only become stronger. By then, the humans would be even further behind.

When Zhang Ruochen returned, he told the others what had happened.

“Among the savage beasts, there’s a Beast King with extremely high attainments in formations. It has put down many hidden formation runes. It’s practically impossible to secretly break through their siege.”

Everyone fell silent.

Half a beat later, Sun Dadi said, “I asked around earlier. In a bit, countless grand alliances will arrive here. Those ancient sects and races all have some powerful methods. Even if they can’t kill a Beast King, they can at least suppress one.”

“Then we’ll wait a bit more,” Zhang Ruochen said. “In the next few days, everyone should work hard on cultivating and try to improve. There will be a great battle in a short while.”

Sun Dadi was already at the pinnacle of the Ninth Level. It was hard for him to have any breakthroughs. So instead of cultivating, he went to some of the busier regions to have fun while also getting information.

Zhao Shiqi had just gotten 30 drops of Blue Dragon Dew. Naturally, he couldn’t wait to raise his Spiritual Power to the 49th level.

Zhang Ruochen sent him into the scroll world. This way, he had ten times the time and would be faster at breaking into the next level.

Zhang Ruochen also sent Huang Yanchen and Qing Mo into the scroll world. Only Blackie remained outside to watch the Universe Spiritual Map.

Without a Grade Six Divine Origin Pill, it will be difficult to reach the Sixth Level of the Half-Saint Realm. However, since I have this extremely short time, I can combine the second world’s memory of the Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map with my enlightenments of the Saintly Way.

Zhang Ruochen sat cross-legged below the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree. Splitting his Spiritual Power, a beam turned into a speck of light and flew into his Sea of Qi.

Whoosh—

The speck of light quickly solidified, forming a small man identical to Zhang Ruochen. Six bubbles hovered above his Sea of Qi. Each bubble represented the memories and enlightenments of the Saintly Way of a world.

However, they'd all been sealed by Chu Siyuan. Zhang Ruochen opened one bubble and started combining the memories and enlightenments.

After a long while, he'd completed the first step of combining the memories and enlightenments of the second world with his saint soul.

My Spiritual Power has reached the 49th level.

Sword Five has been completed.

The Luo Water Fist Technique has reached the seventh level.

...

Other than that, Zhang Ruochen also discovered that in the second world, his attainments of time and space both had shocking improvements.

“Great Spatial Move.”

Zhang Ruochen flashed. Ripples appeared in the surrounding air.

Then he disappeared.

When he reappeared, he was more than 20 miles away. The entire process had been very short.

“Interesting.”

It was Zhang Ruochen's first time trying to cross such a large distance. It felt new and interesting. He continued practicing it, wanting to get it down as fast as possible.

He executed the Great Spatial Move dozens of times in a row. Each time, he crossed more than 20 miles. Compared to the Spatial Move, this was naturally an improvement.

However, according to the Time and Space Secret Guide, this was only the first step of the Great Spatial Move. In its true form, it was normal to be able to cross hundreds of miles.

After finishing the Great Spatial Move and with me being a Fifth Level Half-Saint, I'll even be able to escape from Saints, he thought.

Only strong cultivators from the Half-Saint Rank or Outer Rank could escape from Saints. Zhang Ruochen's ability of fleeing was clearly above them.

Other than cultivating the Great Spatial Move, Zhang Ruochen also had some other accomplishments in the second world of the Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map.

He had considerable attainments in the third level of the Twelfth Hour Sword Technique. Plus, if he had enough resources, he was even confident that he could perform a short distance Space Transfer Formation.

Of course, both the Twelfth Hour Sword Technique and Space Transfer Formation were too complicated and abstruse. Zhang Ruochen only reached the beginning stages. His skills weren't mature yet.

Zhang Ruochen really wanted to build a Space Transfer Formation in Yingsha City and escape from the siege of the 12 beast groups.

He copied the resources that he needed from the Time and Space Secret Guide. He needed 11 types of resources in total: four types of saint jades and seven types of saint stones.

Of these, three saint jades and seven saint stones were extremely precious and expensive, but he could still find them.

The Spatial Saint Jade, one of the four saint jades, was very rare. It could only be produced in the chaotic zone between the material and void space.

Finding one was harder than walking to heaven.

When the Blue Dragon Void World is destroyed, it might produce many Spatial Saint Jades.

Zhang Ruochen looked forward to it, but he was also a bit disappointed. Since he didn't have Spatial Saint Jades, he could only put this plan to the side for now. He walked out of the scroll world.

After hearing that Zhang Ruochen had come out, Sun Dadi hurried back immediately with some information.

“In the past three days, three large alliances have arrived at Yingsha City,” Sun Dadi said. “One of the alliances is the one of the Blood God Sect, Shangguan Clan, and Cai Family.”

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes flashed coldly, but he recovered quickly. “Who are the other two alliances?”

“The other two...”

Sun Dadi was about to reply when a faraway voice said, “Wan Huayu from the Residence of the Little Saint God is here to visit the Deity of the Blood God Sect. Is the Deity here?”

Zhang Ruochen and Sun Dadi were both surprised. They exchanged glances.

“Why is Wan Huayu suddenly visiting me? I don’t think I’ve met her before as the Blood God Sect Deity.”

Zhang Ruochen touched his chin softly, wondering why Wan Huayu had come.

Chapter 1047 - Unfriendly Comer

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Wan Huayu came to visit Zhang Ruochen with a purple-clad elder. There were no other servants.

Zhang Ruochen had seen her at the Cai Family Saint Mansion. She'd left a deep impression. She was very intelligent and perceptive. In some aspects, she was comparable to her father.

When Zhang Ruochen decided to see her, he already warned himself that he must be careful and not let her notice anything.

“Not bad. Deity, I am quite jealous that you can find a place with such greenery in Yingsha City.”

Wan Huayu wore an opulent ice silk robe. She stood elegantly under a line of ancient willow trees. Looking up at the large leaves, she craned her slender snow-white neck. She had a great temperament.

Zhang Ruochen stood in the near distance and put his hands up in greeting. Smiling, he said, “Did Princess Wan come to visit me just to look at the ancient willow trees?”

Wan Huayu looked at him and smiled. “I've heard of your name long ago. Today, I indeed came because I have something important to discuss with you.”

“Please tell me,” Zhang Ruochen said.

“I would like to work together with you. As for the conditions...you can decide. How about it?”

“Work together?”

Zhang Ruochen already knew about the alliance between the Wan and Chi Family before Wan Huayu came. She must have known about the conflict between Zhang Ruochen and the Canglong Army. Why was she still asking him to work together?

Wan Huayu seemed to sense what he was thinking. Smiling, she said, “Your conflict with Chi Zhongshan isn’t that big of a deal. If you work with the Wan Family, I’m sure he won’t dare to object.”

“As expected by the Little Saint God’s only daughter. You are very bold.” Zhang Ruochen smiled and looked playfully from Wan Huayu’s breasts to her behind. “I do have one condition. If you can stay the night, I’ll agree with everything.”

“Nonsense!” the elder roared. “Who do you think you’re talking to?” A powerful surge spread out along with the sound waves, sending dust and pebbles into the air.

Wan Huayu clearly knew about the Blood God Sect Deity’s personality. She didn’t look unhappy, but her smile did go away.

“Your decision isn’t unwise. Don’t you know that your best choice right now is to work with me? After all, if the Lingxiao Heavenly Palace and your sect’s Saintess use cruel methods, you won’t be able to take it with your current abilities.”

Zhang Ruochen grew thoughtful and nodded. “Since I’m so weak, why do you still wish to cooperate with me?”

Hearing that Zhang Ruochen was more accepting now, Wan Huayu immediately said, “Because you could reach the sixth level of the Blood God Altar and defeated the Blood Spirit Fae, the first Deity of the sect. With your potential, if you can find enough Genius Treasures in the Blue Dragon Void World, you’ll immediately enter the top ten of the Half-Saint Rank.”

As of now, only three humans were in the top ten. It was evident that Wan Huayu had very high judgment and expectations of him.

“Top ten? I will definitely become number one of the Half-Saint Rank.” Zhang Ruochen pretended to be very arrogant.

The purple-clad elder turned up his nose. He felt like the princess trying to win over someone like this was a complete waste of time. Anyone this arrogant would never be able to become a powerful figure.

Wan Huayu maintained the smile on her face. “If this was another era, you would have a chance to become number one. However, many absolute geniuses were born this era. I’m afraid you’re still a bit off.”

“If I become number one, can I kiss you?” Zhang Ruochen asked with a smile.

Wan Huayu didn’t grow shy. Instead, she smiled. “If that day really comes, it may be possible for us to develop to the next step.”

“In that case, I’ll work with you when I become number one of the Half-Saint Rank. At that time, I’ll definitely make you stay the night.”

Zhang Ruochen’s words meant that he’d rejected Wan Huayu’s proposal.

“You must consider this carefully,” Wan Huayu said. “If you don’t work with me, it will be difficult for you to do anything in the Blue Dragon Void World from now on.”

“I have already thought carefully.”

In the end, they couldn’t come to a consensus and left unhappily.

If Zhang Ruochen had accepted Wan Huayu’s proposal and entered the alliance between the Wan Family and Lingxiao Heavenly Palace, then he would truly find it difficult to do anything.

Forcing Wan Huayu away like this wouldn’t arouse suspicions.

Soon after Wan Huayu left, there was a huge boom at the door.

Chi Zhongshan, general of the Canglong Army, shattered the door with a fist technique and roared, “Gu Linfeng, I’m going to disable your arms and legs and make you kneel for ten days!”

He hadn't come alone. The other four generals of the Canglong Army arrived at the same time.

The five Ninth Level Half-Saint generals walked into the depths of the yard with powerful battle intent flaring from them.

Wan Huayu went to the third floor of a building cluster nearby. She sat down and looked down with clear eyes. From here, she could see everything in the yard.

The purple-clad elder stood behind her and huffed coldly. "Gu Linfeng has already been forced out by the Blood God Sect's Saintess, but he's still so arrogant and doesn't know his place. The Lingxiao Heavenly Palace will definitely give him a harsh lesson."

Wan Huayu put her hands on her thighs. She smiled casually. "The Lingxiao Heavenly Palace has attacked first. Now we'll see how Gu Linfeng will take it. I wonder if it's possible."

"He's only a Fifth Level Half-Saint. If he didn't have that mysterious female cultivator, Chi Zhongshan alone could take care of him."

Wan Huayu nodded. She agreed with the purple-clad elder. Another important reason why she'd gone to win over Gu Linfeng was to probe for the mysterious woman's identity.

If she could defeat Wei Longxing with one strike, she couldn't be a nameless figure. Of course, now that Gu Linfeng was in such great danger, the mysterious woman would definitely appear to save him. As long as she attacked, Wan Huayu was confident in figuring out her true figure.

Chi Zhongshan's roar shocked countless human Monks. They all hurried over to watch the show.

"Gu Linfeng is still a Deity. How can he be reduced to such a state?"

"He was first forced away by the Blood God Sect's Saintess. Then the Lingxiao Heavenly Palace went to his door, saying they'd make him kneel for ten days. Why does it feel like everyone's bullying the drowning dog? Haha."

“First he’s a homeless dog. Now he’s a drowning dog. Can Gu Linfeng get any sadder?”

“Whose fault is this? It’s his fault for being so arrogant when he isn’t strong enough. He’s flirting and offending people everywhere. People like him deserve this ending.”

...

Monks of the Blood God Sect, Shangguan Clan, and Cai Family all came to the surroundings to watch what was happening next.

Cai Jinglun activated his Heavenly Eye and looked for a while. “The Lingxiao Heavenly Palace has already sealed the space in that area. It seems like they aren’t giving Gu Linfeng any chance to escape.”

Shangguan Xianyan pursed her red lips. She watched attentively but sighed. “No matter how Gu Linfeng is, he’s still the Deity of the Blood God Sect. If the Lingxiao Heavenly Palace goes overboard, we must do something.”

Wei Longxing clenched his fists and smiled coldly. “Gu Linfeng deserves this. He caused it himself. If that woman didn’t protect him, he wouldn’t be alive right now.”

Shangguan Yi, Shangguang Linglong, Shangguan Nihong of the Shangguan Clan; Cai Jinglun, Cai Jing, Cai Yunji of the Cai Family were all bystanders. They didn’t express any opinion.

The three top figures of the Blood God Sect—Shangguan Xianyan, Wei Longxing, and Hai Lingyin—reached a consensus.

In the end, Shangguan Xianyan sent a messenger to tell the leaders of the Lingxiao Heavenly Palace, “Gu Linfeng is still the Deity of the Blood God Sect. If the Lingxiao Heavenly Palace forces him to kneel, it will insult the Blood God Sect. If things reach that point, we won’t just sit and watch.”

When the generals of the Lingxiao Heavenly Palace received Shangguan Xianyan’s message, they all just chuckled.

“We won’t force him to kneel. We’ll hit him until he kneels. That’ll be fine, right?” Chi Yutang, one of the four lords of the Lingxiao Heavenly Palace, chuckled.

The human Monks of the Yingsha City came from all over. The large mass of people was watching the conflict attentively. To them, the Blood God Sect’s Deity was a poor and lonely figure. He had such a high status, but he’d reached this state. It was tragic.

Boom.

In the yard, Chi Zhongshan stomped on the ground. Wild Holy Qi surged out, making the ground crack loudly with deep fissures.

All the buildings and trees within hundreds of feet were reduced to dust. Only the centermost building was still undamaged.

Zhang Ruochen sat in the center of the hall. Composed, he glanced at the five outside the door. “There’s a way to heaven, but you don’t follow it. There’s no door to hell, but you force your way in. Why?”

Chi Zhongshan knew that Zhang Ruochen had a mysterious female cultivator beside him, so he was very cautious. He didn’t burst in impulsively. Huffing coldly, he said, “Gu Linfeng, you’re already in this state. How dare you still be so arrogant? Aren’t you afraid I’ll make you wish you were dead?”

Zhang Ruochen chuckled. “I’ve never had that experience, but you did a while ago. Would you like to try it again?”

Chi Zhongshan clenched his fists. Two balls of fire surged out. He really wanted to rush in and personally force Gu Linfeng to his knees and take revenge. However, he repressed the anger in his heart.

Laughing, he said, “You only know how to talk. Don’t hide behind a woman like a coward. If you’re so strong, come out and fight with me. We’ll easily see who is the true strong cultivator and who’s the one forced to his knees.”

Everyone could tell that Chi Zhongshan was trying to provoke Gu Linfeng. If Gu Linfeng was smart, he wouldn't accept the challenge.

"To be honest, you don't qualify to fight me with your cultivation and identity," Zhang Ruochen said.

Chi Zhongshan knew that Gu Linfeng would say this. Sneering, he was about to reply, but Zhang Ruochen spoke again, changing his tone.

"However, if you insist on fighting, I'll lower myself to fight with you. How many days did you say for kneeling? Ten days? Then let's do ten days!"

Zhang Ruochen stood up. With his hands behind his back, he walked out of the room and down to the steps to Chi Zhongshan.

Chapter 1048 - Everyone Kneels

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Did the Blood God Sect Deity really accept Chi Zhongshan's challenge?

“Ha. No matter how talented he is, he can't fight a Ninth Level Half-Saint as a Fifth Level Half-Saint. Isn't he too impulsive?”

“Anything is possible for someone as arrogant as Gu Linfeng.”

...

Many people were mocking him, thinking that Gu Linfeng was thinking too simply. He lost his logic as soon as Chi Zhongshan provoked him. It was so weird that someone like him could become the Deity of the Blood God Sect.

In a tower.

Wan Huayu stared at Gu Linfeng with suspicion.

Earlier, she'd seen Gu Linfeng. From the short exchange, she could see that the man was lustful, but he wasn't completely brainless. Why would he accept Chi Zhongshan's challenge so easily?

“Does he have some trump card that can fend off Chi Zhongshan's attack?” Wan Huayu asked.

In the yard, Chi Zhongshan was slightly surprised, but he soon became overjoyed. Laughing, he said, “As expected of the Deity of an ancient sect. You are quite daring.”

Chi Zhongshan was afraid Gu Linfeng would run back into the house, so he impatiently attacked. A pair of fiery fists

crackled. He shook the Spiritual Qi violently with a slight move.

Kaboom.

Fiery red clouds stretched out, consolidating into a nine-foot-tall flaming raven. It spread its wings and flew forward. Chi Zhongshan's steel fists overlapped with the flaming raven.

Zhang Ruochen's face turned golden-red from the reflection, but he was still composed. Smiling in scorn, he said, "You think you can show off before me with your skills?"

He reached out and a dragon's roar came from within his bones and flesh. He didn't display any martial techniques and just slapped forward a simple palm.

A blood-red palm print consolidated and hit Chi Zhongshan's head. There was a boom and then the huge palm forced the flaming clouds and Chi Zhongshan under it.

Boom!

Rings of ripples spread out. The ground caved in, forming a 30-foot-long palm-shaped ditch.

Chi Zhongshan only persisted for a moment. Then there was a string of cracking sounds. His legs and neck broke at the same time.

The powerful palm strength forced him to kneel at the bottom of the ditch, unable to raise his head.

A while ago, Chi Zhongshan's legs had already been broken. He'd been forced to kneel before countless Monks. He didn't expect that it would happen again so soon after his legs were reconnected.

"Gu...Linfeng... How can you...be so strong..."

Chi Zhongshan felt greatly humiliated. He couldn't take this. Golden flames surged out of his entire body to break through the palm print's suppression.

Zhang Ruochen huffed coldly and added more strength. A deafening sound came from the ground. With Chi Zhongshan as the center, hundreds of feet caved in.

“I said you’ll kneel for ten days,” Zhang Ruochen barked.
“How dare you get up?”

The sound wave carried strong Spiritual Power and almost forced Chi Zhongshan’s saint soul out his body.

Chi Zhongshan’s saint soul was heavily injured. His spirit lowered too. With his head hanging, he knelt on the ground and stopped resisting.

A large mass of gasps came from the entire Yingsha City. No one was unsurprised. Did a Fifth Level Half-Saint really force a Ninth Level Half-Saint to kneel with just a palm print?

What had just happened was practically like a dream. It was unbelievable.

“Gu Linfeng...how can he be so strong? Is he really a Fifth Level Half-Saint.”

Some suspected that Gu Linfeng had some treasure that could hide his cultivation. There was no way he was only a Fifth Level Half-Saint.

“Did he use outside help? Did the Blood God Sect’s Hierarch give him saintly power?”

Wan Huayu rested her chin on her slender hands as she pondered. She suspected that the power Gu Linfeng had displayed wasn’t his own power.

After all, Wan Huayu’s father had given her something before she’d come to the Blue Dragon Void World. She could use her father’s saint power against a strong enemy when needed.

Of the people present, probably only Shangguan Xianyan knew that Gu Linfeng hadn’t hidden his cultivation and hadn’t used outside help either. He’d only been a Fourth Level Half-Saint when he was in the Blood God Sect.

It was already a miracle for him to reach the Fifth Level within one or two months. How could he hide his cultivation?

The Blood God Sect Hierarch had indeed gifted them his saint power, but Gu Linfeng had already left by then. Shangguan Xianyan had that beam of saint power. She didn’t give it to Gu Linfeng yet.

Did Gu Linfeng use his own power to defeat Chi Zhongshan?

A chill went down Shangguan Xianyan's spine. She even stopped breathing as her eyes grew extremely serious.

Gu Linfeng was only in the Fifth Level, but he was already so powerful. If he reached the Ninth Level, who below the Saint Realm could be his match?

“How dare you? Release Chi Zhongshan immediately.”

Yuan Di and Situ Chaobei, the other two generals of the Canglong Army, rushed out at the same time. They attacked Zhang Ruochen from the air.

Yuan Di had a pair of metal wings on his back. They gleamed with cold light. Each feather was like a golden sword. Situ Chaobei was a bald man with a huge stature. His body was made up of chunks of muscle. Every step he took would shake the ground.

Their cultivations far surpassed Chi Zhongshan's. Respectively, they were in the middle and later stages of the Ninth Level. They were definitely two very powerful figures.

One was shockingly strong while the other was filled with boundless strength. Once they worked together, they could definitely fight someone at the pinnacle of the Ninth Level.

Yuan Di arrived first. He flipped in the sky and his huge metal wings cut down from the sky, striking Zhang Ruochen's head.

Crack!

Zhang Ruochen sent a palm out, crashing against the metal wings. Instantly, there were scratching sounds. Like metals rubbing against each other, massive sparks flew.

The next instant, Yuan Di flew out. He crashed against a wall in the yard and then against a semi-transparent light shield. With a thud, he fell onto the street. His golden wings had snapped and his mouth was covered in blood.

Who would've thought that such a strong Ninth Level Half-Saint would be unable to take a slap from Gu Linfeng?”

“God Form Fist.”

Seeing Yuan Di get thrown out by a slap, Situ Chaobei realized that Gu Linfeng wasn't easy to deal with. Thus, he used a Consummate Skill fist technique.

The God Form Fist could unleash 28 times the attack strength. The fist technique's strength was close to a saint spell.

Situ Chaobei was already boundlessly strong. He could lift mountains with his bare hands. With the God Form Fist's additional power, one could imagine just how strong his punch was.

"Situ Chaobei's combat power is close to someone at the pinnacle of the Ninth Level. I don't believe Gu Linfeng can take it."

Chi Yutang gripped the arms of his chair with a nervous expression. Just then, Gu Linfeng had defeated Chi Zhong and Yuan Di one after another. His aura was so powerful and attacked the mentalities of the Lingxiao Heavenly Mansion generals.

If Gu Linfeng could defeat Situ Chaobei, then no one would dare to call themselves geniuses before him anymore.

The generals of the Lingxiao Heavenly Mansion weren't the only ones thinking this. Shangguan Xianyan, Wei Longxing, Wan Huayu and the others all widened their eyes. They wondered how Gu Linfeng would react to this.

They also wanted to see clearly if Gu Linfeng was using outside help.

A huge fist with sharp aura was already before Zhang Ruochen. The powerful wind howled, blowing his hair and clothes.

"Seven-Apertures Blood Palm."

Zhang Ruochen raised his left hand and activated his Holy Qi, pouring it into the Seven Kill Boxing Glove. At the same time, seven vortexes of Blood Qi appeared at the center of the boxing glove.

The seven vortexes grew bigger and bigger, sweeping toward Situ Chaobei. Terrifying aura spread out quickly with Zhang

Ruochen's hand as the center.

The suffocating force fell on all the Monks nearby. Even when standing hundreds of feet away, it still felt the sky was falling. One could imagine how much pressure Situ Chaobei, who had fought with Gu Linfeng, was feeling.

Sizzle, sizzle.

Red Blood Qi appeared before Zhang Ruochen, consolidating into a red 30-foot-tall figure. It had 12 bloody wings and radiated with a terrifyingly domineering aura.

“That is...Pluto's image,” a Monk of the Blood God Sect yelled. “Only those who have cultivated the seventh aperture of the Seven-Apertures Blood Palm can produce that phenomenon.”

The Seven-Apertures Blood Palm was a saint spell invented by Pluto. Only Monks who'd cultivated it to a very advanced level could resonate with Pluto's aura and form his apparition.

Kaboom.

Zhang Ruochen slapped down with 40 times the combat power, forcing Situ Chaobei to the ground.

Situ Chaobei's legs bent. Blood flowed out of his seven apertures and his skin cracked open. His entire body was a bloody mess. He was still breathing, but he'd completely lost the ability to fight.

Zhang Ruochen grabbed Yuan Di and made him kneel between Chi Zhongshan and Situ Chaobei.

The three knelt in a row. Their saint souls were injured, so they fell into low spirits. They didn't even have the will to go against Zhang Ruochen.

“Did Gu Linfeng really cultivate the Seven-Apertures Blood Palm to the highest level?”

Shangguan Xianyan shot up from her seat in shock. Her shoulders sagged a bit and then stood back up. It was a great up and down.

That moment, she realized she'd made a huge mistake. This Deity wasn't arrogant at all. He was truly powerful enough.

Merely a Fifth Level Half-Saint, Gu Linfeng's power was already this strong. If he rose two more levels, no one under the Saint Realm in the Blood God Sect would be his match.

Chapter 1049 - Sweeping in All Directions

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“I’ve misjudged him. This Gu Linfeng is indeed extraordinary. He’s not an Heir, but if in the same plane, his combat ability wouldn’t be weaker than them.” Wan Huayu’s eyes glittered.

The purple-clad elder still had no good impression of Gu Linfeng. “Unfortunately, his cultivation is still too weak. If he can learn to tolerate things, he would be able to reach the sixth or even the seventh level of the Half-Saint Realm. By then, even the Lingxiao Heavenly Mansion will have difficulty dealing with him.”

Gu Linfeng’s abilities were indeed strong. Unfortunately, his enemy was the monstrous Lingxiao Heavenly Mansion. The more excellent his performance was, the faster he died.

“Next,” Wan Huayu said, “I’d like to see if the generals of the Lingxiao Heavenly Mansion and the Blood God Sect’s Saintess can kill Gu Linfeng in the cradle.”

“Do you think there’s still uncertainty?” The purple-clad elder didn’t understand.

No matter how strong Gu Linfeng was, he still only had a few followers. How could he block the huge alliance between the Lingxiao Heavenly Mansion and Blood God Sect?

Wan Huayu just smiled without saying anything.

The leaders of the Lingxiao Heavenly Mansion ordered simultaneously, “Kill Gu Linfeng no matter what.”

No matter if Gu Linfeng had used outside help or had used solely his own strength, he already instilled fear in the Lingxiao Heavenly Mansion. Gu Linfeng must be killed for them to feel safe.

Receiving the order, the last two generals of the Canglong Army activated their Holy Qi at the same time. Massive deathly Qi formed two violently spinning windstorms.

These two were Yan Tong and Bai Xinglou. Both at the pinnacle of the Ninth Level, they were first and second of the top ten generals.

Yan Tong stepped out first. His eyes were silver-gray. “Gu Linfeng,” he uttered. “You are indeed strong. The Seven-Apertures Blood Palm that you just used actually unleashed 40 times the combat ability. But if that’s your full strength, you will die under my Blood-Quenched Sword.”

He knew Gu Linfeng was very powerful, but he still dared to say that. It was evident that Yan Tong was confident he could block the Seven-Apertures Blood Palm.

The blood-red battle sword in his hands was at least six feet long. The hilt was three feet long. As Holy Qi surged into the sword, dense golden runes emerged.

Whoosh.

He dragged the sword across the ground. Instantly, due to the sealed space, thousands upon thousands of golden sword shadows appeared. It transformed the space into a murderous sword territory.

Yan Tong was a true Ninth Level pinnacle figure. His combat ability far surpassed Situ Chaobei and Yuan Di. He could stir up a violent storm with just a preparation move.

The Blood-Quenched Sword was extraordinary too. On the Thousand-pattern Saint Weapon List, it was ranked 2947th.

“A mere Gu Linfeng shouldn’t need Big Brother to act. I can kill him with my own strength.”

Bai Xinglou opened his arms. Thirty-six blue metal balls flew out of his body and hovered in the air. Thirty-six rays of

extremely blinding light shot out.

Each metal ball was a Hundred-pattern Saint Weapon. In a set, they formed the Thousand-pattern Saint Weapon called “Starry Sea Sand.”

Every Thousand-pattern Saint Weapon had boundless strength. It could unleash the Destruction of Thousand Patterns and couldn't be overlooked.

It was highly possible that Yan Tong and Bai Xinglou could reach the Saint Realm, so they were qualified to use Thousand-pattern Saint Weapons. It was obvious how much the Lingxiao Heavenly Mansion valued them.

The Monks of Yingsha City all found this unbelievable. It was unheard of to have two cultivators at the pinnacle of the Ninth Level kill a Fifth Level Half-Saint.

Sun Dadi walked out of the room with a metal rod on his shoulder. “Does the Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion think that the Blood God Sect has no one left?” he roared. “Do you think a random cat and dog can go against the Deity?”

“Didn't I tell you not to come out, no matter what? I can take care of it.” Zhang Ruochen glared at Sun Dadi, wanting to make him go back.

The Lingxiao Heavenly Mansion was definitely a massive force. It was filled with strong cultivators and couldn't be angered so easily.

Zhang Ruochen went against them because they were too cruel against the descendants of the royal Zhang family. He had to take revenge. However, he didn't want Sun Dadi to get involved, lest he be punished by the Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion.

Sun Dadi grinned, showing his snow-white teeth. He didn't have any intention of backing off. He wanted to fight with Zhang Ruochen.

“Hey, who did you call a random cat and dog?” Yan Hong was furious. His thick eyebrows were practically standing up straight.

Sun Dadi's expression was even more arrogant than Zhang Ruochen's. Laughing, he said, "You're the cat and he's the dog. Shouldn't you call me 'lord?'"

Yan Tong and Bai Xinglou were all at the top of pre-Saint Realm. How could they take this humiliation?

"You're looking for death."

Yan Tong picked up the Blood-Quenched Sword and stepped forward. He lifted the blood-red sword over his head. It was like a bloody crescent. He brought it down quickly, leaving a trail of light, cutting the sky and earth into two halves.

One could imagine that if the region wasn't locked by a formation, that one strike would have split the entire Yingsha City in half.

"You aren't satisfied with me calling you a cat? You're making me angry. Today, if I don't teach you a lesson, you won't even know how to respect your elders."

Sun Dadi was a chatterbox, but when he attacked, he was very fierce. He stepped forward and twisted to the side. Wielding his metal rod, he swung it horizontally even faster than lightning and struck Yan Tong's abdomen.

Thud!

With a muffled grunt, Yan Tong flew backward. Fortunately, he had a protective badge on his armor that helped block the hit for him. Otherwise, Sun Dadi's strike was enough to heavily injure him.

"You can block my staff. I guess you have some abilities."

Sun Dadi immediately pursued him. He jumped, brought his staff up with both hands, and swung down again.

Yan Tong didn't have time to dodge. He could only squat, and hold up the Blood-Quenched Sword with both hands to block Sun Dadi's attack.

Boom.

Sun Dadi's metal rod was a few ten thousand pounds. It sent Yan Tong waist-deep into the ground. He spat out fresh blood

and his arms were in extreme pain. His upper body was completely numb.

That little monkey was terrifyingly strong. Yan Tong could barely take a hit with his cultivation. Where did such a powerful cultivator come from?

“You can take two of my strikes. I am quite impressed with your cultivation.”

Sun Dadi struck four times in a row. Each time his staff fell, Yan Tong would spit out more blood. He would also sink in more.

When the staff fell for the fourth time, bloody cracks spread across Yan Tong’s body as if it was porcelain about to shatter. The previous battle had happened in the blink of an eye.

By the time Bai Xinglou reacted, Yan Tong was about to die under Sun Dadi’s hands.

“Stop.”

Bai Xinglou pushed forward with both hands. He filled the 36 metal balls with Holy Qi, activating the Destruction of Thousand Patterns. He was using the strongest method to kill Sun Dadi.

The 36 metal balls were arranged according to a constellation, forming a sea of stars and flying toward Sun Dadi.

The Destruction of Thousand Patterns was indeed terrifying.

Zhang Ruochen immediately filled the Seven Kill Boxing Gloves with Holy Qi. He prepared to fight with Bai Xinglou and stop the Starry Sea Sand.

However, before he could attack, Sun Dadi laughed and rushed at Bai Xinglou first.

“Hey, dog, you’re being disobedient just because I didn’t teach you a lesson first? I guess you need a beating.”

Sun Dadi’s metal rod also shone brilliantly with thousands of runes. It became as thick as a bowl, like a pillar supporting heaven, and swept toward Bai Xinglou.

Boom, boom.

The 36 metal balls couldn't take the staff. They flew out like 36 marbles.

“How can you be so strong?”

Bai Xinglou's expression changed and he immediately retreated, but he was too late. The metal rod hit his legs, turning them into ground flesh.

Bai Xinglou sprawled onto the ground with a muffled grunt. His harshly handsome face twisted in pain.

“Fight!” he roared. Bearing the pain in his legs, he wanted to stand up again, but discovered the metal rod hovering above him.

Sun Dadi stood behind him and cackled. “Dog, don't bark for no reason. No matter how you bark, it's of no use.”

Boom!

Sun Dadi brought his staff down on Bai Xinglou's head. He almost shattered both his saint soul and Sea of Qi.

Bai Xinglou's vision went black. It felt like the world was spinning. Losing balance, he fell unconscious and knelt in a row with Situ Chaobei, Yuan Di, and Chi Zhongshan.

After that, Sun Dadi used his staff to lift Yan Tong out of the ground. He placed Yan Tong beside the four generals in a kneeling position.

Sun Dadi looked at how Yan Tong and Bai Xinglou were kneeling. He made sure that the postures were perfect before nodding in satisfaction.

The power Sun Dadi showed had already shaken the entire Yingsha City. Everyone was trying to find information about him.

No one knew of his existence before this battle. However, his combat ability was too abnormal. He definitely wasn't a small figure.

“He's a disciple that the leader of the Earth Heavenly Palace accepted while traveling the East Sea,” a Monk of the Blood

God Sect explained. “His name is Sun Dadi. He’s from the Monkey-Human Clan.”

“His cultivation has been horribly underestimated. With his combat ability, he can sweep everyone. He definitely isn’t below Wei Longxing and Hai Lingyin.”

A smile filled Wan Huayu’s eyes. “Gu Linfeng has a mysterious woman with unmeasurable cultivation and now such a powerful Monkey-Human Clan member. He only has a few Monks on his side, but they’re all top figures. I wonder who else will appear beside him.”

Even the purple-clad elder who never liked Gu Linfeng grew serious now. “The Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion will need to pay heavily to take him down.”

Chapter 1050 - Radical Change

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

All the five ninth-level half saints were exceptionally strong, and they must have suppressed the deity from Blood God Sect in an instant.

However, they were now kneeling on the ground in a row. Some of them were severely injured, while others had lost their consciousness. They lost the nobility that ninth-level half saints were supposed to have.

There were continuous noises in Yingsha City.

All the monks now realized that the deity from Blood God Sect was not something to mess with.

“The deity from Blood God Sect has two powerful beings to protect him. No wonder he is so arrogant. If I had such power, I wouldn’t have viewed the five commanders from Canglong Army as my equals either.”

“Even the thin and dead camels are still bigger than horses. Even if Gu Linfeng has left Blood God Sect, he’s still the king of an area, enough to stand against Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion.”

“I heard that the Horoscopic King from Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion, Chi Wansui, is coming to the base of Yingsha City. He’s powerful enough to suppress all three masters from Blood God Sect, including the deity.”

Everyone was thrilled by such a piece of news.

Chi Wansui, one of the nine heirs, ranked number nine on the Half-Saint Rank, and the third strongest being in the State of Saint in the human race.

A powerful being like this would become the backbone immediately after he arrived in Yingsha City.

The leaders from all schools and alliances were amazed.

At this moment, all the human monks were trapped in Yingsha City, which meant they couldn't get out to fight for genius treasures. When Chi Wansui arrived, the situation would definitely get better for them.

“Let's see whether that deity from Blood God Sect will still be this reckless in front of Chi Wansui.”

Some of the monks were gratified envisioning that Gu Linfeng would soon suffer.

As for Zhang Ruochen, he was fearless. He took Yan Tong's 'Blood-quenching Sacred Blade' and Bai Xinglou's 'Star Sea Dust' and held them in his hands. He mobilized two balls of flames and started to refine them.

Both Blood-quenching Sacred Blade and Star Sea Dust were thousand-pattern saint weapons, and they were extremely precious and powerful. Since Yan Tong and Bai Xinglou gave them to him, he would totally take them.

The leaders from Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion were all silent. They didn't take any further actions, probably either because they were intimidated by Zhang Ruochen's skills, or because they were waiting for Chi Wansui to arrive.

Half an hour later, two beings arrived at the back of the yard like wind.

And then, a man wearing a black robe and a woman wearing a red robe enveloped by blood gas walked in, going through the translucent reticle mask.

One of them was the tenth disciple of Discipline King Haiming, 'Ji Shui,' and the other one was 'Lan Ye' the thirteenth disciple.

Zhang Ruochen raised his head and smiled. “Uncle Ji, Uncle Lan, you’re in Blue Dragon Void World too.”

Lan Ye looked solemn without a smile on his face. He stood more than twenty meters away and said, “We’re the representatives of Saintess, her highness. We’re here to send you a message.”

“What message?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“Chi Wansui is about to arrive in Yingsha City. You’re not in his league and will be crushed if you fight him. Saintess hopes that you can forget about the unpleasant past and go back to Blood God Sect. The strength of the alliance is enough to resist Chi Wansui.”

Zhang Ruochen looked at a certain direction in Yingsha City as if he saw the beautiful body of Shangguan Xianyan. He smiled and said, “Go back to Blood God Sect? Is Saintess going to kill me or protect me after I go back?”

Ji Shui stood at the center of bloody mist and said with his dimming voice, “Deity, there’re many disciples in our Sect who really wish you could go back. There shouldn’t be any division in the Blood God Sect. United we are stronger. Our real enemies should be those savage beasts, instead of each other.”

Zhang Ruochen was smiling playfully and staring at the beautiful body of Ji Shui. “Uncle Ji, I don’t care what everyone else thinks. Do you hope that I can go back?”

Ji Shui was so angry that she was clenching her teeth. That Zhang Ruochen still dared play with her even when he was in such a difficult situation. She really wanted to slap him.

However, Gu Linfeng was more powerful than her, and he was a deity now, so Ji Shui was not strong enough to deal with him.

Ji Shui suppressed the urge to hit Gu Linfeng and said, “Of course, I wish that deity, your highness, can go back.”

“Okay. Since uncle Ji asked me yourself, I will of course say yes,” said Zhang Ruochen.

Ji Shui was a bit surprised. She didn't expect that bad boy to agree this easily.

Zhang Ruochen then said, "Under one condition, of course."

"What condition?" asked Lan Ye.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes glinted coldly, and he said, "I want Shangguan Xianyan to chop off the head of Wei Longxing herself and give it to me. If she can do that, I will go back to Blood God Sect and admit her as my second wife."

Ji Shui and Lan Ye went back to the alliance and told Shangguan Xianyan what Gu Linfeng said.

Shangguan Xianyan was certainly pissed, but there was a trace of a smile on her sparkling face.

Wei Longxing sneered and said, "He's still so puffed up with pride at this moment. When Chi Wansui arrives in Yingsha City, he might kneel down and beg us to take him."

"No need to care about him. If he wants to play with fire, then he'll be responsible for all the consequences coming," Shangguan Xianyan said, moving her red lips. She looked pretty at ease.

This was the first time she met someone who so lacked understanding of the state of affairs.

Actually, Shangguan Xianyan didn't want to kill Gu Linfeng in the first place. She might try to seduce him or to strip him of his authority, but all she wanted to do was to contain him.

And now, she finally realized that Gu Linfeng wasn't someone she could contain, so she would only let him die.

"Hong!"

Before Chi Wansui arrived, people in the north of Yingsha City heard a giant sound. A ball of black smoke surged.

And then, a sector of the wall more than one hundred feet long collapsed.

"Ao!"

The rumbling noise of savage beasts went into Yingsha City.

A large number of black scorpion beasts rushed into the city through a crack in the wall. Immediately, they knocked down lots of buildings.

Hundreds of human elites became their food in an instant.

“Run! Savage beasts are trespassing Yingsha City! Run for your lives!”

Everyone in the north was in a panic. Most of the human monks had fled. Only a few of those powerful monks chose to stay and fight the savage beasts.

However, there were too many savage beasts, and they were flooded in an instant.

“Ga!”

Savage beasts also showed up in the sky. Their bodies were at least more than ten feet long, some were more than a hundred feet long.

They were foretold raven beasts, which belonged to one of the twelve savage beast races, and they were level-five savage beasts.

Some of the incredible foretold raven beasts could evolve to level six, or even level seven.

The bodies of foretold raven beasts were engulfed in flames, and they emanated blazing light. They were like tens of thousands of suns hanging in the sky.

All of a sudden, Yingsha City became several times hotter.

After a short while, the north of Yingsha City was engulfed in fire.

A beautiful man with crimson wings stood in the sky. There was a fireball mark between his eyebrows, and he was exhaling sound waves. He gave an order, “Get into Yingsha City and kill all the human monks.”

All the humans were terrified by the chaos in the north of Yingsha City as they didn’t know exactly what was happening.

There used to be a guardian formation to ward off the savage beasts.

As for now, the formation had been sabotaged, which meant the savage beast army was able to get in without any resistance.

Zhang Ruochen looked serious. He looked at the north of the city, and he saw that the sky at the side seemed to be engulfed in flames.

A firegold raven more than a hundred feet long got through layers of formations and got into the center of Yingsha City.

It made an ear-piercing noise. It quickly dove and grabbed a monk from Fish-Dragon Realm with its claws.

“Help! Help me!”

That monk from Fish-Dragon Realm screamed in horror.

Zhang Ruochen wielded his Blood-Quenched Sword using his Sword Defending Technique.

The blade hit the foretold raven like a trace of bloody light.

“Pu Chi!”

That foretold raven was slashed into halves, and blood was spilled.

Two enormous halves of bodies fell onto the ground.

Unfortunately, before it was killed, it tore that monk from Fish-Dragon Realm into pieces.

Zhang Ruochen took back his Blood-Quenched Sword and held it in his hand. He said, “Sun, can you go and see what’s going on? The Guardian Formation of Yingsha City couldn’t have been destroyed that easily.”

Sun Dadi performed physical techniques and rushed to the north of the city.

At the same time, several alliances in Yingsha City also took action and rushed to the northern city, fighting against the savage beasts trespassing in the city.

After a short while, Sun Dadi came back.

Sun Dadi was dark all over his body, and his hair stood up with black smoke coming out. Sun Dadi was extremely

powerful, yet even he was slightly injured, which meant the battle in the north was wretched.

“The northern city is in ruins now. At least three thousand human elites were killed. Some of the savage beasts are exceptionally strong, and most of them are the living beings in ‘Half-Saint Rank’ and ‘Half-Saint Outer Rank,’” said Sun Dadi.

Zhang Ruochen asked, “Have you figured out why this is happening?”

Sun Dadi nodded and said, “I heard that the beast king of the firegold ravens turned into human shape and got into Yingsha City, and that’s how he destroyed the guardian formation of the north of the city, tearing down a large part of the city wall... And besides...”

“Besides, a monk saw that when the Firegold Raven Beast King damaged the formation, a couple of void world warriors were following him.”

Zhao Shiqi was furious and said, “There are human traitors helping the savage beasts. If I can figure out who they are, I’ll tear them into pieces.”

“I don’t think they’re human monks. Those void world warriors might be spies of the immortal vampires,” said Zhang Ruochen.

All of a sudden, Zhang Ruochen was dazed and said, “No! The spies of the immortal vampires might be heading toward other directions of the city to destroy the formation there.”

Almost all the human great beings were heading to the north now.

The south, the east and the west of the city were left completely unprotected. Once the formation of another direction was destroyed, the human monks would be caught in a crossfire.

If that happened, all the human monks were likely to be killed in Yingsha City.

Chapter 1051 - Perfect Team

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen closed his eyes and let out all his mind power. It turned into crowded light spots and flew to every corner of Yingsha City.

After a short while, Zhang Ruochen found somewhere unusual.

At this moment, all the human monks were rushing toward the north of the city, trying to expel all the savage beasts in the city.

On the contrary, three faint traces of forces were racing toward the south.

Zhang Ruochen put more mind power on them, after which he saw what they really looked like.

All three of them were wearing armor that only void world warriors wore, and they all looked ordinary. Nobody would be able to identify them if they were among the people.

The most suspicious thing was that their cultivation was only at the first change of Fish-Dragon Realm, yet they were as fast as high-level half saints.

“It must be them.”

Zhang Ruochen took back his mind power and opened his eyes. He looked ferocious.

“You have found the spies of the immortal vampires?”

Sun Dadi held the iron rod in his hand tightly. His eyes were gleaming with golden light, and he was keen to kill those spies.

He wouldn't have any reserve when he ran into the immortal vampires.

"I have found them, indeed."

Zhang Ruochen nodded and took the Universal Spiritual Map out of his lower abdomen.

And then, Huang Yanchen, Qing Mo, Sikong One, Sikong Two, Han Qiu, Murong Yue and the other six high-level half saints of the Murong clan all walked out of the spatial door and showed up in the courtyard.

Zhang Ruochen had told Sun Dadi his real identity. He didn't hide anything from him.

Sun Dadi didn't care about the identity of Zhang Ruochen at all, instead, he thought that he would have a bright future refining with Zhang Ruochen, the Time and Space Descendant.

Zhang Ruochen briefed them on the situation in Yingsha City.

Murong Yue and the six high-level half saints of the Murong clan had been secluding themselves for refining in Scroll World. With the divine blood provided by Zhang Ruochen, all of them had greatly improved their cultivation.

Now, they had come to Blue Dragon Void World, which meant they could only become true great beings after steeling their power.

Fighting savage beasts was a great way to steel their power.

Also, only through fighting could they bridge the gap between self-refining and real battles.

"Hua!"

Zhang Ruochen waved his sleeves, and three thousand-patterns saint weapons flew out. One was a blood broadsword, one was an ancient cauldron, and one was a chain of thirty-six blue pearls.

Blood-Quenched Sword.

Ice Soul Tripod.

Starry Sea Sand.

Zhang Ruochen entrusted Murong Chenfeng with Blood-Quenched Sword.

Murong Chenfeng was the most powerful half saint from Murong clan, and he was a level-nine half saint.

He was only an elementary level-nine half saint. After secluding himself in the Scroll World for a long time, he'd refined lots of divine blood and improved himself to the pinnacle of the level-nine half saint.

Murong Chengfeng was now more powerful than Yan Tong at his prime.

“Thank you for your blade, your highness.”

Murong Chengfeng kneeled down with one knee, showing veneration to Zhang Ruochen.

He had already known Zhang Ruochen's real identity. Murong Chengfeng used to be an official of Sacred Central Empire, which was why he was willing to help the prince.

With Blood-Quenched Sword, Murong Chengfeng's power surged like a tiger with wings. He became one of the strongest beings under State of Saint.

And then, Zhang Ruochen gave Starry Sea Sand to Murong Yue, and he gave the Ice Soul Tripod to Han Qiu.

As for Huang Yanchen, she was holding a divine sword bestowed by the empress herself, and the level of that divine sword was way higher than those Thousand-pattern Saint Weapons. She didn't need other weapons.

Zhang Ruochen stared at Huang Yanchen and said, “Sister, please follow me to deal with the three spies of the immortal vampires. As for the others, go to the north of the city to kill the savage beasts.”

Zhang Ruochen also gave an order to Sikong One and Sikong Two that they should kill as little as possible. They only needed to protect the others.

With Sikong One and Sikong two, even if they ran into the king of beasts, they should be able to get away.

After arranging everything, Zhang Ruochen looked to the five generals of the Canglong Army. He recalled how the people from the Zhang's were slaughtered. He clenched his fists and looked hostile.

He moved his lips and transmitted his voice to Murong Yue, telling her to do the thing for him.

Zhang Ruochen, Huang Yanchen and Qing Mo all performed their body techniques. They flew out of the courtyard and headed toward the south of the city, chasing the three void world warriors that looked suspicious.

Inside the courtyard.

Murong Yue was holding thirty-six dust sand pearls. She waved her arms and let out all the dust sand pearls, which hit the bodies of the five generals of the Canglong Army.

“Pu Chi!”

“Chi...”

The bodies of the five generals of Canglong Army were completely destroyed, then they fell on the ground.

Murong Yue looked unfeeling. She ordered the six high-level half saints from Murong clan to detach the saint souls from those generals and to put them in a jade jar.

Sun Dadi was shocked to his very core. He swallowed spit, stared at Murong Yue and said, “Sister... You...you are being way too cruel! All five of them were knighted, and they were the five great beings from Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion. You might get into a lot of trouble for killing them like that.”

Sun Dadi didn't hold back when suppressing the generals of Canglong Army.

However, suppressing them and killing them were different. Killing the generals basically symbolized a revolt, which would put her on the wanted list of the imperial government, and she would suffer from relentless revenge from Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion.”

Even Sun Dadi, who often acted recklessly, knew some boundaries he shouldn't cross. Even he didn't dare use such vicious tactics.

Murong Yue shot a cold glance at Sun Dadi and said, "It wasn't me who killed them. They were killed by savage beasts, and they were swallowed by the savage beasts."

The six high-level half saints from the Murong clan picked up the bodies on the ground, rushing toward the north of the city and throwing them into the savage beast group.

And then, they picked up some limbs and threw them back to the courtyard to create an illusion that they were eaten by savage beasts.

"Merciful God."

Sikong One and Sikong Two closed their eyes and prayed, bemoaning their death.

After a short while, Sikong One, Sikong Two, Sun Dadi, Zhao Shiqi, Han Qiu, Murong Yue and those six high-level half saints from the Murong clan rushed to the north of the city.

This team of twelve looked strange. Some of them were Buddhist monks, some of them were demonic way monks, some of them were powerful beings from the monkey-human clan, and some of them were assassins and beast tamers.

If Zhang Ruochen and Blackie were there, this would be the perfect team.

...

Three void world warriors wearing armor were rushing toward the south of the city.

The void world warrior at the front seemed to have sensed something. His body shook, and he said, "A mind power half saint just put his mind power on us. Perhaps our identity has been exposed."

"We need to be as fast as possible. We must destroy the guardian formation in the south of the city."

“If we can do so, the army base built by humans in Blue Dragon Void World will be destroyed as well.”

The void world warrior on the left said with his hoarse voice, “Relax, your highness. With my techniques on formation, all I need is fifteen minutes to destroy the guardian formation in the south.”

Just as the three void world warriors rushed to the city wall, a white divine sword flew out from above the wall, leading to a strand of sword shadows.

Huang Yanchen was standing at the top of the wall. Her fingers formed a sword sign, wielding the divine sword to stab toward the leading void world warrior.

That void world warrior immediately took out a token the size of a palm and held it in his hand.

“Hua La!”

With the Holy Qi being infused in the token, it gradually bulged and became a bloody shield that was thirty feet long and three feet thick.

The divine sword hit the light shadow shield, forming a powerful shock wave. That void world warrior fell back tens of feet away before he could balance again.

That bloody light shadow shrunk back to the size of a token.

That void world warrior shot a cold glance at Huang Yanchen who was standing at the top of the wall and sneered. He said, “I can’t believe there’s someone smart enough to figure out that I am heading toward the south of the city.”

Huang Yanchen was standing straight. She took back her divine sword and said, “Now that you know your identity has been exposed, why don’t you show your real body?”

“Our power will only surge if we show our real body.”

Those three void world warriors stopped hiding their identity. Cracking noises were emitted from their bodies, and sharp nails were grown from their fingers. Flesh wings grew from their back, and their eyes turned red. Even their faces looked completely different now.

The one standing at the front looked somewhat different from the other two.

Not only was he young, but he also had silver wings instead of flesh wings on his back, which were gleaming with silver light.

Which meant that his constitution must be exceptionally strong.

He was Tan Zhongli, who was the oldest son of the Blood King. He was a pinnacle level-nine half saint.

Certainly, with his great constitution, his fighting power was much stronger than Yan Tong and Bai Xinglou, who were at the same level as him.

Tan Zhongli gave an order: “Elder Jin, Elder Han, you two go destroy the guardian formation, and I’ll deal with her.”

“Shua.”

Zhang Ruochen showed up at the bottom of the city, standing at the center of the street. He looked heroic. “I’m going to fight you.”

Zhang Ruochen messed up their plan.

Elder Jin and Elder Han retreated and stood at the sides of Tan Zhongyu, trying to defend him.

Tan Zhongli stared at Zhang Ruochen, sneered and said, “The deity from Blood God Sect? Haha! All the human beings think that you’re a reckless and arrogant idiot, yet you’re the only one who saw through my disguise.”

Then, Tan Zhongyu said, “Unfortunately, you’re not my match.”

“Really? I don’t think so.” Zhang Ruochen smiled.

Followed by a sound, Hua, a white fat cat flew out of Zhang Ruochen’s clothes, landed on the ground, yawned and said, “Maybe the deity of Blood God Sect is not your match. I, together with him, should be enough.”

Tan Zhongli looked scornful. He didn’t even think of Zhang Ruochen and that fat cat. To him, only Huang Yanchen

standing at the top of the wall was his real enemy.

But then, Tan Zhongli's pupils shrank abruptly. He stared at the waist of Zhang Ruochen. He was surprised to see the bloody belt made of jade around his waist. He said, "Ten Saints Blood Armor... That's my father's Ten Saints Blood Armor. Why are you wearing that? Who are you?"

The road is indeed narrow for enemies. You are indeed a descendant of King Taige.

Zhang Ruochen took a look at the jade belt and pondered.

And then, he utilized the Holy Qi and infused the belt with it.

The jade belt immediately emitted a crashing sound. The belt extended and formed bloody armor, enveloping Zhang Ruochen's body.

Meanwhile, Zhang Ruochen's life force kept surging, reaching a whole new level.

Chapter 1052 - Tan Zhongli

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“Even if you have Ten Saints Blood Armor, you’re not my match.”

Tan Zhongli was furious when he saw the bloody armor worn by Zhang Ruochen. He rushed out and tried to stab Zhang Ruochen’s neck with an iron spear as thick as an arm.

The neck was a relatively weaker location of the Ten Saints Blood Armor.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t even try to dodge it. He utilized the Holy Qi in his body and infused it into his boxing glove. He slapped and hit the tip of the iron spear.

That iron spear was only a weapon of the true treasure class, which was a standard weapon for void world warriors. There was no way that it could withhold the power from Zhang Ruochen’s palms.

Peng!

The iron spear disintegrated into seven parts and flew out.

Tan Zhongli didn’t expect to kill Zhang Ruochen with merely an iron spear. Just as the iron spear cracked, he clenched his fist, which gleamed with silver light.

A demonic blade that was more than a hundred feet long condensed in front of his fist. There were traces of silver engravings on that demonic blade, which looked bizarre.

The force of his fist formed a demonic blade.

Tan Zhongli was performing fist techniques at saint spell level. He had almost finished refining his saint spells, and he

could wield attack power 27 times stronger than he actually was.

“Hong Long.”

His fist hit his palm, and layers of blood Qi waves tumbled out.

Zhang Ruochen kept retreating rapidly. He stepped back to the edge of the wall, only after which was he able to resolve the power of the fist.

“No wonder he’s a top-tier pinnacle level-nine half saint. If I don’t use the power of time and space, it’ll be very difficult for me to rival him now.”

Zhang Ruochen had a strong urge to become a level-six half saint.

If he could become a level-six half saint, Zhang Ruochen was likely to beat Tan Zhongli even without using Ten Saints Blood Armor.

Tan Zhongli only took a small step back due to that crash, but he was still shocked as Zhang Ruochen was only a level-five half saint, yet he was able to resist his attack without being injured at all.

He used to annihilate the soul and the body of a level-nine half saint with that move before.

A team of soldiers was standing near the gate in the north of the city.

That team had around thirty people, all of whom were wearing armor and holding long swords. They were all energetic, the elite soldiers from Wan family.

Wan Huayu was wearing Fire Saint Armor Plating, revealing her white and smooth calves, flat belly and long neck. Only her breasts, her waist and her feet were covered by the armor. She appeared to be a sexy heroine.

She was standing at the front of the army with her arms crossed. She looked into the distance at Tan Zhongli and Zhang Ruochen. She said, “Who told me that the deity from

Blood God Sect is stupid? Not only is he intelligent, his power is more terrific than heirs at the same level.”

Zhang Ruochen was not the only one who was aware of the schemes of the immortal vampires. Wan Huayu was also intelligent enough to sense the unusual activities of those three void world warriors, which was why she rushed to the south of the city with some soldiers from her family.

Gu Linfeng’s power was indeed out of Wan Huayu’s expectations. This was the first time she realized that as Gu Linfeng matured, he might actually top the ‘Half Saints Rank.’

He was almost in the same class as that Time and Space Descendant.

A purple-caped elder was standing beside Wan Huayu. He was also impressed and said, “Princess is indeed more observant. I miscalculated this time. However, I am also curious why he can’t deal with Shangguan Xianyan with all the intelligence and power he has.”

Wan Huayu smiled and said, “I bet that he left the Blood God Sect on purpose instead of being chased away by Shangguan Xianyan.”

Wan Huayu then continued, “I think there’s some secret behind him that he’s trying to hide from everyone, and that’s why he does it.”

Gu Linfeng was only a level-five half saint, yet he had such exceptional power. There must be an unknown reason behind this.

Time and space descendant Zhang Ruochen had the power that surpassed the heirs because he refined Five Elements Chaotic Body and seized God’s Destiny, and he had the power of time and space.

How come Gu Linfeng had obtained such power?

Perhaps he obtained inheritance from a supreme saint, or even an ancient god.

“What kind of secret is it?” Wan Huayu was curious, and she was interested in the background of Gu Linfeng.

Tan Zhongli stared at Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen. He reckoned that it was impossible to destroy the guardian formation as they were protecting the south of the city.

Besides, a group of powerful soldiers showed up behind them. Apparently, they were here to fight against them.

Now, Tan Zhongli was thinking of a way to escape Yingsha City instead of destroying the guardian formation.

“Retreat, now!”

Tan Zhongli gave an order, after which he flapped the silver wings on his back. He rushed toward the north of the city like a trace of silver light.

As for the other two members of the immortal vampires, Elder Jin and Elder Han, they closely followed him, trying to get away.

“I can’t let them get away.” Zhang Ruochen took out his Life-Death Mirror and infused Holy Qi into the bronze mirror.

The mirror surface turned bloody and flew to above those three immortal vampires, locating them.

Life-Death Mirror was a Thousand-pattern Saint Weapon that was coined imitating Blood Sea Demonic Mirror, so it had suppressing effects on the immortal vampires.

“Hua!”

A three-foot bloody light pillar rushed out of the mirror and smashed toward those three immortal vampires.

One of the immortal vampires didn’t manage to dodge it and thus got hit. He gave a blood-curdling scream.

Peng!

His body exploded and turned into bloody mist.

The surface of the Life-Death Mirror formed absorbing power and sucked the bloody mist in.

And then, the Life-Death Mirror condensed power and made a second attack.

“Pu Chi!”

The second light pillar bashed a second immortal vampire, which smashed him into bloody mist again.

By now, Tan Zhongli was the only immortal vampire who was alive. He rushed toward the north of the city.

“Gu Linfeng, you dare make yourself an enemy of the immortal vampires. You’ll die without a burial place.”

Tan Zhongli glared at Gu Linfeng, who was chasing him. He was beyond indignation and extremely hostile.

One of the immortal vampires was a level-nine half saint, and the other one was the level-nine mind power half saint. It was difficult to cultivate powerful beings like them, so Tan Zhongli was furious seeing them killed by the Life-Death Mirror.

If the base of Yingsha City wasn’t this dangerous, he would choose to kill Gu Linfeng instead of running away.

Zhang Ruochen also looked belligerent. He controlled his Life-Death Mirror and made another attack at Tan Zhongli.

Tan Zhongli didn’t even try to dodge it. He opened the two pairs of silver wings on his back wide to cover his head.

The light emanating from the silver wings formed a giant silver light ball, which resisted the light pillar from the Life-Death Mirror.

No wonder he’s a descendant of King Taige. He’s indeed extraordinary, Zhang Ruochen thought.

The elite warriors from Wan family, led by Wan Huayu, blocked Tan Zhongli’s way.

All the thirty-something warriors were half saints. They performed a combined move of martial arts at Tan Zhongli.

“Hong!”

“Hong Long!”

Some of the monks used lightning shuttles, some monks condensed flame hands, some monks used their blades and swords. Each move was exceptionally forceful.

However, instead of killing Tan Zhongli, those attacks barely injured Tan Zhongli.

“Those who try to stop me will die!”

Tan Zhongli was extremely powerful. All of a sudden, all those thirty-something half saints were crushed, including three level-nine half saints. None of them were able to resist his attack, and they all bounced away.

Wan Huayu and the purple-caped elder teamed up and rushed toward Tan Zhongli. However, he didn't mean to fight them directly. Instead, he performed a strange physical technique and bypassed them.

“Damn it.” Wan Huayu clenched her silver teeth.

Two fiery clouds came out of the back of the Fire Phoenix Armor, forming a pair of blazing wings that were more than one hundred feet long. Wan Huayu picked up a broad flame sword, flew up and rushed toward Tan Zhongli.

Tan Zhongli was already immensely powerful, so it was difficult to kill him if he really tried to get away.

“Hua!”

Huang Yanchen wielded her divine sword and performed Sword Four.

The divine sword chased Tan Zhongli like a trace of white light, hitting his back and piercing a silver wing of his.

Tan Zhongli's wings started to bleed silver blood.

Zhang Ruochen was racing on the ground, infusing the Life-Death Mirror with Holy Qi. The Life-Death Mirror condensed another light pillar and hit Tan Zhongli's head.

This time, Tan Zhongli failed to resist it completely. He was wounded on several spots on his body, bleeding persistently.

Meanwhile, Wan Huayu and the purple-caped elder attacked Tan Zhongli from two different directions, beating him to a pulp. Tan Zhongli's body became so tattered that it might crumble if it suffered several more attacks.

Tan Zhongli rushed into the group of savage beasts and to behind the beast king.

Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen immediately stopped. They looked cautious, and they didn't go forward recklessly.

The power of the beast king was far greater than that of Tan Zhongli.

That beast king was a firegold raven. He had the body of a human being, and he looked exquisite. There was a crimson flame mark between his eyebrows.

He stood in the sky as if he were a flame god judging everyone.

Wan Huayu rushed forward and tried to fight the Firegold Raven Beast King, yet she bounced back, spitting blood out.

“Petty human beings. You'll all die today.”

The Firegold Raven Beast King looked down coldly. He reached out his hand and pressed toward Wan Huayu from the distance.

“Chi Chi!”

The power of flames quickly gathered above Wan Huayu, condensing a crimson claw that was more than a hundred feet long. It slapped down.

“Careful, princess!”

The purple-caped elder rushed to Wan Huayu in time and waved his arm, after which Holy Qi rushed out and formed a purple cloud, resolving the attack from Firegold Rave Beast King and saved Wan Huayu.

Chapter 1053 - Beast King

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Wan Huayu had a very powerful protective charm on her. She took a hit from Firegold Raven Beast King directly and wasn't that badly hurt.

She quickly recovered after taking a medicine pill.

Firegold Raven Beast King's golden eyes were like amber. He stared deeply at the purple-clad elder. "There's finally a truly strong cultivator."

"Princess, leave here. I will take care of it."

The purple-clad elder's expression was serious. Every wrinkle was pulled taut. He viewed the Firegold Raven as a great enemy.

Whoosh—

The elder shook his arms at the same time. Two puffs of purple smoke flooded out of his sleeves. Bright bolts of lightning zipped through the smoke, crackling. A large mass of the beasts nearby were turned to dust.

"Interesting."

Firegold Raven Beast King extended a finger. A bright flame flew out of his fingertip. It pierced the purple Qi and went straight for the elder's forehead.

The light was as thin as a needle, but it contained horrifying penetrative strength.

Wan Huayu wanted to help the elder. She took out a Hundred-pattern Saint Weapon shield and sent it out. However, the

shield created from Xuan ice metal was pierced immediately and sliced like tofu.

“Princess, you aren’t its match. Hurry and retreat to a few hundred feet away.”

The elder’s hair and beard were all flying. His cultivation was amazing. A jade hoop flew out of his right wrist. The hoop was the size of a stone mill. It spun gradually and stopped the firelight.

Whoosh.

A shred of light flew out of all of Firegold Raven Beast King’s fingers, enveloping all the space within a few hundred feet. Any creature below the pinnacle of the Ninth Level of the Half-Saint Realm would definitely die if they tried entering the zone.

Zhang Ruochen pulled Huang Yanchen to a very far place. He didn’t want to get involved in this fight in case there were unpredictable troubles.

The beasts and human Monks in the north were in a stalemate.

The hole in the city wall wasn’t very big. A few savage beasts had rushed in. In terms of number, the humans had an advantage. They pushed the beasts to the north of the city, not allowing them to reach the other three zones.

Other than Firegold Raven Beast King, five more Beast Kings also broke into Yingsha City. They were from five different beast tribes.

Of them, the Golden Scorpion King was the strongest. It was like a golden mountain. Each step it took would shake the ground.

It wasn’t clumsy. Instead, it was very fast and sensitive. It killed at least 1,000 elite human Monks.

The Golden Scorpion King’s defensive abilities were terrifying too. Zhang Ruochen used the Life-Death Mirror and hit it with a beam of light but couldn’t even get past the outer level.

The Golden Scorpion King noticed Zhang Ruochen. Knowing that he was a strong human, he spat out a noxious cloud of

inky black smoke that surged toward Zhang Ruochen.

Sizzle.

Everything on the ground corroded into black, including the dirt.

As for the humans, they turned into puddles of thick blood. Not even a single bone was left.

Zhang Ruochen wore the Ten Saints Blood Armor and didn't fear toxins. He retreated to the distance and immediately contacted Sikong One and Two. After confirming their location, he used a physical technique to rush over.

Everyone was grouped together. The weaker Monks, such as Han Qiu and Murong Yue, stood in the center. The stronger ones, such as Sun Dadi and the six high-level Half-Saints of the Murong Clan, stood on the outside.

They'd already killed hundreds of beasts. The ground was littered with corpses. Their results were obvious.

When Zhang Ruochen returned, he immediately entered the heart of the battle ring. "We won't have any results by being stuck in Yingsha City," he said. "Now is a very good chance. We must take advantage of the chaos and break through. We can only find endless Genius Treasures by entering the Blue Dragon Void World so everyone can become truly strong cultivators."

Sun Dadi struck his staff, splattering a firegold raven's blood. He laughed. "Just what I want. I wanted to break through long ago. I'll lead the way now."

He rushed to the forefront of the team, sweeping his metal rod side to side. Any beast that caught the rod was split into pieces.

Boom, boom.

In an instant, dozens of huge beasts fell under his rod.

Blackie climbed to Sikong Two's head. Standing at the highest point, he commanded everyone. "All corpses of Grade Six beasts should be dragged to the center of the team and stored in the spatial ring."

“The blood and soul of a Grade Six beast can be used to create pills for improving physique. Once we produce it, everyone will get a share.”

A moment later, Blackie added, “Creating Divine Origin Pills requires the blood and soul of Grade Six beasts too as the lead.”

Blackie was knowledgeable in creating pills and formations. No one doubted its words.

Usually, it wasn't easy to find a Grade Six beast. Now, it was different. There were Grade Six beasts everywhere, including corpses on the ground. It was practically a waste if they didn't collect them now.

At the same time that they killed beasts, everyone quickly collected the corpses and dragged them to the center of the team.

“Living Grade Six beasts can be captured,” Zhang Ruochen said. “Give them to Zhao Shiqi and let him control them into battle beasts.”

To avoid other human Monks discovering the secret of the spatial ring, Han Qiu used a dark rule to cover the entire team. They formed a black hole that was dozens of feet wide.

This way, no Monk could peek into their secret.

From afar, they could only see a black hole moving gradually out of the city. They couldn't see Zhang Ruochen, Huang Yanchen, and the others inside the dark zone at all.

Even the savage beasts would lose their vision after breaking into the dark zone.

The Way of Darkness was one of the Nine Ancient Ways. Naturally, it was extraordinary. It was equivalent to the Way of Time and Space. However, Han Qiu's cultivation was still very low. She couldn't produce the true might of the Way of Darkness.

They were going against the current of savage beasts and ran into more and more. It looked like a little boat going against a flood.

Even with Sun Dadi's strong combat ability, they could only push forward slowly.

"I'll help open the way."

Zhang Ruochen flashed to the front of the team. He stood with Sun Dadi and started attacking the beasts viciously.

With the two working together and rushing forward, they finally picked up speed.

Chapter 1054 - Breakout

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Huang Yanchen walked to the back of the team. She used her saint sword to kill all the savage beasts that pounced from behind.

Her sword technique was very harsh, completely displaying the advantage of a swordsman. Each sword she cut out would fell a mass of beasts.

In 15 short minutes, they'd already killed more than 1,000 powerful savage beasts. Everywhere they went, they would leave behind many corpses.

One must know that the beasts that could come to the Blue Dragon Void World were at least Grade Four beasts. Each one was aggressive. There were no low-level beasts.

The humans all looked into the distance.

They saw that any beast groups that reached the edge of the black hole would either be turned into corpses or disappear. It was very odd.

“What’s...going on?” some humans asked. “How come a dark zone has appeared?”

They didn’t notice the black zone earlier, until the dark zone killed into the heart of the beast groups alone and left behind a pile of corpses.

“It must be some large force that wants to use the chaos to break through Yingsha City,” someone guessed.

Of all the humans present, probably only Wan Huayu knew that it was the group led by Gu Linfeng, Deity of the Blood

God Sect. She had been watching Gu Linfeng's every move and watched them kill toward the city gate.

At first, she'd thought that Gu Linfeng was on a suicide mission. She didn't suspect that he could actually create a bloody path and reach the hole in the city wall.

Staring at the beast corpses on the ground, she was chilled. "It seems that I've still underestimated Gu Linfeng," she muttered to herself. "He must have some other top fighters beside him."

The battle between the purple-clad elder and Firegold Raven Beast King reached an intense level. Finally, because the elder was too old and couldn't fight for long, his blood and Qi deteriorated and fell into a disadvantage.

Boom, boom!

The Firegold Raven Beast King was filled with energy. His attacks grew stronger and stronger.

The purple-clad elder could only keep retreating. He crashed against a wall and flattened all the buildings on the right of the street. His face was very pale and blood trickled out of his mouth. His wrinkled hands couldn't stop shaking.

"If I...was 30 years younger...I would definitely defeat you..."

When he finished speaking, he immediately coughed. More blood flowed out of his mouth. He was heavily injured. His organs had all cracked. It was already a feat for him to have survived until now.

The other major battlefields were looking unpromising too. The Beast Kings were very strong. They left behind corpses wherever they went.

In the near distance, the Blood God Sect, Shangguan Clan, and Cai Family alliance were fighting against the Golden Scorpion King. Rather than defeating it, they suffered great losses instead.

Even Hai Lingyin, Shangguan Yi, and Cai Jinglun working together could barely counter the Golden Scorpion King.

Wan Huayu led the strong cultivators of the Wan Family to create a formation. They finally defeated the Firegold Raven Beast King and saved the purple-clad elder.

Scorn filled the Firegold Raven Beast King's eyes. "What's the point of struggling more? Of the 12 beast tribes, only six tribes attacked Yingsha City, but you can only defend passively now. Will you be able to survive if the other six attack too?"

Wan Huayu looked toward the hole in the city wall and immediately ordered, "Form a combined battle formation and follow that dark zone to break out of the city."

The purple-clad elder said through his pain, "Princess, why are we breaking out from the front? If we open the other three defensive formations, won't we be able to escape easily?"

Wan Huayu shook her head. "Only six of the 12 beast tribes have charged into Yingsha City. The other six are definitely in the south, west and east. Not only will we be unable to escape after activating the city defensive formation, we'll also force the other human Monks into a surrounded situation."

Everyone had different choices. Some wanted to use this chance to break out of Yingsha City and enter the vast Blue Dragon Void World.

Others wanted to defeat the savage beasts and hold down the military base, preserving their lives.

Without a doubt, the former was more dangerous. If the breakthrough failed, everyone would die. However, for those who chose the latter, they would still be stuck in the military base even if they could defeat the savage beasts that had broken in.

The Wan Family was a very powerful middle age family. It was also influential in the Ministry of War. Many military Saints relied on them. Thus, Wan Huayu naturally had countless strong cultivators under her.

Most of them were from the army and had rich experience. Dressed in armor, they formed a triangular battle formation

and pushed forward, following Zhang Ruochen's group closely.

Groups of firegold ravens swooped down from the sky, but they couldn't break through the formation. Instead, many of them were killed or injured.

“Kill!”

Wan Huayu stood at the foremost of the battle formation. Wielding a sword, she halved all the beasts that charged at her.

The Firegold Raven Beast King wanted to kill Wan Huayu. A translucent ox skull appeared between its hands. It was only the size of a fist but was very smooth like a jade carving.

The ox skull's aura was terrifying. All the creatures in Yingsha City shivered.

“The aura of a Supreme Saint.”

Wan Huayu's head shot up and she stared at the beast king. She immediately waved her battle sword and pointed in the direction of the beast king.

The combination formation's power burst forth, forming the apparition of a huge battle sword. It cut down, crashing against the Firegold Raven Beast King's ox skull.

There was a huge boom and powerful waves of Qi rippled out from the formation. All the beasts and humans nearby were thrown out. Some of them exploded directly, becoming pieces of bloody bone.

The Firegold Raven Beast King was indeed powerful. The ox skull was a powerful weapon too. However, it couldn't counter the formation's attack. A bit hurt, it retreated into the group of firegold ravens.

Zhang Ruochen looked back and was shocked. “She could arrange all the Monks into a battle formation and wound a beast king in such a short time. This Princess Wan is actually quite powerful.”

Without caring about them anymore, Zhang Ruochen continued opening up a path. His hand kept slapping down, killing all the beasts blocking his path.

Now, they'd already rushed out of the hole in the wall and entered the desert outside the city. There were still countless beasts on the ground and in the sky. They continued attacking the group.

Of course, the beasts weren't as densely populated outside the city. Zhang Ruochen and Sun Dadi's burden lessened greatly.

The Monks of the Wan Family rushed out immediately after. A large group of savage beasts already attacked them. Zhang Ruochen's group naturally had less pressure, so they hurried up and charged into the desert.

The top families and clans inside Yingsha City saw that the dark zone and Wan Family had broken through the siege. They also rushed impatiently toward the outer city.

They wanted to enter the vast Blue Dragon Void World and look for an opportunity to become top fighters.

Some of the clans and families were attacked by beast kings and all of them died. Of course, some stronger ones broke out and started fighting with full power outside the city.

“Do not let them escape.”

A deafening dragon's roar sounded in the clouds, shattering some Monks' eardrums. Black clouds entered the sky and lightning and thunder rumbled.

A sandstorm lifted up from the ground and whooshed toward Yingsha City. One could vaguely see a huge horde of beasts running after the sandstorm, producing loud booms.

Chapter 1055 - The Heirs Arrive

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

There was a group of Lion Camel Beasts behind the sandstorm. They were 15 to 20 feet tall, with the heads and fangs of a lion and the body of a camel. They were covered in scales and had sharp claws.

There were two Lion Camel Beast Kings in the horde. They were dozens of feet tall and were like two small mountains.

One had blueish green scales. The other beast king had red scales.

The ground within a few miles of the blue Lion Camel Beast King turned to ice. Snow floated in the sky. The surroundings of the red one turned into a zone of fire. The yellow sand turned red and was about to melt.

Wan Huayu's eyes narrowed. Staring at the two Lion Camel Beast Kings and mass of beasts, she gasped. Her heart was in terror. If the beasts surrounded them, they would be attacked from all sides. The consequences would be unimaginable.

Plus, two beast kings had appeared at once. This was hopeless.

The other humans who'd escaped from Yingsha City felt despair too. They actually wanted to escape back into the city. However, with the current situation, they would suffer great losses to return to Yingsha City too.

"If I knew this, I wouldn't have broken through Yingsha City. It's even more dangerous out here."

Some Monks felt regret.

“We must break through before the Lion Camel Beasts arrive. Otherwise, all of us will die.”

“Sikong One, Sikong Two,” Zhang Ruochen yelled. “Go hold down the two beast kings. You two will open the road up next.”

Earlier, Sikong One and Two had been responsible for defense. They hadn’t attacked actively. This was because Zhang Ruochen didn’t want them to have too much blood on their hands. He was worried it would affect their cultivation.

It was different now though. He had to use their strength to escape with the fastest speed.

“Those two monks against two beast kings? Are you sure you’re not sending them to their deaths?”

Sun Dadi hadn’t seen Sikong One and Two attack before. He doubted their combat abilities.

“Young man, you don’t understand our Buddhist techniques.” Sikong One looked at Sun Dadi with scorn and rolled up his sleeves.

Then he extended a huge golden hand and patted Sun Dadi’s shoulder. He walked to the front of the team.

“Tiger Guarding Hell.” Sikong One clenched his fists and massive Buddhist light poured out. A bright tiger’s roar erupted within him.

Immediately following, a white tiger dozens of feet long appeared. It overlapped with Sikong One’s body.

A powerful aura burst forth entirely. When the roar had sounded, all the beasts within hundreds of miles had shaken in fear. Some of the birds fell from the sky with a tragic cry.

Sun Dadi was frightened too. He took dozens of steps back and said in surprise, “The big monk’s cultivation seems very advanced. Why didn’t you have them attack when we faced powerful enemies earlier?”

“They’re Buddhist monks. It’s best if they don’t kill anyone.” Zhang Ruochen’s expression was serious.

Sun Dadi looked at the fat Sikong One and chuckled. He couldn't tell how this monk looked like a cultivator of the Buddhist Way.

Roar!

There was a dragon's cry!

A huge black dragon appeared, combining with Sikong Two. Its aura was as strong as Sikong One.

Sikong One and Two attacked at the same time, going to meet the two Lion Camel Beast Kings.

Boom, boom.

The two beast kings couldn't take the two monks' attacks at all. They kept retreating and their huge claws actually trampled some weaker lion camels to death.

Seeing this scene, the humans outside the city were all overjoyed.

“Where did these two powerful monks appear from? They can actually crush beast kings?”

“Those two monks are powerful figures from the Outer Rank—Sikong One and Sikong Two. Of course they're terrifying. When they work together, they're equal to Kong Hongbi, the strongest human below the Saint Realm.”

There were only around 200 humans who'd made the Half-Saint Rank and Outer Rank. It wasn't hard to recognize the two Sikongs.

“Our chance is here. Take this chance to rush out.”

Sikong One and Two had attracted most of the beasts. It was suddenly less stressful for the other humans.

The human forces outside the city immediately started pushing out into the boundless desert. Once they escaped from the beasts, it would be like a dragon entering the skies. They could parade throughout the entire Blue Dragon Void World. If they found a Genius Treasure, they would quickly become top fighters.

All the human Monks who'd rushed out were excited. They had strong feelings of superiority. The humans inside the city were jealous. They tried their hardest to rush out and break free.

“No human can dream of escaping!” came a loud roar from the sky.

Immediately after, a dragon claw hundreds of meters long reached out from the clouds. It radiated with a reckless aura. It was like an ancient demonic dragon.

The scales on the claw were the size of pans. Grand demonic Qi swept through the surroundings.

“The Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon?”

Zhang Ruochen looked up. Staring at the cloud-sized claw, a chill went down his spine. Icy Qi surged from his feet, numbing his body.

Murong Yue, Han Qiu, Zhao Shiqi, Sun Dadi, and the high-level Half-Saints of the Murong Clan all paled. Their legs trembled involuntarily.

The Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon hadn't reached the Saint Realm yet, but its aura was more terrifying than some Saints.

Various clan alliances with close to 100 Half-Saint figures activated a combined formation to block the dragon claw's attack.

Boom.

The dragon claw had landed before the formation could form. The unstoppable force pierced the semi-transparent shield.

Poof.

“Run...”

Pained cries sounded here and there. Merely a claw had turned dozens of Half-Saints into mush. The other Half-Saints who were a bit stronger kept their lives, but they were still heavily wounded. They escaped in all directions.

The Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon was honestly too frightening. It hadn't revealed itself yet, but merely a claw could kill dozens of Half-Saints.

Yingsha City fell into terror too. All the humans were floored by the demonic dragon's power. If such a frightening creature entered Yingsha City, how many Monks could survive?

“Oh?”

Zhang Ruochen sensed something. He looked up into the sky.

A flaming meteorite plummeted from the sky, falling in the direction of Yingsha City. However, it slowed down more and more. Finally, it stopped and hovered above the city.

The fire died down, revealing a Void Ship. There were thousands of human Monks on it. Each one was a top figure. Using physical techniques, they jumped down from the deck like little black dots.

Amongst them, two were the most eye-catching—one man and one woman.

The man was quite burly but handsome. He wore golden armor and had a Kylin Spear. A purple-red cape hung from his shoulders.

The woman wore a white martial robe with a dark sword on her back. She was as beautiful as a sword fairy from a painting.

Some Monks from Yingsha City recognized them already.

“Chi Wansui from the Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion, one of the nine Heirs, is finally here. We're saved!”

“Beigong Lan from the Wu City Academy, one of the nine Heirs, has arrived at Yingsha City Base. Which of the beast kings can take her sword?”

“Two Heirs have arrived. They'll definitely drive the beasts out of the city.”

...

All the Monks grew excited. As if shot with adrenaline, they fought with 120% more energy and started attacking the beasts

ferociously.

With the humans outside the city blocking the beasts, no more beasts rushed into the city.

The humans gradually restricted the beasts and started attacking with full force.

Chi Wansui and Beigong Lan flew down at the same time. They landed in Yingsha City and started attacking the six beast kings.

“How dare you set foot in the human military base?”

Chi Wansui waved his kylin spear. Holy light flooded out, sending the Golden Scorpion King flying. It landed on the ground with a boom.

Even with the Golden Scorpion King’s combat ability, it still couldn’t block Chi Wansui’s hit.

Beigong Lan put her fingers into a sword print. Her sword streaked out.

Poof!

The dark saint sword pierced the Firegold Raven Beast King in the stomach as it flew in the sky. The sword created a bloody bowl-sized hole.

The Firegold Raven Beast King faltered and almost fell from the sky.

The other four beast kings in Yingsha City immediately rushed out. They united with the Golden Scorpion King and Firegold Raven Beast King to defeat Chi Wansui and Beigong Lan.

However, the two Heirs’s cultivations were boundless. They kept forcing the six beast kings back. A moment later, four beast kings were hurt. They rushed toward the city’s outside, trying to escape.

Only the Golden Scorpion King and Six-Armed Ape King could manage to hold on. Their bodies were bloody. It was only a matter of time before they were defeated.

“Haha! The Heirs that the Empress has emptied the human resources to train have finally appeared. I shall come meet you

and see if you've actually learned anything.”

A dragon roared from the clouds. Rings of soundwaves spread to thousands of miles away.

Closely after, a black dragon countless of miles long flew out of the clouds. It rushed toward the hole in the northern city wall.

It shrank quickly. When it landed, it was only a few hundred feet long. Even though it had shrunk in size, its aura hadn't weakened.

Black clouds tumbled and lightning cracked wherever it went. It was like the world was about to end.

Chapter 1056 - Omen

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“The Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon cannot enter Yingsha City. I will stop him.”

Chi Wansui stomped on the ground and shot hundreds of feet into the air like a rocket. When he landed, he was already outside the city.

Several large flying beasts tried to stop him on the way, but he crushed them with his body. They fell to the ground in bloody chunks.

Whoosh—

The Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon spiraled hundreds of feet in the air. It shrunk into the form of a man in black clothing. Shreds of black dragon-shaped fog snaked around his body, wailing.

Right now, the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon looked no different from a human. Even a Saint wouldn't be able to see his true form.

The man looked down at Chi Wansui and laughed. “I've looked at the Half-Saint Rank that the Saint Lady wrote. You must be Chi Wansui, ninth place. So what? Even the human Saints think that you're weaker than me, but you still want to fight me?”

“The Half-Saint Rank might not be entirely accurate.”

Chi Wansui's aura was vibrant. His entire body shining gold, he rose up gradually until he was at the same height as the man in black.

“Indeed, the Half-Saint Rank isn’t very accurate, but you aren’t my match,” the man said. “That part is true.”

The man and dragon were both determined. They didn’t believe in the Half-Saint Rank; they only believed in themselves.

The Holy Qi ripples between them grew stronger. Any creature that approached them would die.

Kaboom.

A golden and black figure quickly intertwined. They collided, producing shockwaves that shook the sky as if wanting to rip it apart.

The spatial structure of the Blue Dragon Void World was already fragile. It couldn’t really take their strength.

Tiny spatial cracks appeared in the center of the battle zone. They were thinner than thread and healed quickly, so most Monks couldn’t feel it at all.

After dozens of hits, Chi Wansui couldn’t take the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon’s attack anymore. He flew back and hit the city wall.

Roar!

The Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon transformed back into its original form. Extending two large dragon claws, it pressed down, wanting to slap Chi Wansui into the ground.

The claw merely scraped the city wall, but the wall was already shaking. Fortunately, the city defensive formation was protecting it. Otherwise, another chunk of the wall would have fallen.

Chi Wansui rushed out from underground. Wiping the blood at his lips dry, he poured Holy Qi into the kylin spear. Concentrated runes emerged instantly. Forming the Destruction of the Thousand Runes, he attacked the dragon again.

With Chi Wansui’s cultivation, he could use the Destruction of the Thousand Runes without using up all his Holy Qi. He could utilize it many times.

Even faced with the Destruction of the Thousand Runes, the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon was still unfazed. “What about a Thousand-pattern Saint Weapon? My claws are more powerful.”

It struck with a claw, going straight against the kylin spear. The Destruction of the Thousand Patterns didn't hurt it. Instead, its power repressed Chi Wansui, forcing him to retreat.

In the distance, Zhang Ruochen's group had broken free from the beast groups and was hundreds of miles away but didn't leave. They watched the battle at Yingsha City.

If the beasts really broke in and started to massacre the humans, Zhang Ruochen still wanted to help. He wouldn't stay away.

Blackie constructed an invisibility formation with the fastest speed and shielded everyone.

Zhang Ruochen was still worried that some sensitive beasts could see through the formation and discover them. Thus, he gripped the Buddhist rosary that Master Yintuoluo had given him and poured Holy Qi into it.

The beads emanated a mysterious strength and covered them all. It could cover all types of auras and even avoid the calculations of Spiritual Saints.

Standing beside him, Huang Yanchen said, “Chi Wansui and Beigong Lan have finally arrived. They're unable to break through the siege of 12 beast groups, but it won't be hard for them to guard Yingsha City.”

Zhang Ruochen nodded, agreeing with him.

Blackie revealed its sharp teeth. “Chi Wansui is quite powerful. He has a human's body, but he can fight with the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon for so long. If he was in the ancient times, he'd definitely become a top emperor.”

Blackie seemed to be praising Chi Wansui, but the humans present felt upset, like it was insulting humans.

“Don’t look at me like that. I’m speaking the truth,” Blackie said. “In ancient times, the dragons were the sovereigns of the Kunlun’s Field. The Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon race was one of the top three dragon races. The human emperor was leagues away at the same plane.”

Sun Dadi rolled up his sleeves, wanting to beat the cat up.

As if Blackie couldn’t see everyone’s angry eyes, it continued, “In the ancient times, especially in the beginning when the universe had just been born from chaos, a batch of creatures was born. They all had extraordinarily strong bodies. Some of them were even stronger than Zhang Ruochen currently. Unfortunately, at the end of that period, the laws of Kunlun’s Field changed dramatically. Many of the powerful creatures couldn’t produce offspring anymore and went extinct in the end.”

“Some of them used methods that went against nature to preserve the seeds of their lives. Otherwise, we wouldn’t be able to see pure ancient creatures now. The Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon is one of them. It will once again challenge you humans’ status as the sovereigns of the world.”

Sun Dadi wasn’t impatient about beating it up. “You think the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon is undefeatable, but he’s only third on the Half-Saint Rank. There are still people who can defeat it.”

Blackie turned its furry and fat head and stared at Sun Dadi as if he was stupid. “The Half-Saint Rank only looks at their current abilities. The dragon clearly has a lot of room for improvement. It may very possibly become first in the future.”

Sun Dadi shook his head and chuckled. “If we’re talking about room for improvement, no one is better than Big Brother. No matter how strong the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon is, it won’t become first.”

This time, Blackie fell silent. It didn’t refute Sun Dadi.

It made sense. Zhang Ruochen was indeed an oddity. Even in ancient times when the world was in chaos, he probably could have still become a powerful figure.

“Chi Wansui is going to lose!” Huang Yanchen said.

Everyone looked toward Yingsha City. Chi Wansui’s armor was damaged and he was bleeding everywhere. He was horribly injured.

On the other hand, the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon only lost a scale. It wasn’t hurt at all.

The two had very different combat abilities. However, Chi Wansui was already very powerful. He’d gone against the dragon hundreds of times.

After all, most Monks on the Half-Saint Rank would find it difficult to take even one of the dragon’s hits.

While they were fighting, Beigong Lan had led the human Monks to drive most of the beasts outside Yingsha City. Dozens of formation masters also worked together to rebuild the hole in the city defensive formation.

Chi Wansui didn’t keep fighting against the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon. He immediately escaped back into the city.

The city’s formation was immediately activated. All the Spiritual Qi within thousands of miles converged toward Yingsha City. Beams of thick lightning fell from the sky.

Boom, boom!

Within 15 minutes, tens of thousands of beasts were struck by lightning, turning into piles of charred corpses.

In the end, the beast kings were forced to take their beasts and retreat to hundreds of miles away.

The first major battle between the humans and 12 beast groups finally ended. Both sides suffered heavy losses. No one had benefited.

“We finally saved Yingsha City,” a high-level Half-Saint from the Murong Clan said. “This is good. At least most humans are saved.”

Murong Yue walked toward Zhang Ruochen, bowing slightly. “Your Majesty,” she said. “Can we leave here now?”

Zhang Ruochen closed his eyes. “No, no,” he mumbled to himself. “How can this be?”

“What happened?” Sun Dadi asked.

Everyone grew nervous. They pulled out their saint weapons with guarded expressions. Just then, the ground started rumbling and then shaking violently. It felt like the world was spinning.

Earthquake.

The quakes reached tens of thousands of miles away and lasted for a candle’s time. Both humans and beasts were terrified.

“The tectonic plates are shaking. Is the Blue Dragon Void World going to be destroyed sooner than predicted?” some humans guessed.

The shaking was obvious within the city too. Many buildings collapsed, but thankfully, the Monks were all strong. There were no casualties.

Five hundred miles away from Yingsha City, a 100-meter-wide crack opened up. It stretched for 1,000 miles and was a shocking sight from afar.

Seven-colored lights emerged from the crack. They shot into the sky, connecting with the clouds. The entire sky became dreamy. The beams of light had a soft fragrance too, which spread out with the wind.

Blackie stood up like a human and widened its round eyes. It sniffed strongly and stared at the light in the distance.

“White, indigo, blue, green, red, purple, and black. The seven colors... That is a sign that a Grade Seven Saintly Source Spring will come into being.”

Chapter 1057 - Saintly Source Spiritual Qi

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Blackie's surprised cry was strange to everyone. They didn't know why it was so shocked.

Sun Dadi couldn't stand it anymore. Rushing over, he caught it and said, "Fat cat, what are you rambling about?"

Annoyed, Blackie uttered, "Let go."

"No."

Sun Dadi didn't fear Blackie at all and didn't like it either. He wanted to beat it up.

With a whoosh, Blackie shrunk to the size of a mosquito. It escaped from Sun Dadi's hold and climbed to his head.

Sun Dadi was in pain. Two bloody claw marks appeared on his hands. Instantly growing furious, he roared, "How dare a fat cat hurt me? I'm your lord!"

The man and cat started fighting.

Blackie was extremely fast and could change its size. Sometimes, it was only a speck of light. Other times, it was the size of a house.

Even with Sun Dadi's cultivation, he still couldn't catch Blackie. Instead, there were dozens of paw marks on him.

"Stop fooling around!" Zhang Ruochen pulled them apart and said to Blackie, "You mentioned the Grade Seven Saintly Source Spring. Is it related to the Saintly Source Sacred Liquid?"

The liquid was the main medicine for creating Divine Origin Pills. Zhang Ruochen naturally valued it.

Blackie stared at Sun Dadi with a provocative gaze. Then it sat on Zhang Ruochen's shoe and said, "The so-called Saintly Source Spring is a spring formed by Saintly Source Sacred Liquid."

"Fat cat, stop exaggerating. Saintly Source Sacred Liquid is extremely rare. Merely a small cup can produce a Divine Origin Pill. How can such valuable treasure form a spring?"

Then Sun Dadi continued, "From what I know, only the Saintly Source Spiritual Qi from spiritual leaves can form dew when a Void World dries up. You can only catch Saintly Source Sacred Liquid by using spiritual leaves. If you use regular stone, wooden, or jade containers, the liquid will lose their properties and become regular water.

"When a Void World dries up, it can produce around 800 to 1,000 cups of Sacred Liquid. That's when you collect it in time. Usually, it's already a feat to get 500 cups. The imperial court, ancient sects, middle-age clans, ancient races, and top clans will all fight for these 500 cups. It would be great for a force if they can get ten cups."

Sun Dadi had read information on the Sacred Liquid before coming to the Blue Dragon Void World. He naturally knew some things about it.

Blackie scoffed. "Kid, you only know the surface information about the Sacred Liquid."

Sun Dadi cracked his knuckles. He felt that this fat cat was purposely finding trouble for him. If he got the chance, he would definitely knock its teeth out.

"What you said was correct," Blackie said. "However, these only happen when the Void World dries up. Lower level Void Worlds will at most produce some Grade Three Sacred Liquid for Divine Origin Pills at or below that level.

"The Blue Dragon Void World is an upper level Void World. It's millions of times more vast than a lower level world. It naturally produces an immense amount of Sacred Liquid too.

Different types of liquids have different colors. Grade One is white, Grade Two is indigo, Grade Three is blue, Grade Four is green, Grade Five is red, Grade Six is purple, and Grade Seven is black.”

Blackie pointed in the direction of the crack.

“The seven-colored lights you see is the Saintly Source Spiritual Qi. If you collect the white light, you can produce Grade One Sacred Liquid. If you collect the indigo, you can produce Grade Two Sacred Liquid and so on. Collecting black light will give you Grade Seven Sacred Liquid.”

None of the Monks present could stay calm anymore. They stared at the floating light with heated gazes.

Even Sun Dadi and Murong Chengfeng at the Ninth Level weren't exceptions. They didn't need Divine Origin Pills to improve their cultivations, but if they collected some Sacred Liquid, they could sell it for top prices in Kunlun's Field.

By then, they could sell it for saintly pills to help them reach the Saint Realm.

“What are you waiting for? Go collect it! Once the Spiritual Qi reaches the ground, it'll lose its properties.”

Sun Dadi was crazed. He immediately pulled out dozens of spiritual leaves he'd prepared and laid them on the ground to catch the Saintly Source Spiritual Qi.

Sikong One licked his lips. He was also tempted, but he patted around his robe without finding a single spiritual leaf.

He'd dug out a lot of spiritual medicine from the Sikong Zen Temple, but he'd already sold it all for Spiritual Crystals.

“I've miscalculated!”

He was full of regret now and couldn't stop sighing.

The others were tempted too. They immediately took out all their spiritual medicine and put the leaves on the ground to collect the Sacred Liquid.

A while later, Sun Dadi laughed maniacally. “The first drop of Saintly Source Sacred Liquid has been produced!”

Seven-colored fog hovered over a palm-sized spiritual leaf. The leaf was damp and a drop of dew emerged. It shone with translucent light.

Sun Dadi immediately took out a gourd. He carefully put the first drop of Sacred Liquid into it. Then he put the spiritual leaf back onto the ground to continue collecting.

His gourd was also from a spiritual medicine. It could be used to collect the liquid.

Zhang Ruochen's group was only a few dozen miles from the crack. They were quite close, so the Spiritual Qi was very thick.

In one short hour, Sun Dadi had already collected dozens of drops. It was almost one small cup.

Sikong One stared at Sun Dadi's gourd. He rubbed his hands and stared with hot eyes, wanting to steal it.

The beasts seemed to sense the value of the Spiritual Qi too. They rushed to the crack and also took out spiritual leaves to collect with all their might. Some of them even stood near the crack and opened their mouths, breathing in the Spiritual Qi directly.

Humans couldn't digest Spiritual Qi, but some descendants of powerful beasts or ancient races could do so with their strong physiques. For them, absorbing Spiritual Qi could increase their cultivation and transform their bodies.

Lower beasts could transform into higher levels. The more Spiritual Qi they absorbed, the bigger the transformations. Some Grade Four Beasts could even turn into Grade Seven Beasts and become kings amongst the beasts.

The Monks within Yingsha City were all excited. They couldn't keep calm at all. They wanted to rush out of the military base and compete for the Spiritual Qi.

Yingsha City was very far from the crack, so even if the Spiritual Qi floated over, it was too thin to condense into liquid.

However, the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon had showed its true form, turning into a huge dragon, and curled up outside the city. It didn't give them a chance to escape at all.

“A Grade Seven Saintly Source Spring will appear soon. If the 12 beast groups receive it, Grade Four Beasts will turn into Grade Five Beasts and so on. I don't know how much stronger they'll become. By then, it'll be even less possible for us to leave.”

“We'll die if we rush out now too.”

“We suffered great losses in the city battle. If we go out, it'll be like an egg attacking a stone.”

The Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon's combat ability was terrifying. It traumatized the humans. No one was fearless before it.

Only Spiritual Qi was flooding out of the crack. One could imagine that later, large amounts of Sacred Liquid would come out. That was true Genius Treasure. Even a Saint would compete violently for it.

Thinking that the beasts would monopolize the spring, all the humans felt pained but were helpless.

Inside the invisibility formation, Sun Dadi was collecting Spiritual Qi happily. He was ecstatic.

Sikong One was so envious. He finally couldn't take it anymore. He walked over and tried to take Sun Dadi's gourd with his large hand.

Sun Dadi's movements were fast. He immediately hid the gourd behind him and yelled, “Monk, what are you doing?”

Sikong One felt awkward, but he still uttered, “What are you nervous about? I just want to see.”

Sun Dadi didn't believe him and felt worried. If this monk really wanted to take it, Sun Dadi wouldn't be able to defeat him.

He looked toward Zhang Ruochen, wanting the man to help him watch over the gourd. Sensing this, Zhang Ruochen just chuckled.

“Don’t fight over some Sacred Liquid. I’ll collect it now and everyone will have a share.”

Everyone looked over at him in confusion. How would he collect the Sacred Liquid? Under their scrutiny, Zhang Ruochen took out the Universe Spiritual Map. He unfolded the scroll and the space rippled around it.

Whoosh—

A huge branch rushed out and propped above everyone’s heads with a saintly aura. It was a branch from the Sky-connecting Divine Tree. Each leaf was the size of a pan. It filled the entire invisibility formation.

“Oh my, my...” Sun Dadi swallowed heavily. Staring at the divine tree, he said, “How big is this spiritual medicine? Big Brother, is this a saint medicine?”

Everyone present had entered the scroll world before. They looked at the leaves before them with reverence. They’d all benefited from the tree.

The vitality from the tree had increased their vitality greatly. Without it, they wouldn’t cultivate so quickly inside the scroll world either.

When cultivating under the tree, even breathing was like swallowing a spiritual pill.

Large amounts of Sacred Liquid soon condensed on the leaves and rolled down the sides.

“Help me create a Grade Six Divine Origin Pill. I must reach the Sixth Level before the Saintly Source Spring appears.”

Zhang Ruochen stared seriously at Blackie with his hands behind his back. He was interested in the Saintly Source Spring too, but he couldn’t compete with the beast kings in his current realm.

Once he reached the Sixth Level, his abilities would definitely improve greatly. His combat abilities would reach a new height too.

Chapter 1058 - Kiss Mark

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The invisibility formation was a few hundred square feet. It was quite a large space.

The leaves of the Sky-Connecting Divine Tree were like green tiles, covering the sky completely. They shone with green light and a few drops of Saintly Source Sacred Liquid would fall down every now and then. The collection speed was very fast.

Zhang Ruochen used the tree to create some wooden jars and gave one to everyone to store the Sacred Liquid.

Huang Yanchen looked in the direction of the gorge. Looking at the seven-colored Spiritual Qi, she said, “The Saintly Source Spiritual Qi coming out now can condense into 30,000 cups of Sacred Liquid every two hours. We can only collect a little bit while most are being taken away by the beasts.”

“We can’t help it,” Murong Yue said. “There are seven or eight beast kings guarding the gorge. Who can fight with them? The few forces that had run out with us are all hiding and collecting the liquid secretly. No one dares to go against the beast kings.”

A high-level Half-Saint from the Murong Clan said, “Actually, we’re already very lucky. The Monks trapped in Yingsha City can only watch from afar. They can’t get a single drop.”

As of now, Zhang Ruochen had collected a large jar of Sacred Liquid. The white Grade One Sacred Liquid was on the outside while the black Grade Seven Sacred Liquid was on the inside.

It looked like a full jar, but it was mostly low-level Sacred Liquid. There were only two or three drops of Grade Seven

Sacred Liquid, while the Grade Six was only a small cup too.

Zhang Ruochen separated the Grade Six Sacred Liquid. It was just enough to make a Grade Six Divine Origin Pill.

“Blackie, it’s up to you now!”

Blackie took the Grade Six Sacred Liquid and looked at the divine tree jar on the ground. He took the jar too and jumped into the scroll world. Production would be faster inside the scroll world.

Zhang Ruochen sat cross-legged on the ground. He prepared to fortify his cultivation plane and try for the Sixth Level.

Han Qiu walked over. There was a sweet smile on her face. “Your Majesty,” she said with a lovely voice. “Can I borrow your Shooting Star Invisibility Cloak?”

“Why?”

Han Qiu bit her lip girlishly with snow-white teeth. “I want to go to the crack and absorb the Saintly Source Spiritual Qi.”

She had the Form of Darkness and also cultivated the Way of Darkness. She could swallow anything in the world. Naturally, she could swallow the Spiritual Qi too.

“It’s too dangerous!” Zhang Ruochen said.

Han Qiu lowered herself gracefully and shook Zhang Ruochen’s arm with a pair of snow-white hands. Looking at him pleadingly, she said, “I have the power of darkness. I naturally have a way to fool those beasts. If I also have the Shooting Star Invisibility Cloak, I’ll be completely fine.”

Before Zhang Ruochen could speak, she continued, “I’m only in the Second Level now. I don’t want to be a burden. If I absorb a lot of Spiritual Qi, not only will my cultivation improve greatly, my Form of Darkness will also improve too.”

Han Qiu and Zhang Ruochen were very close together. They looked ambiguous.

Qing Mo looked with animosity at Han Qiu and grabbed Huang Yanchen’s shirt. “Princess, she’s so shameless. How

can she flirt with Lord Zhang so brazenly? Doesn't she know your relationship with him?"

Huang Yanchen turned around. Glancing at Han Qiu and Zhang Ruochen, she walked over.

Zhang Ruochen saw Huang Yanchen and was worried they would start fighting, so he immediately took out the Shooting Star Invisibility Cloak. He gave it to Han Qiu so she would leave.

Han Qiu was delighted to get the cloak, but she saw Huang Yanchen getting close in the corner of her vision. A sly look flashed past her eyes.

"Your Majesty, I love you!"

Her red lips quickly moved over and kissed Zhang Ruochen's face. Then she put on the Shooting Star Invisibility Cloak and disappeared.

Zhang Ruochen froze. He didn't expect Han Qiu would do that. Was she purposely causing trouble?

Huang Yanchen had walked over. Seeing the kiss mark on his face, she stayed calm. "Has Han Qiu completed the beginning of the Form of Darkness?"

Zhang Ruochen was relieved when he saw that Huang Yanchen wasn't angry. Nodding, he replied, "She cultivated the Taichi Nature Technique from the Taichi Way and resolved the crisis from the Form of Darkness. It's only a matter of time before she fully completes it."

"You keep her by you because of her Form of Darkness, right?" Huang Yanchen asked.

Zhang Ruochen finally realized something was wrong with Huang Yanchen's tone. He didn't want to keep discussing Han Qiu's body. Smiling gently, he said, "Han Qiu comprehends the Way of Darkness, one of the Nine Ancient Ways. Her potential is immeasurable."

"There's something that I want to say, but I'm afraid that if I say it, you'll think I'm being jealous and petty."

“Senior Sister,” Zhang Ruochen said. “We’ve gone through so much since the Wu City Academy of Heavenly Devil Mountain. What’s there that can’t be said?”

Huang Yanchen looked into the vast night sky with unfocused eyes. “The Form of Darkness is inauspicious, especially in the complete form. It gathers dark power and evil Qi. It’s known as the body of evil and is comparable to your Five Elements Chaotic Body.”

“I heard that the completed Form of Darkness can go between the netherworld and living world with ease. They can summon ghosts and dead spirits, ride dragon corpses, and command saint corpses. A completed Form of Darkness appeared in history and caused the catastrophe of an era.”

“You’re worried that I won’t be able to control her one day and will suffer from her backlash?”

“I wouldn’t be so worried if it was just the Form of Darkness,” Huang Yanchen said. “But she even comprehended the Way of Darkness. Together, it will definitely enable her to devour everything in the world. It may be possible for her to devour the entire Kunlun’s Field when she’s strong enough.”

The Way of Death, Evil, Demonic, Necromancer, Ghost Cultivation and more were all branches of the Way of Darkness. It was evident how terrifying the Way of Darkness was.

Han Qiu may very well become an evil creature. Huang Yanchen’s worries weren’t unfounded.

“Actually, I had the same worry before.” Zhang Ruochen chuckled. “But I’m confident in myself too. The Time and Space Descendant lives up to his name.”

Huang Yanchen looked at him with resentment. “Have you pretended to be Gu Linfeng for too long and really become an arrogant guy?”

“You should be confident in me.” Zhang Ruochen sighed.

Huang Yanchen smiled. Flipping her long blue hair, she kissed Zhang Ruochen’s other cheek. That moment, Zhang Ruochen

seemed to turn to stone. His shock was even stronger than that from Han Qiu's sudden attack.

Huang Yanchen smiled faintly. "How is it?"

"How is what?" Zhang Ruochen didn't understand.

"Two beauties kissed either side of your face. It should feel different, right? Do you think it felt better when I kissed you or her? Or are both feelings great?"

Before, Huang Yanchen wore her heart on her sleeve. After cultivating in isolation in the Tianlun Mark for 15 years, Zhang Ruochen couldn't figure her out anymore.

On the surface, she didn't care if Zhang Ruochen got close to other girls. It wasn't actually so though.

Zhang Ruochen grew more careful. Maintaining his cool, he wiped Han Qiu's mark away. "Senior Sister, when did you become so immature?"

Then he changed the topic and asked when Huang Yanchen would reach the Ninth Level.

She had a Grade Nine Divine Origin Pill. When her cultivation reached a certain point, she could easily reach the Ninth Level.

"Should be soon!" she said. "After accumulating for a bit longer, I can have a breakthrough."

Just then, something strange happened at the crack. The Saintly Source Spiritual Qi flooding out lessened considerably and thinned.

"What happened? How can this happen?" Everyone was shocked.

Confusion flurried through the savage beasts too.

"The Spiritual Qi coming out of the crack has decreased by at least half." Zhang Ruochen shot up and muttered to himself with a suspicious expression, "Could it be her?"

He immediately closed his eyes and searched for the Shooting Star Invisibility Cloak with his Spiritual Power. He'd refined the cloak before and left a shred of his power in it. This way, he could sense where it was.

It was actually thousands of feet underground where the crack was. Clearly, Han Qiu had gone into the crack.

There are many unknown dangers below the crack, he thought. Not even the beast kings dare to go in, but she did. I've underestimated her.

Half a day passed and Blackie finally finished the Grade Six Divine Origin Pill. He also produced some low-level Divine Origin Pills.

Zhang Ruochen gave a Grade Three pill to Murong Yue so she could reach the Third Level as soon as possible.

Then he entered the scroll world and took the Grade Six Divine Origin Pill. He began trying for the Sixth Level with all his might.

After around five days, he successfully broke through and reached the beginning phase of the Sixth Level. He didn't leave immediately though. Instead, he prepared to refine divine blood and continue working to improve his cultivation.

When he'd entered the scroll world, he'd told Blackie to notify him when the Saintly Source Spring appeared.

"I've turned the 14 apertures of my hands into saints. Now, I can refine divine blood and turn the 22 apertures of my arms into saints."

If he did so, his arms would turn into two saint arms. This would be a boost to both his palm and sword techniques.

Chapter 1059 - Cooperation

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

After improving his cultivation, Zhang Ruochen was much quicker at refining divine blood.

After a short while, Zhang Ruochen had successfully refined twenty-one drops of divine blood. A wave of heat was transmitted through Tantai Acupoint on his right arm. His arm became warmer and warmer, and then, it became a bright light spot.

The first acupoint of his arm started to be sanctified.

The strength of Zhang Ruochen's body was improved again.

Both of his arms had been confined with holy-level dragon souls and elephant souls. As he practiced Seven-Apertures Blood Palm, the blood in his veins rushed into his arm, breaking all the apertures.

All he needed to do was to refine divine blood to sanctify apertures, which would greatly improve his body strength.

Just as I expected, there will be more and more divine blood consumed by sanctified apertures. It isn't an easy task to be sanctified, Zhang Ruochen thought.

When Zhang Ruochen started to sanctify the first aperture, he only consumed seven drops of divine blood.

As for now, every time he sanctified the apertures on his arms, he needed more than twenty drops of divine blood, and they might need more in the future.

As Zhang Ruochen continued to refine divine blood, he transferred the holy power from the divine blood to Tantai

Acupoint on his left hand. He refined twenty-three drops of divine blood before he sanctified that aperture.

And then, Zhang Ruochen refined more than one hundred drops of divine blood consecutively and sanctified four apertures on his hands.

After which, twenty apertures in Zhang Ruochen's body had been sanctified.

He extended his arms, and twenty light spots showed up.

Enormous power ripples permeated, trembling the air around them, which made cracking sounds.

Not only did Zhang Ruochen's arms get stronger, his cultivation also reached mid-level-six half saint.

"I've sanctified twenty apertures, and I have sixteen apertures left, which is why my hands and arms have been drastically changed. God knows how many valuables I need to refine my body."

Now, Zhang Ruochen was only refining his body at an elementary level, yet it had taken him several hundred drops of divine blood.

If he wanted to sanctify his body, he might need tens of thousands of drops of divine blood to succeed.

No wonder there had only been a few monks who refined their bodies, as an entire ancient school was not enough for this.

It was a lot more difficult to sanctify one's body.

"Zhang Ruochen, I need you to get out. A pretty girl wants to date you." Blackie's voice was transmitted to Zhang Ruochen's ears.

What happened? Zhang Ruochen stopped refining divine blood and looked confused. He immediately walked out of the Scroll World and asked Blackie what happened.

Blackie lay on the ground without moving. He pointed at Sun Dadi and said, "I'm only responsible for sending a message. Ask him instead!"

Sun Dadi stared at Zhang Ruochen and said, “That princess from Wan family sent a secret signal which said that she wants to meet with you.”

“How do you know?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“She used a secret contact method from Blood God Sect, which can control Spiritual Qi, which can condense some strange fonts in the air and send the message.”

Sun Dadi pointed at the northwestern direction of the sky and said, “Look, it’s right there.”

Zhang Ruochen looked to where Sun Dadi pointed. He saw the Spiritual Qi circulating in a weird way ten thousand feet high in the sky, and it formed some fonts.

“That Princess Wan is indeed something. She knows the contact method within Blood God Sect.”

Zhang Ruochen was surely able to understand the communications fonts from Blood God Sect. He quickly translated it and figured out where Wan Huayu was.

Murong Yue was pretty cautious. She said, “Your highness, I don’t think it’s a good idea to go there. If Wan Huayu set us up to try to kill us, we’ll be at a great disadvantage.”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and said, “Now, our biggest enemies are the twelve savage beast races. Wan Huayu has no motive to kill me whatsoever. I bet she contacted me because of the saintly source spring that’s about to be born.”

Wan Huayu was far from enough to seize the saintly source spring.

As for Zhang Ruochen, it would be very difficult for him to get the saintly source spring too.

If they could cooperate, they might stand a chance against the savage beast army to get the saintly source spring.

“There’s no downside to go see her. The more allies we have, the better.” Zhang Ruochen had made up his mind.

Huang Yanchen stood up and said, “I’ll go with you.”

“Better me than you. We need a master for the negotiation.”

Sun Dadi volunteered while spinning his iron rod, forming a rod shadow.

And then, a couple others also volunteered to go with Zhang Ruochen.

“The savage beast races are very close to us. It’s easy for them to sense the human beings. The less people, the better.”

Zhang Ruochen put his hand under his chin, looked around and contemplated. Eventually, he chose Sun Dadi.

Sun Dadi was naturally excited. He guffawed and said, “Only a top-tier master like me is qualified to go negotiate with our brother. Everyone, please rest assured. I’ll come back safely with him.”

Zhang Ruochen looked around in the invisibility formation, yet he didn’t find Han Qiu.

She was still absorbing Saintly Source Spring instead of coming back.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t ask any further questions. He walked out of the invisibility formation with Sun Dadi and rushed toward where Wan Huayu was.

The soldiers from the Wan family were staying in the faraway district, which was more than one hundred and fifty miles from the crack, and it was well hidden.

Inside the district, there were three levels of invisibility formations that had been arranged.

Zhang Ruochen only sensed the formation when he got close to them.

He heard silver bell-like laughter from the invisibility formation.

“Deity, your highness, we’ve been waiting for you for a long time.”

Wan Huayu was wearing a Fire Saint Gold Armor Plating. She looked like a heroine. She walked out of the formation herself to greet Zhang Ruochen.

There were tents set up in the formation, and hundreds of monks gathered there.

Almost all of them were half saints, and only a few were monks from Fish-Dragon Realm.

At the center of the formation was a sand table with a diameter of ten feet. There were cracks on the ground, Yingsha City and some other topographies on it.

More than ten monks were standing around the sand table. There were men, women, youngsters and elders. Every monk was incredibly forceful. Apparently, they were all top-tier masters.

Zhang Ruochen attracted everyone's attention as he walked in.

A middle-aged man stared at Zhang Ruochen and said, "Is he the guest you were waiting for, your highness?"

"That's right."

Wan Huayu smiled and said, "Let me introduce him. This is the deity from Blood God Sect, Gu Linfeng."

"There's no need to introduce him to us, princess. Gu Linfeng has been well-known in Yingsha City. All of us know him," the middle-aged man said.

Wan Huayu stared at that middle-aged man, and she looked slightly irritated. She didn't say anything about that. Instead, she immediately introduced everyone present to Zhang Ruochen.

They were from Feng family in the south, Black Sword Clan from the central and Black Market Excellence Hall from the north.

They had all escaped Yingsha City while being encircled by tens of thousands of savage beasts, which meant they were powerful.

It took Wan Huayu a lot of effort to get all of them here.

That middle-aged man was called Feng Wanli, who was one of the leaders in Feng family from the south, and he had deep cultivation.

Zhang Ruochen stared at Feng Wanli, smiled and said, “It appears that you guys don’t want me here.”

Feng Wanli said, “We gather here to discuss how to get the saintly source spring. You’re powerful enough to help us, but you aren’t qualified to be a part of the decision team. All you need to do is to follow us, then when we get the saintly source spring, you’ll be rewarded with a part of it too.”

Sun Dadi sneered and said, “If our deity is not qualified to be a part of the decision team, you are then less qualified.”

Feng Wanli shot a glance at Sun Dadi, and he recognized him.

In Yingsha City, Sun Dadi crushed two pinnacle level-nine half saints with his iron rod so hard that they groveled, after which he gained his fame.

Feng Wanli frowned and said, “You two are indeed strong, but you don’t have enough people, so you can’t do a lot to help. When the war begins, you can restrain a beast king so that we have more time to get the saintly source spring.”

“If this is your attitude toward us, there’s no need for us to cooperate.”

Zhang Ruochent turned around and wanted to leave.

A purple-caped elder walked out and walked to Zhang Ruochen’s front. He cupped his left hand on his right one, smiled and said, “No need to rush, your highness. You’re an important guest to our princess, so you will definitely be a member of the decision team.”

Wan Huayu looked cold. She threw Feng Wanli an angry glance and said, “Senior Feng, please show some respect to Mr. Gu. If it wasn’t for him and the masters he led two days ago, we might still be trapped in Yingsha City now.”

Everyone in the tent was dazed.

Everyone was staring at Zhang Ruochen blazingly.

The first monk who made it out of the savage beast group was Gu Linfeng?

When they were trying to make a sortie, Han Qiu altered the darkness rules and covered the entire army, which was why only a few people knew that it was the deity from Blood God Sect who led the masters to make their way out of Yingsha City.

“That’s him?”

“I heard that the Saintess from Blood God Sect has already had most of the monks under her control. How can Gu Linfeng still have this much power.”

“That red-haired monkey who’s holding an iron rod himself is already as powerful as Feng Wanli. Perhaps Gu Linfeng still has some other great beings.”

“With Gu Linfeng’s power, even if he fights the Saintess from Blood God Sect directly, he might win.”

...

Everyone looked awed, and realized that they had to re-estimate the power of that deity from Blood God Sect

Even Feng Wanli went into silence and walked to the side.

If it was indeed Gu Linfeng who’d led the people out of Yingsha City, he must have cultivated unfathomable power, and there must be lots of masters on his side. Feng Wanli felt intimidated.

Chapter 1060 - The Identity of Qing Mo

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Wan Huayu then started to talk about the serious issue. She said, “Based on the news the two heirs sent, we’re supposed to help each other and get the saintly source spring together.”

“When the saintly source spring comes out, they will lead the human great beings to check sky-swallowing demonic dragons and most of the beast kings so that we can have a chance.”

Everyone was discussing with the people around them.

If the human monks could really unite and collaborate with each other, they would stand a much higher chance of seizing the saintly source spring.

Feng Wanli then asked, “If we can get the saintly source spring, how are we going to distribute it?”

Wan Huayu said, “According to the two heirs, they will get seventy percent of the spring and distribute it to the fighting power in the city. As for the five powers outside, we can get the other thirty percent. Whoever contributes the most to seizing the saintly source spring will get more. What do you guys think?”

There were over a thousand sects and families in Yingsha City, and there were countless martial rogue cultivators and void world warriors.

It wasn’t outrageous for them to get seventy percent of the spring.

There must be a whole lot of the saintly source spring, which meant even thirty percent was still a great amount.

Nobody was able to get the saintly source spring by themselves, so they would do everything they could to cooperate with others.

Everyone present agreed with that.

The next step was to assign tasks to each party and to make a thorough plan.

“The Feng family is great at ghost cultivation techniques, so when the saintly source spring comes out, you can release the dead souls and demonic spirits and cause some chaos within the savage beast race.”

“Black Sword Clan will be responsible for constraining the savage beasts in the north, Black Market Excellence Hall will be constraining the savage beasts in the south. I will lead the armies from Wan families to attack them at the front.

...

Wan Huayu had been following Hua Zhaoyi to hundreds of wars of all sizes for a very long time. She was excellent at battling, and she felt like a natural commander.

Feng Wanli stared at the sand table and asked, “If we’re all going to fight the savage beasts, who will go get the saintly source spring.”

Wan Huayu shot Zhang Ruochen a glance, smiled and said, “Mr. Gu will be enough for this task.”

And then, Wan Huayu explained, “Mr. Gu has at least four masters who are powerful enough to fight beast kings. Out of the four of them, Sikong One and Sikong Two are both great beings from the ‘Half-Saint Outer Rank.’ They’re more than enough to get the saintly source spring as long as they perform normally. What do you think, Mr. Gu?”

Zhang Ruochen had stayed silent until now. He smiled and said, “I don’t have any objections.”

“I do.”

Feng Wanli stood up and said, “There are indeed lots of masters following Gu Linfeng, but there’s a chance that he might take the saintly source spring and keep it for himself.”

Other monks also had the same concern.

Among the representatives from Black Sword Clan, a thirty-something-year-old woman looked solemn and said, “What Feng Wanli is worried about makes sense. Seizing the saintly source spring is a big deal, so we must ensure there won’t be any accidents. I suggest that each of the four powers also send a top-tier master to fight with the deity from Blood God Sect.”

That woman was Half-Saint Jing Yi, and she was the wife of the leader of Black Sword Clan. She had great power in Black Sword Clan.

Also, the cultivation of Half-Saint Jing Yi was incredible. She had already passed the first trial of the pre-saint.

Meanwhile, another elder from Black Market Excellence Hall also stood up and gave a similar suggestion like the one from Half-Saint Jing Yi.

“There must be one from Black Market Excellence Hall to participate in seizing the saintly source spring.”

That elder was Huoyuan Elder, and he had also passed the first trial of the pre-saint. He was at the same level as Half-Saint Jing Yi.

Three Trials of the Pre-Saint were above level-nine half saints.

The three trials of the pre-saint were Four Nine Trial, Eight Nine Trial and Life or Death Trial.

It was not difficult to become a saint, and every trial was critical. One needed to be extremely careful, otherwise, his or her soul and body would be annihilated.

Certainly, each time when monks passed a trial, their saint souls and bodies would be greatly changed, and their cultivation would take a leap forward.

Only those who went through three trials successfully and completed three changes could become saints.

Most of the people in ‘Half-Saint Rank’ and ‘Half-Saint Outer Rank’ had passed two trials of the pre-saint, and some of them had passed three trials of the pre-saint.

Only those living beings with exceptional potential were exceptions.

For example, those human heirs were mostly level-nine half saints, yet they had made their way to Half-Saint Rank, and they were ranked at the front.

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon from savage beasts was not at pre-saint level yet.

More than half of the beast kings from the twelve savage beast races had passed two trials of the pre-saint.

Of course, some beast kings had only passed one trial of the pre-saint, but they had the bloodline of divine beasts, and when their power was let out, they could match the power of beast kings who had passed two trials of pre-saint.

The final plan was that Wan Huayu, Half-Saint Jing Yi, Huoyuan Elder, and Feng Wanli would go seize the saintly source spring with Zhang Ruochen.

And then, the decision team discussed some further details on the plan, after which they left.

When Zhang Ruochen and Sun Dadi went back to the invisibility formation, Qing Mo was cooking food. On the grill was a firegold raven that was around seventy feet long. It was crispy outside and juicy inside.

Near the grill were two large iron pots. One of them was used to cook soup, and the other was used to cook vegetables.

All the monks were surrounding Qing Mo, staring at the firegold raven and the two giant iron pots.

Blackie was squatting under the firegold raven meat like a small white dog. He opened his eyes wide, and he licked his lips and asked, “Is it cooked?”

“No yet!” Qing Mo said.

“I can’t wait any longer. Even if it’s not fully cooked, I can still have a bite now!”

Blackie couldn’t hold it anymore. It jumped up and threw itself to the firegold raven meat. It opened its mouth wilder and wilder, and in the end, it was more than seventy feet long, which was terrifying.

However, before Blackie could touch the firegold raven meat with its tongue, Sikong One grabbed its tail and dragged it back.

“Amitabha! Donor blackie, you’re so greedy! Do you want to eat the entire firegold raven by yourself?”

Sikong Two also stood up and said, “Donor Qing Mo said that the firegold raven is a level-nine half saint, and it has enormous essence.”

“And now, she’s using some special secret techniques and has added sixteen types of sacred medicine, which make the essence contained inside firegold raven meat thicker. You can’t eat it before it’s fully cooked, otherwise there might be some side effects.”

Blackie couldn’t be more pushy. It struggled and threw itself forward, yelling, “Do you really think I’ll be scared of that? I’ve eaten everything.”

Even Sikong One’s cultivation wasn’t enough to suppress it.

Sikong Two also had to make a move and form a palm print, pressing against Blackie’s head.

The two cooperated and successfully suppressed Blackie.

Blackie shouted, “You two bald idiots, do you really think that I don’t know what’s going on in your minds? You guys want to eat that too, don’t you? You are monks, so you’re supposed to eat vegetables. If you eat meat, you’re breaking the rules, which will damage your cultivation.”

Sikong One mumbled the name of Buddha. He looked solemn and said, “Vegetarian abstinence is by no means a critical rule so much so that Buddha centers in my heart. I can harden my state of mind by eating meat.”

“If you don’t let go of me, I’ll tell your master, Monk Yintuoluo, about this!” Blackie said.

Both Sikong One and Sikong Two were scared. They lessened the strength they put on Blackie.

Blackie seized this chance to quickly shrink its body to the size of a mosquito. It struggled out and rushed toward the firegold raven meat on the grill again.

Pa!

Qing Mo waved the silver kitchen knife in his hand, and she easily slapped Blackie away.

Qing Mo curled her lips and said, “I told you it’s not fully cooked yet. You can’t eat it. Why don’t you ever listen to me?”

Zhang Ruochen saw what happened, and he was surprised.

Blackie was exceptionally fast, even Sun Dadi didn’t manage to catch him. However, Qing Mo slapped Blackie away by merely waving her kitchen knife.

Was that only a coincidence?

Everyone started to behave themselves again seeing Zhang Ruochen come back.

“What is that? Why does it smell so good?”

Zhang Ruochen also smelled the fragrance of the food, and his appetite was piqued.

His desire for food was even stronger than that for sex and money.

Even an exquisite naked woman or mountains of gold and silver were nothing compared to that piece of meat in front of him.

Zhang Ruochen tried to suppress his desire using his powerful will. He looked calm. He walked toward Qing Mo and started to observe her closely.

Qing Mo raised her head. She saw the way Zhang Ruochen looked at her, and she looked scared. She immediately looked away.

Huang Yanchen walked toward Zhang Ruochen and said, “Brother Chen, how’s your negotiation with Wan Huayu?”

Zhang Ruochen was still staring at Qing Mo. He said, “Qing Mo is very powerful, isn’t she?”

Huang Yanchen was dazed and said, “Nobody can hide anything from you. Qing Mo’s cultivation is indeed profound and sophisticated, however, she’s been growing in the internal world Tianlun Mark, so she’s never been exposed to the outer world, which is why she’s shy and innocent.”

“Growing? What do you mean?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Huang Yanchen said, “Qing Mo is no human, instead, she is a Qing Mo divine vine. She’s been growing in the internal world of Tianlun Mark for over forty thousand years, and she finally turned into human form sixteen years ago.”

Zhang Ruochen was confused. He asked, “If her cultivation is that great, how did she enter Blue Dragon Void World?”

Huang Yanchen hesitated for a bit and said, “When I tried to bring Qing Mo out of Tianlun Mark, the Empress knew about that. The Empress thought that such divine medicine that has been growing for more than forty thousand years would definitely attract lots of people.”

“Which was why Empress used an exceptional skill to cover the aura and power from Qing Mo. As long as Qing Mo didn’t use the power State of Saint, the space in Blue Dragon Void World would not break.”

Zhang Ruochen said, “That means Qing Mo is not a servant arranged by Chen family.”

Huang Yanchen stayed silent for a while, looked at Zhang Ruochen and said, “Sorry, I shouldn’t have lied to you.”

“I’m just really curious. Which stuff that you said should I believe?”

Zhang Ruochen stared at Huang Yanchen. He felt that she was a bit familiar, but also a bit distant. He couldn’t figure out what she was thinking.

Chapter 1061 - Another War

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The firegold raven and both the cuisines in the two iron pots had been fully cooked, and the fragrance became stronger.

All the monks rushed toward the cuisines. Everyone tried to get as much food as they could, and after only a short while, everyone was finished.

There was indeed powerful essence in the cuisines. Everyone felt that there was heat ascending in their bodies, and they felt like they were in heaven.

“Pi Pa!”

A great being from Murong clan who was a pinnacle level-seven half saint made his breakthrough and reached elementary level-nine half saint.

Certainly, his cultivation was solid enough that he was only a small step away from a level-eight half saint. The energy contained in the food only accelerated that process.

Murong Yue had just reached level-three half saint, and after she ate the cuisine prepared by Qing Mo, she made another breakthrough and reached upper-class level-three half-saint.

Other monks also greatly improved their cultivation.

Sun Dadi’s face was glowing, and he looked particularly excited. He looked at Qing Mo as if he were worshipping her, and he said, “After eating what Ms. Qing Mo made, I feel like I have taken half a divine medicine pill. I think I’ve made another breakthrough in my cultivation, and I’ll be going through Four Nine Trial lately.”

Everyone was excited, and they all looked at Qing Mo as if she was a goddess.

Only Zhang Ruochen looked very serious. He was standing at the edge of the invisibility formation. He put his hand at his back and looked at the direction of the ground crack.

He heard someone breeze along from behind.

He also smelled a light fragrance with it.

Huang Yanchen was holding a delicate jade bowl, and she gave Zhang Ruochen a bowl of hot meat soup. She asked, "Qing Mo is very good at cooking...do you want to try it? This is the last bowl of soup."

Zhang Ruochen took the jade bowl, held it in his hand to feel the warmth from the bowl, then he drank the soup up.

"Not angry anymore?"

Huang Yanchen saw Zhang Ruochen drink up the meat soup, and she was relieved.

Zhang Ruochen smiled and said, "Do you really think I'm that petty? I was just pondering how to get the saintly source spring as fast as possible."

And then, Zhang Ruochen transmitted his voice to call Zhao Shiqi and Blackie here.

"How many savage beasts did you subdue, Zhao Shiqi?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

"Five upper-class level-six savage beasts, six middle-class level six savage beasts and nine lower-class level-six savage beasts. In total, there were twenty of them," Zhao Shiqi said.

"You have so many of them!"

Zhang Ruochen was a bit surprised, but then, he smiled. He thought, I need to make the best use of these savage beasts.

The power of level-six savage beasts was at the same level as that of half saints of the human monks.

Twenty level-six savage beasts were as powerful as twenty half saints.

“Leave all the savage beasts to Blackie.” Zhang Ruochen made a decision.

After a short while, Blackie took all the twenty level-six savage beasts and walked toward the ground crack. He got into the group of savage beasts.

This was a scheme Zhang Ruochen had designed for Blackie and those savage beasts to seize the saintly source spring. As long as they could succeed, Zhang Ruochen didn't need to share the spring with Wan Huayu and other human monks in Yingsha City.

Everyone wanted the saintly source spring all to themselves.

If Zhang Ruochen could get the saintly source spring, Sacred Sect would be able to cultivate a large group of half saints.

Of course, that was plan A for Zhang Ruochen. If Blackie failed, he had to resort to plan B, which was to cooperate with other human monks.

After half a day, the ground which was tens of thousands of square miles started to shake again, making rumbling noises.

The continents started to move again.

The crack tens of miles away started extending, and it became wider and wider.

“The saintly source spring is about to come out.”

Zhang Ruochen immediately put away the Universe Spiritual Map, then he arranged tasks for everyone. “Sikong One, Sikong Two, Sun Dadi, follow me to get the saintly source spring. As for the others, leave here immediately to reinforce us in Nisha River three thousand miles away.”

Huang Yanchen moved her lips. She meant to say something, but she didn't object. She led the rest of the monks out of the invisibility formation and headed toward Nisha River.

After a short while, Wan Huayu, Feng Wanli, Huoyuan Elder and Jing Yi Half-Saint all arrived. They entered the invisibility formation and met with Zhang Ruochen and the others.

Huoyuan Elder looked around with his hoary eyes, smiled and said, “Deity, I admire your bravery. You dare station your forces in a place so close to the savage beasts. Aren’t you afraid that those beast kings might sense you?”

Zhang Ruochen looked confident. He said, “I chose to be stationed here because I’m sure that no savage beast can find us.”

“Perhaps the heir has collected lots of saintly source sacred liquid, right?” Feng Wanli said.

Zhang Ruochen shot a glance at him and said, “The amount of saintly source sacred liquid I have has nothing to do with you, right?”

The tent of Feng family was very far, so the saintly source spiritual Qi there was pretty thin, which was why they couldn’t collect the saintly source sacred liquid.

Feng Wanli was still very jealous.

Feng Wanli looked to Sun Dadi, Sikong One and Sikong Two. He felt that the three masters looked intimidating, so he shut up and stopped arguing with Zhang Ruochen.

“Hong Long.”

There was the sound of hoofs stepping on the ground, and there was yellow sand waving in the air.

Apparently, those savage beasts also knew that the saintly source spring was about to come out, so they rushed toward it in groups, gathering around the edge of the crack in the ground.

There were large groups of savage beast firegold ravens, snow mountain blue eagles and Shizu birds. Each of them was powerful, emanating amazing energy waves.

They were looking down from the sky. The second they saw the human monks, they would kill them instantly.

“Hou!”

Golden Scorpion King climbed out of the desert. The sky and the land were both shaking. It was roaring as if it was making

a protest, intimidating those human monks who tried to seize the saintly source spring.

Everyone in the invisibility formation was standing more than one hundred miles away, yet they could still feel their organs quivering. One could imagine how terrific the energy ripples from the Golden Scorpion King were.

“Golden Scorpion King is ranked fifty-sixth on ‘Half-Saint Rank.’ It is a terrifying being,” Wan Huayu said.

Feng Wanli, Jing Yi Half Saint and Huoyuan Elder all looked pale.

With their cultivation, they were likely to die if they fought Golden Scorpion King.

“Perhaps only masters like Sikong One and Sikong Two are powerful enough to resist Golden Scorpion King,” Jing Yi Half Saint said.

After a short while, roaring sounds from beast kings was transmitted from the ground crack again.

Many savage beasts were standing at the front, looking vast and mighty, awing people who saw them.

Facing such an enormous group of savage beasts, even the great masters in the State of Saint would have to flee instead of confronting them directly.

Previously, people still had some hope on seizing the saintly source spring, but now, they felt helpless even with their cultivation.

However, they were already in the warzone now, so even if they only stood a chance of one in ten thousand, they needed to try their best.

“Hua!”

Large amount of seven-colored saintly source spiritual Qi gushed out of the crack.

The sky and the land were connected by the flowing-light waterfall which had seven colors, forming an incredibly

miraculous and mysterious scene as if the world were divided into two parts.

Human monks in Yingsha City rushed to the city door from all four directions. Some of them rushed toward the ground crack to seize the saintly source spring.

Some human monks, instead, rushed toward the desert to seize the chance to get out of the encirclement of savage beasts.

“Do you really think you’re qualified to seize the saintly source spring?”

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon surged. It was breathing black demonic air. All of a sudden, the human monks gave a blood-curdling scream.

At the same time, hundreds of human masters fell on the ground, and their bodies were sizzling, turning into puddles of puss.

“I’ll fight you, Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon.”

A trace of golden light shuttle flew out of the group, and it condensed into the figure of Chi Wansui. It surged and rushed toward Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon.

“You were defeated by me before, and you dare challenge me? Do you want to die?” Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon said.

“If I’m helping, it should be enough, right?”

Beigong Lan pointed her finger, and a green divine rapier flew out of the sheath. It hit toward the head of Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon with thousands of sword forces.

The two heirs made attacks at the same time, and they finally successfully suppressed Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon.

However, the fight on the ground was still wretched. There were much more savage beasts than human monks, so no human monks could even get close to the ground crack.

Most of the savage beasts close to the ground crack rushed toward Yingsha City as they wanted to take the chance to kill all the human monks.

“It’s time for us to act!”

Wan Huayu looked pleased.

Feng Wanli typed a signal first to send a message to the monks from the Feng family.

After a short while, a black cloud hovered over and covered the crack on the ground completely, and the ground turned dark.

Chilly wind blew, and a crying sound came from the wind.

Balls of green ghostly flames fell from the sky and toward the savage beasts.

“Ci La!”

A level-four savage beast started to burn after being touched by the ghostly flames, and it was burned to ashes.

Some savage beasts were attacked by the dead souls and demonic spirits. Their bodies twitched and fell on the ground, breathless.

“Feng family members are also great at ghost cultivation techniques? Did they also descend from one of the Royal Ancient Ghost Cultivation Races?” Zhang Ruochun shot a glance at Feng Wanli and looked confused.

The last name of royal families of the Royal Ancient Ghost Cultivation Race was Feng.

“Wu Wu!”

At this moment, hundreds of thousands of dead souls and demonic spirits were performing all sorts of attacking skills above the savage beasts.

Although they were only powerful enough to kill level-four savage beasts, they caused panic among the savage beasts, who all became fiery.

Chapter 1062 - The Power of Beast Kings

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

A giant ball of flames was burning above the ground crack. The diameter of the fireball was more than ten feet, and the energies emanating from the flames were so enormous that they twisted the space around them.

An aloof voice came out of the fireball: “Just some low-level dead souls and demonic spirits. Do you really think they can help?”

Firegold Raven Beast King opened its wings wide, standing at the center of the fireball. It had fully recovered from its injuries, and it was at its prime again.

It took out its ox horn skull and held it in its hands.

It kept infusing the skull with holy Qi. Powerful energy ripples gushed out of the sparkling and crystal-clear ox horn skull immediately.

Peng Peng.

The energy ripples had the power of supreme saints, and rushed out like waves, annihilating all the dead souls and demonic spirits, turning them into columns of smoke.

The human monks, Wan family, Feng family, Black Sword Clan and Black Market Excellence Hall all saw what happened.

Their bodies were all shaking, and they were all terrified by what they had just witnessed.

Wan Huayu missed a heartbeat as well. She said, “The ox horn skull Firegold Raven Beast King has shall be a head of a supreme saint. The head still contains part of the power of that supreme saint, which is why it has such incredible power.”

“Isn’t he afraid that he will shatter the space in Blue Dragon Void World by triggering the power of supreme saints?”

Huoyuan Elder also looked upset. Chances were that he would be killed in the following fight.

Wan Huayu said, “That ox horn skull is indeed powerful, yet that firegold raven beast king is only powerful enough to trigger a slight trace of the supreme saint power, so it won’t shatter the space at all.”

Inside the fireball, Firegold Raven Beast King infused the skull with Holy Qi again, and it kicked it out again, hitting it toward a certain direction in the desert.

“No! It discovered the station of the monks of Feng family!” Feng Wanli screamed.

At this moment, Feng Wanli felt that his heart was pounding out of his chest.

The ox horn skull was flying in the sky, and it became larger and larger. In the end, it became more than three hundred feet long, which looked like a small volcano, and it hit a spot somewhere hundreds of miles away.

“Hong Long.”

The ground shook a little bit, and at the direction of the station of Feng’s family, a ball of black clouds ascended while the dust surged toward the sky.

Everyone on the spot, including Zhang Ruochen, let all their mind power out to inspect the station of Feng family.

It was tragic, which made everyone look distressed.

More than four hundred great beings from Feng family rushed out of Yingsha City, and that attack from Firegold Raven Beast King killed one third of them directly, and one third of them were injured at least to some extent. Only a small part of them were able to leave the half saint realm unharmed.

Feng Wanli was in despair.

There were several leaders with immense power in the station of Feng family. Feng Wanli couldn't understand why they were doing what they were doing, as they didn't arrange a combined formation.

The combined formation should have definitely resisted an attack from Firegold Raven Beast King.

Of course, it wasn't time to hold anyone accountable. As long as they could seize the saintly source spring, it was more than enough to cover the losses.

Wan Huayu, Huayuan Elder and Jing Yi Half-Saint sent a signal to make an order at the same time.

The savage beasts from the east and the west, monks from Black Sword Clan and North Black Market Excellence Mall, attacked toward the center of the ground crack.

They didn't get close to the crack. Instead, they stood tens of miles away from the crack, using their saint weapons or utilizing long-distance martial arts.

“Those humans are being suicidal.”

Two beast kings both led more than ten thousand savage beasts, and rushed toward the human monks from Black Sword Clan and North Black Market Excellence Mall from both the east and the west, trying to kill them at the same time.

“Kill!”

The soldiers from the Wan family formed a square battle team, dashing toward the savage beasts directly. Seven-colored light gushed out of the ground crack, and it became much brighter above the ground, forming gleaming bridges, which made this continent look magical.

However, the battle on the ground was tragic. The blood painted the sand red, and it reeked of blood.

“The saintly source spring will gush out soon, so we need to rush to the edge of the ground crack to occupy a convenient spot,” Wan Huayu said.

Meanwhile, the armor on her body emanated blazing flames, and her clothes were burnt to the ground instantly, after which her snowy white skin was exposed.

Only the Fire Saint Gold Armor Plating was covering some private parts of her body.

Both the appearance and the body of Wan Huayu were top-tier, and they both had unique beauty. She looked like an exquisite God of War with vigorous life force.

However, a war was coming. Zhang Ruochen didn't even have the mental capacity to appreciate that beauty. He waved his wrist, utilizing his Seven Kill Boxing Glove which was glinting with cardinal light. He said, "This is the time. We need to rush there and destroy their team." All eight of them rushed out of the invisibility formation at the same time, and they were all rushing as fast as possible. They ran like eight light shuttles, dashing toward the center of the ground.

Peng Peng!

All eight of them were immensely powerful. They only needed to utilize Saint Soul Territory to knock off all the savage beasts.

Some of the weak savage beasts were killed instantly.

Firegold Rave Beast King sensed the powerful ripples from those eight people. It sneered and said, "You're the main force to seize the saintly source spring."

Firegold Raven Beast King howled and sent the message.

The savage beasts down there also howled, after which the three beast kings all dashed toward Zhang Ruochen, Wan Huayu and the other six people.

"Hong!"

"Hong Long!"

...

It only took Golden Scorpion King three steps to be right in front of the eight main forces. A scorpion tail glowing with golden light swept toward them.

Pu!

Feng Wanli, Huoyuan Elder and Jing Yi Half-Saint were all so injured that they spit blood after being only touched by the waves a little bit. They bounced away like scarecrows.

Zhang Ruochen, Sun Dadi and Wan Huayu were not much better. They also bounced away. Compared to the others, they were only slightly injured. They balanced themselves quickly.

“Is the power of the Golden Scorpion King really that terrifying?”

Fireyuan Elder immediately stood up, took a recovering pill and rushed toward the distance. He wanted to avoid the Golden Scorpion King and to rush to the ground crack from the other direction.

“The gap between us is too large. We’re not even in the same class.”

Both Feng Wanli and Jing Yi Half-Saint looked terrified, and they were much less positive than before, as that Golden Scorpion King, itself, was powerful enough to kill them all.

Some human monks near Yingsha City were focusing on what was happening beside the ground crack.

The hearts of human monks of all the powers sank when they saw what happened.

“Golden Scorpion King is a Taigu Remnant. Though it’s not as powerful as Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon, it’s still an exceptionally ferocious beast. It’s able to crush all the living beings in the State of Saint. Only heirs are likely to suppress it.”

“We humans might suffer a huge loss. We only stand a slight chance to get the saintly source spring.”

Many human monks looked worried. Once the savage beasts seized the saintly source spring, their power would become more terrific, after which all the humans might be slaughtered or be forced to be held up in the base of Yingsha City. They would never have the chance to scramble for the valuables in Blue Dragon Void World.

“Let me fight you, beast.”

Sikong One and Sikong Two rushed forward and emanated vigorous Buddha force, condensing phantoms of a white tiger and a black tiger.

The phantoms of the white tiger and the black tiger clashed with Golden Scorpion King, forming an energy storm, knocking away all the savage beasts around them.

Even Zhang Ruochen, Wan Huayu and Sun Dadi bounced back a couple thousand feet away before they could balance themselves again.

“Look, Sikong One and Sikong Two repelled that Golden Scorpion King,” Huoyuan Elder shouted.

“No wonder they’re great beings from the ‘Half-Saint Outer Rank.’ The two combined should be enough to constrain Golden Scorpion King.”

Both Feng Wanli and Jing Yi Half-Saint looked pleased as they saw hope again.

Sikong Two clenched his hand to the shape of a claw. The martial arts move he performed was the most powerful claw technique from Thousand Buddha Way, Maha Dragon Claw.

Sikong One took out a golden Buddhist monk’s rod out of nowhere and performed the most powerful rod technique of Thousand Buddha Way, Universe Tiger-Subduing Rod.

Both Maha Dragon Claw and Universe Tiger-Subduing Rod were at the same level as Thousand-hand Dragon and Elephant. They were two of the most top-tier eighteen martial arts in Thousand Buddha Way. If they were perfectly practiced and utilized, they might surpass some saint spells.

Each of the eighteen top-tier martial arts from Thousand Buddha Way was extensive, mysterious and profound enough for monks to study for life.

The fact that Sikong One and Sikong Two needed to perform Maha Dragon Claw and Universe Tiger-subduing Rod, proved that Golden Scorpion King’s power was horrifying, as it took both their power to suppress it.

“Hong Long!”

Sikong One surged hundreds of feet high. He picked up his Buddhist rod and threw it forward, which hid the body of the Golden Scorpion King, followed by a deep sound.

The shell of the Golden Scorpion King caved in, and it couldn't help moving its body to the right even though its body was as large as a mountain.

“Sikong One and Sikong Two showed up again.”

“They are the nephews by school of the deity of Blood God Sect. It's not surprising that they showed up with the deity of Blood God Sect.”

“As long as the two eminent monks are fighting outside the city, we still stand a chance to seize the saintly source spring.”

It cheered the human monks up when Sikong One and Sikong Two showed up.

Certainly, Saintess Shangguan Xianyan from Blood God Sect, the leader, Wei Longxing, and other leaders from Shangguan's clan and Cai's family didn't feel pleased at all. Instead, they were extremely worried.

Gu Linfeng had great beings like Sikong One and Sikong Two by his side, which meant the time would come when he led them back to Blood God Sect to take revenge.

Besides, even if Gu Linfeng could actually seize the saintly source spring in the end, he wouldn't share even one drop with them.

Though Shangguan clan and the Cai family didn't participate in the plan to attack Gu Linfeng, they exerted some form of subtle pressure to chase him out of Blood God Sect.

Otherwise, the human monks Shangguan Xianyan managed in Blood God Sect were far from enough to suppress Gu Linfeng.

“I hope that they'll all be killed by the savage beasts,” Wei Longxing said, looking gloomy.

Chapter 1063 - Spy

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen shot a glance at the ground crack. A seven-colored cloud cluster surged from underground.

The diameter of the cloud cluster was more than three hundred feet long. It looked dim and mysterious, and one could hear the spring sound from the center of the cloud cluster.

“The saintly source spring is coming out!”

A thirty-foot Shizu Bird flew toward the seven-colored cloud cluster with its black wings.

“Pa!” Lightning emerged and pierced through the body of that Shizu Bird.

Following that, the Shizu Bird became black dust and sprinkled in the sky.

Other savage beasts who tried to trespass in the cluster all got attacked by the lightning and got annihilated. None of them were able to get to the center of the seven-colored cloud cluster.

Firegold Raven Beast King stood at the periphery of the cloud cluster and yelled, “The Celestial Way from Blue Dragon Void World is protecting the periphery of the cloud cluster. Savage beasts, don’t rush toward it.”

Chi Chi!

Lightning emerged from the seven-colored cloud cluster, and it became an ocean of electricity that was thousands of feet long.

However, the power of the lightning was being weakened.

All the savage beasts, in the sky or on the ground, were retreating to find the perfect spot.

As soon as the celestial way at the periphery withered away, they could rush forward and get the saintly source spring.

Blackie led twenty level-six savage beasts and walked toward the seven-colored cloud cluster. It said, "Move along! I am an envoy from Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon. I'm responsible for collecting his share of the saintly source spring. Give me some room!"

Many savage beasts looked toward that furry white cat, and they all looked confused.

However, that white cat had such ostentation that there were twenty level-six savage beasts following it. Those savage beasts who were suspicious were all intimidated.

"You! Move along! You're only a level-seven half saint! How dare you occupy such a good spot! Get to the back now!"

Blackie pointed at a giant Lion Camel Beast as if it were scolding its minion.

That Lion Camel Beast suspected the identity of Blackie. It said, "You're an envoy of Demonic Dragon King? Why have I never met you?"

"That's right. I've never met him before either."

Some of the other savage beasts were reluctant to believe Blackie's identity. They didn't want to move away.

Blackie looked calm. It sneered with its chin up and said, "You're not superior enough to get to my level. Whoever suspects my identity is treated as disrespecting Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon."

At the same time, there was a pair of giant wings emerging from Blackie's back, and a forceful power was let out. Its eyes became sharp too.

"How terrifying! Ordinary savage beasts are not that strong."

"Is it really an envoy of Demonic Dragon King?"

“I heard that the White Li princess from White Li Cat Race is very close to Demonic Dragon King. Is that it?”

“Not possible. White Li Princess likes to turn into human shape, and has an exquisite face. It’s also a great being on the ‘Half-Saint Rank.’ I think it’s just a great being under White Li Princess.”

...

Blackie looked upset. Some of the savage beasts were lying on the ground, staring at its butt to confirm its physical characteristics to identify it.

If it wasn’t for the saintly source spring, it would have crushed all the savage beasts into pieces.

Zhang Ruochen let out his mind power to see how Blackie was doing. He then frowned.

He originally hoped that Blackie could be a bit low-key so that he could get the saintly source spring out of nowhere.

Yet Blackie was making such a scene that it dared to proclaim itself to be an envoy of Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon.

This kind of tricks could deceive normal savage beasts, but it didn’t work on savage beasts.

I have to do it myself, Zhang Ruochen thought.

At this moment, Wan Huayu, Feng Wanli, Huoyuan Elder, and Jing Yi Half Saint dashed toward the edge of the ground crack from four directions.

Each of them was powerful, and each attack from them left a trail of savage beast bodies.

Zhang Ruochen stepped on the ground, and the yellow sand tens of square feet around him ascended.

And then, he reached out his hand and applied tumbling Sword Intent to each grain of sand.

Shua Shua.

Each grain of yellow flew out like a sword.

Countless savage beasts cried in agony, after which they all fell onto the ground, lifeless.

At this moment, all the human monks were being encircled by savage beasts. They all concentrated on dealing with the savage beasts so they didn't even notice that the deity of Blood God Sect used Sword Intent.

Seizing this chance, Zhang Ruochen rushed out, stepping on the bodies of the savage beasts.

All of a sudden, Zhang Ruochen had a strong sense of danger. From his left at the front, a half-human and half-beast creature rushed toward him.

“Gu Linfeng, give my father's Ten Saints Blood Armor back,” the half-human and half-beast creature bellowed. Silver claws grew from the tips of its fingers, and they scratched Zhang Ruochen from the top, hitting toward his neck.

The light on the silver claws was gleaming so brightly that some of the savage beasts got blinded.

“Tan Zhongli?”

Zhang Ruochen stared at the half-human and half-beast creature, confused. He could feel the force of the immortal vampire, Tan Zhongli, from it.

Immortal vampires could turn into savage beasts?

Before Zhang Ruochen could think twice, Tan Zhongli's claw print was already right above his head.

Zhang Ruochen immediately operated Holy Qi and infused it into the Seven Kill Boxing Glove. He raised his arm and slapped toward Tan Zhongli.

Peng.

The claw print and the palm print clashed, and they had the same level of power.

Zhang Ruochen shook his body, and a cracking sound came out of his bones, transferring Tan Zhongli's power underground using his own body.

The sand under his feet ascended, and it spread afar like ripples.

Tan Zhongli's body bounced more than a hundred feet away. He stared at Zhang Ruochen in shock.

They had just fought each other in Yingsha City a couple of days ago, but back then, Gu Linfeng couldn't defeat him even with the power of the Ten Saints Blood Armor.

It had only been several days, yet Gu Linfeng was now able to resist him without the power of the Ten Saints Blood Armor.

How was it possible that someone's power could surge in only a couple of days?

Zhang Ruochen stared at Tan Zhongli, and then he looked to the direction where Tan Zhongli rushed out. He saw that there were more than ten half-human and half-beast creatures in that direction.

When savage beasts had adequately profound cultivation, they were able to refine human bodies.

As for those whose cultivation was not extensive enough, they couldn't refine the perfect human bodies, so there would still be some savage beast characteristics left, which was why there were some half-human and half-beast creatures.

There were many savage beasts who were half-human and half-beast. However, when Tan Zhongli showed up, Zhang Ruochen sensed that something was wrong.

Did the immortal vampire great beings sneak into the savage beasts, trying to seize the saintly source spring as well?

Although the immortal vampires cooperated with some savage beast kings to fight against the humans, they would never team up when it came to the saintly source spring.

Zhang Ruochen shouted deliberately, "You immortal vampires also covet the saintly source spring. What kind of great beings are here?"

All the savage beasts heard what Zhang Ruochen said.

Some of the beast kings roared in anger. Obviously, they didn't expect immortal vampires to lurk among the savage beasts.

Now that they had been exposed, those immortal vampires stopped disguising themselves.

“Hua!”

More than ten half-human and half-beast beings started to emanate sanguine light, turning back into their true selves with flesh wings.

All those immortal vampires were glaring at Zhang Ruochen.

If it weren't for Zhang Ruochen, they wouldn't have been brought to light this soon.

An immortal vampire who was wearing bloody armor gave an order to Tan Zhongli in a hoary voice: “Tan Zhongli, it's because of your recklessness that our prince's plan has failed. Kill that deity of the Blood God Sect and bring us his blood, and that's the only way you can make up for what you did, otherwise, you'll be executed for your mistakes.”

After that, all those immortal vampires flew toward the seven-colored cloud cluster.

“Damn it.” Tan Zhongli clenched his fist and yelled.

That half-human and half-beast body exploded and turned into a cluster of bloody mist.

When the bloody mist contracted again, it gathered into the body of an immortal vampire, and there were two pairs of silver flesh wings on its back.

Tan Zhongli originally wanted to make a sneak attack to kill Gu Linfeng with one strike so that he could get the Ten Saints Blood Armor back.

Little did he know that Gu Linfeng's cultivation was boosted. He resisted Tan Zhongli's attack and revealed the intention of the immortal vampires.

If he couldn't kill Gu Linfeng, he would be heavily punished by the prince.

“Die!”

The two pairs of silver flesh wings started to spin on Tan Zhongli's back, and they slashed toward Zhang Ruochen like four silver light blades.

The silver light flew toward different directions.

The savage beasts were slashed into halves the moment they were touched by the silver light.

Zhang Ruochen reached out his left arm and chanted like a dragon. A giant and bloody dragon rushed out of his arm.

At the same time, ten light spots emerged from the ten holy apertures on his left arm, and they let out enormous saint power.

Peng!

A palm print and a bloody dragon rushed forward at the same time.

The four silver wings of Tan Zhongli crushed the head of the dragon, and they kept rushing forward, clashing with the sanguine palm print that was more than forty feet long.

The silver wing and the palm print kept clashing with each other, making glaring light and ear-piercing sound like metal abrasions.

“Down!”

Zhang Ruochen shouted and exerted strength from his arm. He turned his handprint around and pressed Tan Zhongli against it. Then he slapped him toward the underground.

Chapter 1064 - Killing Brutally

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Tan Zhongli's body was pressed into the sand.

Bang.

The silver light flashed.

Tan Zhongli surged out from the desert and coughed out blood. It was covered by sand and mud, looking very awkward.

Far away, Wan Huayu glanced at the battle between Zhang Ruochen and Tan Zhongli, and was shocked. She said to herself: It looks like that Gu Linfeng's cultivation has improved greatly. With this speed, he would become the overlord in the Blue Dragon Void World.

Wan Huayu fought Tan Zhongli before, so she knew his strength.

If they fought one on one, she didn't have the confidence to beat him.

In Yingsha City, Shangguan Xianyan looked at Zhang Ruochen as well, feeling stressed.

“He now has the strength to fight such a powerful figure?”

Shangguan Xianyan didn't know who Tan Zhongli was, but she could tell that his cultivation had reached the peak of the Ninth Level Half-Saint.

Seeing the power burst by Tan Zhongli, she knew that he could compare with a figure who had passed one of the Three

Trials of the Pre-Saint.

Shangguan Xianyan thought that her power was closer to that of Zhang Ruochen, and that she had a chance to beat him. But now, she knew that it was not possible for her to get to Gu Linfeng's level.

“The powerful Immortal Vampire shouldn't have used his real power, otherwise, Gu Linfeng couldn't have taken advantage over him.”

Then, Wei Longxing sneered, “Gu Linfeng dared to offend the powerful Immortal Vampires fighting savage beasts, it wouldn't be easy for him to survive today.”

In the union made up of the Blood God Sect, the Shangguan Clan and the Cai Family, many high level people would want Gu Linfeng to be eaten up by the savage beasts, or have all his blood taken by the Immortal Vampires.

But the monks in the Fish-Dragon Realm or Half-Saint Realm of the Blood God Sect were all excited. Some of them even cheered for the Son of Deity far away.

Tan Zhongli licked the blood on his lips, appearing to be ferocious. He laughed, “You deserve my real power now.”

“Really? I'd like to see how powerful you are.”

Zhang Ruochen appeared to be calm. Rules of Celestial Way outside the Seven Colored Clouds didn't disperse yet. He could use the chance to test his current true strength.

“Guiyuan Broadsword.”

Tan Zhongli raised his hands and a silver broadsword flew out of his chest.

He waved it and thousands of blades appeared, forming a realm of blades.

“This Guiyuan Broadsword of mine is made of the eight silver wings of my ancestor, having the power to destroy everything. It can even break a saint weapon with just one cut.”

The might of Tan Zhongli turned extraordinarily overbearing, sharp and devillish.

Zoom.

Then, Tan Zhongli disappeared from his standing spot, and rushed to Zhang Ruochen in the shape of the silver light. He chopped him.

Zhang Ruochen didn't dodge, but played a handprint.

Zoom.

There were only a blade shadow, but it split into eight, forming eight layers of sharp light.

Zhang Ruochen shrank his eyes as he was surprised. He threw his right palm at once to play the second handprint.

After a fierce crash, the two separated immediately.

Zhang Ruochen had the Seven Kill Boxing Glove on his left hand, so he didn't get hurt after crashing with the Guiyuan Broadsword, and only felt a little numb.

But a bloody cut showed up on his right hand, deep to the bone.

The Guiyuan Broadsword was sharp, even if all seven apertures of Zhang Ruochen's palms had been sanctified, he couldn't defend against it.

"Only a bloodstain was left? His palm could compare with those of lower saints."

Tan Zhongli was shocked, but he didn't show it on his face. He said like a winner, "Why not use your Ten Saints Blood Armor?"

"Why should I need the Ten Saints Blood Armor to deal with you?"

Zhang Ruochen used the Emperor Ming Nine-sky Scripture to push the Qi of broadsword out of his wound. The wound in his palm healed quickly.

Tan Zhongli's eyes sank, and he said, "Then I will have to use the Saint Spell to end the fight in advance."

"Guiyuan One."

The silver broadsword made a curve in the air.

Then the silver wall of light showed up and pushed outwards like a light ball of 30 meters in diameter.

Blood Qi surrounded the silver broadsword, adding a feeling of creepiness to it.

“You’ve made great progress. Have you practiced the saint spell to its utmost?”

In the Yingsha City, Tan Zhongli could only display 27 times its attack using the saint spell with his fists.

But Tan Zhongli now stood there holding the broadsword, giving out a Qi greater than then.

He must have practiced the saint spell to its utmost.

“You are not the only one who’s made progress.”

Tan Zhongli wielded his broadsword, bursting the 32 times of attack. The shadow of the broadsword turned to dozens of meters long, hitting Zhang Ruochen’s head.

“Seven-Apertures Blood Palm.”

Zhang Ruochen raised his palms, and a giant blood shadow of 30 meters tall stood up slowly behind him, giving out endless evil Qi.

There were 12 wings on its back. Only its Qi had suppressed Tan Zhongli’s strength.

“Is this...Pluto...?”

Tan Zhongli lost a little might. Even his chop wasn’t as powerful as before.

Zhang Ruochen’s palm burst out 40 times of attack, shaking Tan Zhongli away sideways.

Then, Zhang Ruochen played a second palm on Tan Zhongli’s body, bursting the 40 times of attack to press him into the ground.

Tan Zhongli rushed out from the bottom with seven apertures bleeding. He shouted, “Even I can’t draw the Qi of the Pluto... how can you do it?”

“Because you are weak.”

Zhang Ruochen threw another palm. Giant palm made of blood Qi showed up again.

“Guiyuan One.”

Tan Zhongli wielded a chop, displaying the power of the saint spell to its utmost.

As the Half-Saint who had practiced a saint spell to its utmost, Tan Zhongli was no doubt a genius of geniuses.

But the blade of Tan Zhongli only successfully resisted for two breaths, then he couldn't take the palm of Zhang Ruochen and fell on the ground, spitting blood.

The blood red handprint pressed into the ground, leaving a pit of more than 50 meters long in the desert.

All savage beasts around the pit were killed by it.

“Impressive! A pre-saint can't run away from him and is constantly suppressed by him.”

Feng Wanli looked grave. Now, he treated Zhang Ruochen as an equally powerful figure, daring not to look down on him.

Other Immortal Vampires found that Tan Zhongli was in great trouble, but they couldn't come to his rescue for they were under the fierce attack of a savage beast king and another 100 savage beasts.

Tan Zhongli had a strong life. He climbed out from the pit, spreading his silver wings to run to the horizon.

“Gu Linfeng, after I've passed the First Trial of the Pre-Saint, I will kill you!” Tan Zhongli said bitterly.

“Do you think you can run away today?”

Tan Zhongli's cultivation had reached the state that couldn't be easily killed.

In the Yingsha City, Wan Huayu, the Elder in Purple, Huang Yanchen and Zhang Ruochen had together failed to kill him.

Naturally, Tan Zhongli didn't think that Zhang Ruochen had the strength to stop him. He sneered and kept flying to the depth of the desert.

Zhang Ruochen waved his arms to throw the Life-Death Mirror out. It hovered in midair, giving out a strand of Destruction of the Thousand-patterns.

The Life-death Mirror revolved immediately, releasing a power that even scared the savage beast king.

Zoom.

The light column flew out and hit Tan Zhongli's body, crushing the lower part of his body into blood mist.

“No...how dare you use the Destruction of the Thousand-patterns...”

Screams was heard from Tan Zhongli.

His upper body kept flying, but his blood Qi was taken in by the Life-death Mirror.

In a short while, Tan Zhongli was turned into a dry corpse. It fell down from midair, and turned into dust.

The Guiyuan Broadsword had a highly intelligent weapon spirit. It shrank its size into the palm, showing and glossing like a silver wing like it was made of pure silver.

With a silver flash, the Guiyuan Broadsword penetrated the bodies of dozens of savage beasts to get in the hand of an elder of the Immortal Vampire.

The elder glanced at Zhang Ruochen coldly, and said, “Son of Deity of the Blood God Sect, the Qingtian Clan will not forget this.”

Zhang Ruochen glanced at the elder and smiled. Then he put the Life-death Mirror away.

“Reaching the Sixth Level Half-Saint, using a strand of the Destruction of the Thousand-patterns, I've used a great amount of Holy Qi. If I use the second strand of the Destruction of the Thousand-patterns, I will be weakened.”

Zhang Ruochen didn't go on using the Destruction of the Thousand-patterns, but moved his arms to recover his Holy Qi while he flew to the Seven-colored Clouds.

“He's truly a powerful human.”

Firegold Raven Beast King stared at Zhang Ruochen with coldness.

It took out the Horned Ox Skull to gather power to kill Zhang Ruochen first, in case accidents would happen during the fight over the Saintly Source Spring.

Blackie noticed the Firegold Raven Beast King's move. Laughter could be seen in its round eyes. It made a command to a Sixth Level Upper Savage Beast at once.

The Sixth Level Upper Savage Beast jumped up to the Firegold Raven Beast King.

At first, the Firegold Raven Beast King didn't notice it. After the beast arrived only 60 meters from it, it came to its realization.

“Retreat, now!” The Firegold Raven Beast King scolded.

The Sixth Level Upper Savage Beast didn't listen, but imploded its lower abdomen, making the destructive power spread to all directions.

Boom!

The round ring of energy spread up quickly.

The destruction of a Savage Beast's lower abdomen, which almost equaled a Ninth Level Half-Saint, was extremely terrible.

The Firegold Raven Beast King was the closest to it. It was turned into a fire light and hit the crevice of the land.

All its feathers fell out. It was hurt severely, bleeding.

Luckily, it used the Horned Ox Skull to resist most of the attack at the final moment.

Otherwise, the result would have been terrible.

“It survived.”

Blackie sensed the Qi of life of the Firegold Raven Beast King. It shook its chubby head and sighed with disappointment.

It was very close to having killed a savage king. The result only worked best for the first try. If it tried a second, the savage king would have been alerted and it wouldn't be able to make it again.

“Look, the thunder outside the Seven-colored Clouds all disappeared!” A scream was heard.

The destruction of the Sixth Level Upper Savage Beast had cracked the Rules of the Celestial Way, showing the Saintly Source Spring in the center of the clouds.

Chapter 1065 - The Holy Flowers

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The fog outside the Seven-colored Cloud dispersed, showing a mysterious flower of seven colors. It floated in the void, giving out the refreshing scent of medicine.

The Seven-colored Flower was giant with a more than 20 meter long diameter. Each petal was crystal-clear like being made of saint jade of all colors.

It rooted in the void, looking mysterious and wonderful.

The flower was filled with seven-colored Sainly Source Spring. Some of the spring liquid even flew out and turned into divine dragon, phoenix, fairy, turtle...etc. All looked different.

It was as if there was a saint pool together with the Seven-colored Flower.

Other than that, there were seven smaller flowers floating in the seven directions outside, appearing to be white, azure, blue, green, red, purple and black.

The seven smaller flowers were of 4 to 5 meters in diameter. And the size of their flowers were only 1% of the Seven-colored Flowers at the center.

Even so, a smaller flower could contain thousands of cups of Sainly Source, which was invaluable enough to make an ancient sect crazy.

“They are the seven Thousand-Year Holy Flowers, born with the Sainly Source Spring. They are invaluable. Having each

one would be enough to revitalize an ancient sect.”

“The Seven-colored Flower at the center is more extraordinary, being the saint medicine for at least 30,000 years and the mainstream of the Saintly Source Spring.”

Human monks in the Yingsha City were excited, wanting to grow wings and fly to the crevice for the Thousand-Year Holy Flower and the Saintly Source Spring.

One Half-Saint didn't resist his greed and flew to the crevice. The minute he left the ground, he was attacked by crowds of savage beasts.

They'd eaten him up, leaving only his skeleton on the ground.

“The Holy Flower and the Saintly Source Spring are treasures of our savage beasts. You humans have nothing to do with them. You'd better be realistic and not cross the line.” A savage king stood in the midair, looking down on the human monks with contempt.

“Any human monk who dares to approach the Saintly Source Spring will be killed.”

The voice of Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon was heard above the clouds.

Its endless might turned into strands of colorful Qi, pressing on every human monk.

Fighting two Heirs, the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon could spare a strand of strength to suppress the human monks. How high was its cultivation?

A respectable old man stood out and said with waves of sound, “Human race also has powerful figures near the crevice. If we could fight with our full strength and restrain more savage beasts, they might be able to take a saint medicine and part of the Saintly Source.”

A female student of the Blood God Sect, who adored Zhang Ruo Chen very much, rushed to the savage beasts. She said, “The Son of Deity of our Blood God Sect is near the Saintly Source Spring. He might be able to take a saintly medicine

with his power. For the Son of Deity, we should fight to the end.”

“The talented princess of the Wan Family has arrived at the edge of the crevice, approaching the Saintly Source Spring. As soldiers of the Ministry of War, we must fight for her chance.”

The human monks were all encouraged to fight the savage beasts. In just a second, blood was everywhere, turning the ground outside of the Yingsha City totally red.

“Let’s go and take the Saintly Source Spring!”

“The pedals containing the Saintly Source are also rare medicine of thousands of years, which we can directly drink and refine into divine medicine pills. We must take them.”

...

In the area of the crevice, human monks, savage beasts, Immortal Vampires, and all living creatures went crazy. They strove to rush to the Saintly Source Spring.

The Shizu Bird Beast King took the white Holy Flower at the very outside. It covered it with a cloud of Holy Qi and hid it underneath its black wings.

Half-Saint Jingyi was a little slower than the Shizu Bird Beast King, and was close to having taken the white Holy Flower.

They were so close that they almost ran into each other.

“What a humble human! How dare you take the Saintly Source Spring from me? You are looking for death.”

Light of death showed up in the Shizu Bird Beast King’s eyes. Its black wings chopped sideways, attacking Half-Saint Jingyi with cold brilliance.

Half-Saint Jingyi’s face lost color. She couldn’t resist the attack of the beast king anyhow.

She broke the Defensive Rune immediately, forming a golden light cover to envelope her body.

Bang!

The black wing hit her, throwing the golden light cover and Half-Saint Jingyi together into the endless crevice.

Her scream was heard under there. Nobody knew whether she was alive or not.

“With Half-Saint Jingyi’s cultivation, she couldn’t resist one hit of the beast king.”

Zhang Ruochen was a little shocked. He dared not to take his chances, but poured the Holy Qi into the belt and activated the Ten Saints Blood Armor.

The blood red armor covered up his whole body.

With the help of the Ten Saints Blood Armor, a strong strand of power gushed from Zhang Ruochen’s body.

Boom!

Zhang Ruochen stepped on the edge of the crevice, going through seven savage beasts to the Seven-colored Flower at the center, trying to take the mainstream of the Saintly Source Spring.

But, the more he moved near the center, the more savage beasts he met, and the harder he was attacked by them.

12 Sixth Level Savage Beasts rushed out and attacked Zhang Ruochen together.

Some savage beasts could spit fire. Some savage beasts could ride the wind. Some savage beasts were extremely strong. Their bodies were as hard as metal.

Even Zhang Ruochen was forced to take defense, not making any steps forward.

When Zhang Ruochen was fighting the 12 Sixth Level Savage Beasts, Blackie took a group of savage beasts and took the second azure Holy Flower.

Inside the Holy Flower, there were thousands of cups of Second Class Saintly Source.

Blackie opened its mouth to swallow the Saintly Source Spring and the Azure Holy Flower.

“Swallowing a Thousand-Year Holy Flower and thousands of cups of saintly source together, isn’t it scared of the amount?”

“Is this fat cat so reckless?”

All savage beasts widened their eyes and stared at Blackie, feeling shocked.

Only Zhang Ruochen felt the slight spatial wave inside Blackie’s mouth.

Blackie should have put a Spatial Ring inside its mouth in advance. Within a minute of opening its mouth, it had put the Saintly Source Spring and the Azure Holy Flower inside it.

“It’s doing good this time.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled and poured his Holy Qi into the Ten Saints Blood Armor.

Zoom!

Red blood light gushed out from the armor and turned into a blood cloud.

Ten tall figures showed up in the blood cloud. They were the shadows of the ten saint souls of human saints that were sealed inside the armor.

Having the power of ten saints, Zhang Ruochen felt his body full of strength. His will to fight was strong. And his blood boiled.

Even if he could only borrow a strand of the ten saints’ power, it would be enough for him to improve his strength greatly.

Bang bang.

With one fist, he crashed a Sixth Level Upper Savage Beast into parts. Its bones and flesh fell into the crevice.

Zhang Ruochen continued to attack like a blood red devil. Each step would have killed a Sixth Level Upper Savage Beast.

After he’d killed six of them in a row, the other six were scared to death. They dared not to stop Zhang Ruochen, and all ran away.

They were clever like humans, so they could feel terror.

The main forces fighting the Saintly Source Spring among the savage beasts were the Firegold Raven Beast King, the Shizu Bird Beast King and the Blue Eagle Beast King.

They were all speedy birds.

And the three commanded a large number of Sixth Level Upper Savage Beasts, some of which had the power of the human pre-saints, only a little weaker than the beast kings.

As for the Golden Scorpion King, it was suppressed by Sikong One and Sikong Two, having no chance to join their fight for the Saintly Source Spring.

Zhang Ruochen looked at the center, seeing the Shizu Bird Beast King and the Blue Eagle Beast King rush to the Seven-colored Holy Flower together, trying to take the mainspring of the Saintly Source Spring.

But, two powerful figures also arrived to take it.

One of them was the powerful elder from the Immortal Vampires, who held the silver Kaiyuan Broadsword in one hand, making a long and narrow light and forcing the Shizu Bird Beast King back.

Zhang Ruochen sensed something different from the elder of the Immortal Vampires.

Although he was very old, he had endless power. And the strength of his body could compare with that of a beast king.

Soon, Zhang Ruochen made it clear and said to himself, The elder from the Immortal Vampires must be a saint. He has used some mysterious trick to suppress his cultivation to the peak of a pre-saint.

The battle power of the elder was terrible, even comparable to a pre-saint who'd passed the Third Pre-saint Trial. He pressed down the Shizu Bird Beast King.

The other one was Wan Huayu.

She had the Fire Phoenix Armor on. A pair of more than 30 meter long fire feathered wings grew on her back. Her white

skin made a great contrast with the red armor, like a beautiful fairy in the armor of Mars.

A giant shadow of the Fire Phoenix overlapped with her body, bursting out the power to fight the beast king.

As the single daughter of Wan Zhaoyi, she does have powerful last resorts, Zhang Ruochen said to himself.

Wan Huayu must have something special on her. Otherwise, she couldn't display such strong power.

All four were fighting for the mainspring of the Saintly Source Spring. Zhang Ruochen didn't join them, but looked at a black Holy Flower.

The black Holy Flower was near the Seven-colored Holy Flower at the center, containing thousands of cups of Seventh Class Saintly Source Spring.

Its value was a little lower than the Seven-colored Holy Flower and the mainspring of the Saintly Source Spring at the center.

More importantly, the fight over there wasn't as fierce as that at the center, and Zhang Ruochen had the chance to take it.

Chapter 1066 - Unrivalled Divine Palm

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The higher the class of the Saintly Source was, the higher its value was.

Inside the black Holy Flower, there was all seventh class Saintly Source, whose value could be the sum of all the rest of the six Holy Flowers.

Now, three top figures of the Immortal Vampires, Feng Wanli and Huoyuan Elder and a large group of Sixth Level Savage Beasts were fighting violently around the black Holy Flower.

The Immortal Vampires only sent a dozen members to fight for the Saintly Source Spring. Each of them was a top figure. The weakest one was at the primary stage of the Ninth Level Half-Saint.

Their target was clear. They wanted the black Holy Flower and the Seven-colored Holy Flower at the center.

The three Immortal Vampires near the black Holy Flower were powerful. Each one of them could compare with Feng Wanli or Huoyuan Elder. Their strengths were no less than those who had passed the First Pre-saint Trial.

Of the Sixth Level Savage Beasts, some of them were extremely powerful, giving out the power comparable to that of the beast kings.

Among them, a 30-meter-long black scorpion was the blood of divine beasts, having thick golden inscriptions on its shell.

It was the second strongest one among the black scorpions, called the Black Scorpion Commander, only second to the Golden Scorpion King.

“All humans and Immortal Vampires will have to die.”

The Black Scorpion Commander screamed. Golden flames came out from its eyes. Its tail made a sudden swing to hit Feng Wanli and Huoyuan Elder.

Bang bang.

The two human pre-saints flew away straightly, crashing into the beast crowds beside the crevice. Immediately, they were ambushed.

Not only were they severely wounded, but they also lost their chance to fight for the Saintly Source Spring.

Then, the Black Scorpion Commander stepped in the void and jumped to its front. It reached out two black piers, trying to pick up the black Holy Flower.

Zoom.

The sharp sound of wind breaking was heard.

Zhang Ruochen turned into a cloud of red shooting light and reached the black Holy Flower. He reached out one hand to lift the bottom of the Holy Flower.

Seeing the Saintly Source being taken by a human monk, the Black Scorpion Commander was furious.

“Go to hell.”

Its black tail whipped upwards to attack Zhang Ruochen.

There were sharp barbs on its tail, and once it hit the monk, their body would be ripped in two.

Crap! Huoyuan Elder said to himself.

Huoyuan Elder knew clearly the destruction of the Black Scorpion Commander. It surely had the power of the one who'd passed the First Trial of Pre-saint. Just now, he worked together with Feng Wanli, and yet failed to resist one strike of it.

Gu Linfeng was too close to the Black Scorpion Commander, and he had to spare power to protect the black Holy Flower. How could he get away from its attack?

Feng Wanli said, “Gu Linfeng had the Ten Saints Blood Armor on. He might not die, but surely he will be severely wounded.”

Naturally, Feng Wanli and Huoyuan Elder hoped that Gu Linfeng could take the black Holy Flower, so they could have a share of it.

Not only them, but monks in the Yingsha City were all extremely nervous as well.

Up till now, only Gu Linfeng among the human monks had taken a Holy Flower successfully. And it was the most valuable one.

Once Gu Linfeng died under the attack of the Black Scorpion Commander, it would be a great loss for humans.

“Son of Deity, you must hang on in there!”

Monks of the Blood God Sect all prayed for Zhang Ruochen, wishing that he could take the black Holy Flower and expand the power of the human monks.

Zhang Ruochen flew above the crevice. Even if he had put the Ten Saints Blood Armor on, he could feel that danger was coming to him.

“Seven-Apertures Blood Palm.”

Strands of blood red Qi gushed out from Zhang Ruochen’s back, condensing into an about 30-meter-tall giant shadow, which was the shadow of Pluto.

His palm pressed down and collided with the tail of the Black Scorpion Commander, making a loud boom and bursting the 40 times of attack.

Pat!

The blood-red palmprint threw the Black Scorpion Commander’s tail back. Cracks appeared on its hard shell.

With this strand of power, Zhang Ruochen soared faster to the sky and reached a safe spot.

Huoyuan Elder was shocked. “Gu Linfeng’s palm is too great. It played at least 40 times of attack. The Black Scorpion Commander didn’t hurt him, but was hurt by his palm.”

“Without the help of the Ten Saints Blood Armor, he couldn’t have done it. If I had it, I could have killed the savage beasts easily like he did,” Feng Wanli said with some jealousy.

The Black Scorpion Commander roared.

Its belly turned golden red, gathering a strand of burning energy.

In a while, the Black Scorpion Commander opened its mouth to spit the golden red fire to Zhang Ruochen who was soaring to the sky.

Other than that, nearly 100 Sixth Level Savage Beasts were gathering power to attack Zhang Ruochen as well.

Now, Zhang Ruochen was a little scared.

It had to be told that the attack of almost 100 savage beasts who had the power of Half-Saints would make a saint hard to resist.

“Blackie, do it now.” Zhang Ruochen passed his words immediately.

The minute his voice went out, a Sixth Level Savage Beast suddenly imploded its lower abdomen among the crowd, bursting out the destructive power.

Boom!

The giant 7-meter-tall surf of fire was seen rushing to all directions, shaking away all 100 Sixth Level Savage Beasts.

The 20 Sixth Level Savage Beasts that were closest to it were broken into parts. Their bodies burned to black ashes.

Luckily all Sixth Level Savage Beasts had giant bodies and strong body structures. The Sixth Level Savage Beasts on the outer circle survived.

The Black Scorpion Commander was close to the imploded Sixth Level Savage Beast, and it was thrown back. Its shell was broken and filled with blood, looking pathetic.

“The Sixth Level Savage Beasts are as clever as humans. Why have they committed suicide one by one? And they attacked their own...?”

Who would choose to kill themselves if they had other choices?

Even if they had come to the state that they had to make the move, those who had the courage to kill themselves with the enemies were little.

“There must be a human Beast Tamer who had controlled a few Sixth Level Savage Beasts and used it as a secret trick to make the savage beasts pay dearly,” someone guessed.

The Beast Tamer was a natural enemy to savage beasts.

Of course, there were few Beast Tamers. And even fewer Beast Tamer Masters who could control the Sixth Level Savage Beasts.

Under certain situations, the destruction of a Beast Tamer could surpass that of a saint.

For example, now that all savage beasts gathered together, with one imploded, the destruction would kill lots of them.

It was truly destructive that a Sixth Level Savage Beast had imploded its lower abdomen, but the Saintly Source Spring was under the protection of all powerful figures onsite and wasn't harmed at all.

Other than the black Holy Flower taken by Zhang Ruochen and the azure Holy Flower taken by Blackie, the other five had all been taken by powerful savage beasts.

In the central area of the crevice, Shizu Bird Beast King, Blue Eagle Beast King, the Immortal Vampire Elder and Wan Huayu fought intensely. Any creature approaching them would have been killed immediately by the waves of their attack.

Therefore, the attention of all savage beasts were on Zhang Ruochen. They wanted to take the most valuable black Holy

Flower.

Blackie made another command, asking other Sixth Level Savage Beasts to implode their lower abdomen in order to rescue Zhang Ruochen.

But, before the Sixth Level Savage Beasts could do so, the Firegold Raven Beast King noticed it and killed them all.

The perception of savage kings were sensitive. They could feel the surging Holy Qi inside the savage beasts and resolve the danger in advance.

Especially because the Firegold Raven Beast King had been hurt by it once, it wouldn't make the same mistake again.

Blackie hid carefully among the savage beasts, looking at the Firegold Raven Beast King in distance. It said secretly, The Firegold Raven is just a descendant of the divine beast, it's not a Taigu Remain and has no pure blood, how could it recover so quickly? Zhang Ruochen, I've done my best. You have to rely on yourself now!

The Firegold Raven Beast King was severely wounded by the implosion of the first Sixth Level Upper Savage Beast, and all its feathers were destroyed. Even now it had many wounds and kept bleeding.

But as a beast king, even if it was badly wounded, its power was still terrible.

The Firegold Raven Beast King shouted, "All savage beasts, stop the attack now in case you destroy the black Holy Flower. He's just a human, I can kill him with one hand."

The Firegold Raven Beast King spread its wings to soar into the sky like a golden shooting light. It reached out a golden palm to grasp Zhang Ruochen above it.

Zhang Ruochen didn't dodge, but threw a palm at it.

Behind him, the giant shadow of Pluto threw a giant palm as well, making the 40 times of attack.

Bang!

The two strands of power crashed into each other.

The Firegold Raven Beast King fell down quickly. Its body crashed into the desert, leaving a giant pit.

Zhang Ruochen stood in midair, and laughed. “A heavily wounded beast king should have wanted to kill me with one hand! Do you really think that all human monks are weak?”

Standing in the Yingsha City, people could see Zhang Ruochen’s handsome appearance in midair. With one palm, he had pressed a beast king down.

All monks of the Blood God Sect were thrilled. They looked at monks of other clans with pride, and shouted, “Son of Deity! Unrivalled divine palm! We, the great Blood God Sect!”

“Son of Deity! Unrivalled divine palm! We, the great Blood God Sect!”

...

Standing in the air above the crevice, Zhang Ruochen could hear their shouts. He put on a bitter smile.

Defeating the Black Scorpion Commander and the Firegold Raven Beast King, he looked impressive, but he was hurt as well, though it couldn’t be seen.

But that didn’t affect his great image in those human monks’ eyes.

From now on, the name of “Unrivalled Divine Palm Gu Linfeng” spread up among the human monks.

By now, Zhang Ruochen noticed that the battle among the four powerful figures in the central area had changed a bit.

Puff.

The Immortal Vampire Elder wielded the Kaiyuan Broadsword to chop off a black wing of the Shizu Bird Beast King and severely wounded it.

Then, the elder rushed to the Seven-colored Flower with the fastest speed. He spread open his arms, forming two clouds of Holy Qi, enveloping the Holy Flower in two ways.

Chapter 1067 - Time and Space Descendant Showed Up?

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The Immortal Vampire Elder was extremely powerful, having the state of a saint, the martial experience of a saint and a strong body. He had just surpassed his cultivation under the state of saint.

Even a beast king couldn't defend against him.

Seeing that he was about to take the Seven-colored Holy Flower and the Saintly Source Spring away, something happened.

Zoom—

Inside the Seven-colored Holy Flower, a bracelet showed up to give out slight spatial waves, taking the flower and the mainspring into it.

Then, the bracelet disappeared.

A black blade showed up instead. It flew to the neck of the Immortal Vampire Elder all of a sudden.

The elder didn't see it coming and didn't have the time to defend. Even though he was highly cultivated, he could only dodge it at once.

Puff.

The blade slid close to the Immortal Vampire Elder's neck, leaving a shallow bloody cut.

Then an invisible shadow rushed away from the Elder's side like the wind.

All living creatures onsite were shocked, not knowing what had happened.

What happened? Where's the Seven-colored Holy Flower?

Who attacked the Immortal Vampire Elder?

Zhang Ruochen thought for a while, then said to himself. So, she's hiding inside the Seven-colored Holy Flower, no wonder I couldn't find her.

The one who took the Seven-colored Holy Flower away was Han Qiu in the Shooting Star Invisible Cloak.

She had been hiding inside the Seven-colored Holy Flower all the time, waiting for the best timing to take the mainspring of the Saintly Source Spring and escape.

The Rules of the Celestial Way of the Blue Dragon Void World outside the Seven-colored Holy Flower before had blocked Zhang Ruochen's detection. So he didn't notice her being there.

"How could Han Qiu resist the Rules of the Celestial Way of the Blue Dragon Void World and break into the Seven-colored Holy Flower? Maybe her Form of Darkness could even devour the Rules of the Celestial Way of a Void World?" Zhang Ruochen put on a grave face.

Under them, a voice was heard: "It is the Time and Space Descendant, Zhang Ruochen. It must be he who used the Spatial Power to take the Seven-colored Holy Flower away."

All human monks and Immortal Vampires were shocked.

"Maybe it's really Zhang Ruochen?"

Wan Huayu released her spiritual power to detect the invisible wind. She could feel that it was a person inside the wind.

The Shooting Star Invisible Cloak could hide form and Qi, and even hide from a saint's perception.

But Han Qiu didn't stand unmoving. She was flying quickly. People couldn't see her, but could feel the wind and the waves

of her Qi.

“What’s the matter if he’s the Time and Space Descendant? Whoever dares to take the Saintly Source Spring will be killed at once.”

Blue Eagle Beast King and Shizu Bird Beast King were the first to chase Han Qiu.

Meanwhile, the Immortal Vampire Elder took dozens of powerful figures to chase her in another direction.

Zhang Ruochen squinted his eyes, reaching out a finger to point to a direction in the void. He said to himself. Spatial Collapse.

Thick cracks appeared in the void, like a smashed glass ball. The space within around hundreds of meters became indented, making a terrible storm.

The Spatial Structure of the Blue Dragon Void World was already fragile.

The Spatial Collapse played by Zhang Ruochen could easily tear the space, making terrible destruction.

The scene was like the end of the world.

“Ah...Help me!”

Four powerful figures of Immortal Vampires couldn’t escape from the collapsed space, and were turned into blood mist in a second.

Other than them, hundreds of savage beasts also died in the broken space.

The collapsed space successfully stopped the two beast kings and the Immortal Vampire Elder, buying time for Han Qiu to escape.

Meanwhile, the appearance of the collapsed space convinced people further that the mysterious person who had taken the Seven-colored Holy Flower away was the Time and Space Descendant.

“Can this coveting of gains ahead make one unaware of the danger behind?”

“Zhang Ruochen is the cleverest. With all the forces having fought hard, it takes him nothing to take the Seven-colored Holy Flower away.”

“After all, Zhang Ruochen is a human monk. It’s a blessing that the mainspring of the Saintly Source Spring didn’t fall to the hands of a savage beast.”

All human monks felt conflicted. They fought hard for it, but they couldn’t compare with Zhang Ruochen’s perpetration of a gigantic lie.

Zhang Ruochen did take the blame for Han Qiu, and helped her run away.

But, it was good to him as well.

At least, nobody would doubt his connection to Gu Linfeng.

Secondly, it’s better for the Seven-colored Holy Flower to fall in the hands of Han Qiu than those of the Immortal Vampires.

Two beast kings and powerful figures of the Immortal Vampires bypassed the collapsed space, and followed Han Qiu again. But Han Qiu had escaped far away, it would be hard for them to catch up with her.

Zhang Ruochen passed a message to Blackie, Sun Dadi, Sikong One and Sikong Two, asking them to retreat.

Zhang Ruochen flew in the sky, and displayed his moves to arrive at a place 150 kilometers away. He landed on the ground and waited for them. He wanted to gather with them and go to Nisha River again to meet Huang Yanchen and the others.

But, before they could break out of the crowds, Firegold Raven Beast King had taken almost 1000 Firegold Ravens to fly to Zhang Ruochen rapidly.

The light given out by Firegold Ravens were red-hot, turning the sky into a sea of flames, and heating the sand boiling hot.

“Human, do you think that you can run away?”

Firegold Raven Beast King appeared to be furious. The flame from it turned into a giant golden fireball.

In the next instant, thick fireballs landed from the sky. All attacked Zhang Ruochen.

“You’re still alive after the bad wound.”

Zhang Ruochen naturally wouldn’t fight against the whole race of the Firegold Ravens. He used his fastest speed to rush to the desert like a shadow.

Boom!

Then fireballs fell to the old spot of Zhang Ruochen, making a deafening noise.

The yellow sand melted in the 5 kilometers’ area, making a lakeside of golden magma. The magma was still boiling and bubbling.

“You can’t run away.”

The Firegold Raven Beast King poured Holy Qi into its Horned Ox Skull while flying, expanding its size. It gave off burning flames.

Being hurt once, Firegold Raven Beast King dared not to look down on Zhang Ruochen. It gave all its strength to throw the skull to Zhang Ruochen.

The Horned Ox Skull flew in midair and soon caught up with Zhang Ruochen, like a giant sun.

The destruction of the Qi of the Supreme Saint was given off, making a terrible power wave.

Zhang Ruochen felt the pressure, so he took out the Life-death Mirror immediately and poured the rest of his Holy Qi inside it.

Zoom.

Thousands of lines of blood red inscriptions showed up on the Life-death Mirror.

Zhang Ruochen stood at the center of the desert, holding the mirror with one hand. Rings of blood Qi gushed out from the mirror, turning the ground into the blood sea. All blood Qi revolved around his body.

Looking from the upper sky, the blood sea in the desert was like a red eyeball. Zhang Ruochen was standing at the center of the eyeball, giving out mighty, fierce and domineering power.

Zhang Ruochen's long hair flew in the air. His eyes were bloodshot. And he shouted, "Life-death Mirror. Either you or I will die!"

Boom!

The Destruction of the Thousand-patterns was given out by the Life-death Mirror. A thick blood light column clashed with the Horned Ox Skull.

The Horned Ox Skull was powerful as well. Colliding with the blood light column didn't turn its direction.

But its speed slowed down and the power and was slowly taken over by the Life-death Mirror.

At last, when the Horned Ox Skull was about dozens of meters away from the surface of the Life-death Mirror, its power was exhausted. And it was thrown backward.

Of course, it didn't mean that the Horned Ox Skull wasn't as good as the Life-death Mirror. It was just that the Firegold Raven Beast King had been wounded too severely, so its Holy Qi couldn't keep up at the end.

Puff!

Firegold Raven Beast King spit blood, appearing to be unsatisfied. It said, "A little, only...a little..."

Firegold Raven Beast King could see that the human was at about the end of his power. He couldn't maintain the Destruction of the Thousand-patterns for long. If it could stand for a little longer, the result would be different.

Bang!

The blood light column hit the Firegold Raven Beast King, smashing its body into pieces.

The beast king was killed at last.

The blood red light column crossed the sky.

Those Firegold Ravens would burst into blood mist as long as they were touched by the light column.

In a short while, more than 200 Firegold Ravens were killed. All the blood Qi was taken in by the Life-death Mirror.

As their Beast King had been killed, the rest Firefold Ravens were scared enough to shudder. They turned into a giant golden fire cloud to run away.

Zhang Ruochen spit large amounts of blood and fell hard on the ground, using up all his Holy Qi.

“At last, I’ve killed a beast king.”

Zhang Ruochen laughed. He suppressed his pain and exhaustion to support his soft body. He sat with legs crossed, trying to recover his Holy Qi.

At this minute, a heavy footstep sounded behind Zhang Ruochen.

“Impressive. Impressive. You must have killed a beast king. Hehe! But, considering your current condition, you can’t resist me killing you, can you? Son of Deity?”

A tall man in Five-colored Saint Armor walked beside Zhang Ruochen, making a series of footsteps. He picked up the Horned Ox Skull of the Firegold Raven Beast King.

He touched the Horned Ox Skull slightly, and gasped excitedly. “It is surely the Supreme Saint’s bone. What an extraordinary treasure! With it, I can fight even the powerful figures in the Half-Saint Outer Rank.”

Then, the tall man turned his body to show his well-shaped face. He was one of the commanders of the Blood God Sect, Wei Longxing.

...

Chapter 1068 - A Pair of Saintly Arms

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Wei Longxing was comparatively young among his peers. He had a broad shoulder and body structure, and a well-shaped face. The Five-colored Saintly Armor was a saintly armor for defense. Even if he stood there randomly, he looked as if he was standing on the Five-colored Clouds.

Wei Longxing looked at Zhang Ruochen, who was sitting on the ground and couldn't move. He laughed proudly. "Your Highness is truly the best in the Blood God Sect. Your cultivation is only at the Sixth Level of Half-Saint, but its power even frightens me."

"Of course, that's the reason why I have crossed savage beasts outside the Yingsha City to come here."

"I am clear that I only have the chance to kill you before you reach the Seventh Level Half-Saint. I can't let you grow. Otherwise, I will be killed or driven away by you."

"It seems that I'm lucky. Now I have a perfect chance. If you hadn't used up your Holy Qi to display the Destruction of the Thousand-patterns, it would cost me some time to deal with you."

Now, Zhang Ruochen was in a bad condition. He was wounded and weakened because his Holy Qi had been used up.

For that reason, Wei Longxing didn't rush to kill Zhang Ruochen, but showed off his going-to-be achievement in front of him like a winner.

Wei Longxing laughed. “The black Holy Flower, the Seventh Class Saintly Source Spring, the Life-death Mirror and the Seven Kill Boxing Glove, they are all precious treasures for saints. With them, I will definitely improve my strength to completely surpass Hai Lingyin and become the best in the Blood God Sect. By that time, the so-called Saintess of the Blood God Sect would become just a plaything of mine... Right...it seems that all these things actually belong to you...”

Wei Longxing irritated Zhang Ruochen deliberately, wanting to see what he looked like when he was angry.

But to his disappointment, Zhang Ruochen appeared to be calm and showed no emotional changes.

Wei Longxing looked around and his eyes turned cold. “Where did you hide the black Holy Flower?”

Zhang Ruochen had already put the black Holy Flower in his Spatial Ring, but Wei Longxing didn't know that.

Zhang Ruochen raised his eyebrows and put a sneer on his pale face. “Of course I've hidden it.”

“Where?” asked Wei Longxing.

Zhang Ruochen said, “Of course I've hidden it on me.”

Wei Longxing didn't believe him, for the diameter of the black Holy Flower was at least 4 meters, and he could see it if Zhang Ruochen did hide it on his body.

“To this state, you dare to play with me? You think I dare not to kill you?”

Wei Longxing spread his fingers to become a claw. Qi flowed slowly in his fingers. And he grasped Zhang Ruochen's neck.

“I will destroy your body first, then refine your saintly soul. I don't think I won't get the whereabouts of the black Holy Flower.”

Instantly, Wei Longxing arrived at Zhang Ruochen's face. His five fingers took his neck and he was ready to press.

All of a sudden, Zhang Ruochen pressed his fingers in the front.

There was a black pill between his fingers, which was pressed on Wei Longxing's body.

Bang!

The black pill exploded, making a large range of Evil Death Qi, which covered up Wei Longxing's whole body like black ink.

The Evil Death Qi soaked Wei Longxing's body from the cracks of the Five-colored Saintly Armor, corroding his body. Sizzle.

His skin slowly turned black.

Zhang Ruochen used his strong spiritual power to condense a purple thunderball in his palm, and threw it to Wei Longxing's chest.

Wei Longxing was a powerful figure under the Half-Saint Rank and the Half-Saint Outer Rank. Even if he was corroded by the Evil Death Qi, he managed to make a palm.

Bang!

The two palms crashed.

Zhang Ruochen was thrown back for hundreds of meters, adding to his wounds.

After Zhang Ruochen had used up his Holy Qi, he now could only fight with his spiritual power.

But his 49th level spiritual power could only fight a Ninth Level Half-Saint at the middle or later phase, and was still far from the power of Wei Longxing.

Wei Longxing retreated for three steps and stood still. He operated martial moves immediately to suppress the Evil Death Qi.

“Gu Linfeng...how could you...have other resorts...”

Wei Longxing bit his teeth and was furious that he had almost been killed by him.

He decided to end the fight quickly to kill Gu Linfeng first and then resolve the Evil Death Qi inside his body.

Zhang Ruochen took out a saint decree, remaining clam. “Next time you see me, you will be killed by me.”

White brilliance appeared on the saint decree, and covered up Zhang Ruochen’s body.

Then Zhang Ruochen burst out the speed of a saint to fly to the horizon.

“You can’t run away.”

Wei Longxing was determined to kill him, and took out another saint decree. He activated its power to run after Zhang Ruochen.

Soon, Zhang Ruochen went thousands of kilometers away. He looked back and sensed that Wei Longxing was approaching him quickly.

“What a stubborn person!”

Coldness flashed in Zhang Ruochen’s eyes.

Then, Zhang Ruochen activated the power of the saint decree again and changed his direction to escape.

The one kept chasing another for a very long distance that nobody could tell.

After a dozen flights, Zhang Ruochen finally cut Wei Longxing loose.

It was known that Zhang Ruochen’s saint decree was the Bloodprint Saint Decree written by the Saint Lady with her own blood. The power inside it was much stronger than ordinary ones.

Naturally, Wei Longxing couldn’t catch up with him.

The desert at the center of the Blue Dragon Void World was vast. After calculation, Zhang Ruochen found that he had flown more than 40,000 kilometers away, and yet he hadn’t reached its boundary.

He was still in the desert, but now in a totally strange area.

“Wei Longxing could be here anytime. I must cure myself now.”

Zhang Ruochen picked up the Universe Spiritual Map and let the Elephant-swallowing Rabbit and Monster Ape out, telling them the story.

“I will enter the Scroll World to recover myself. You take the Universe Spiritual Map and move around in the desert. Don’t stay at one place all the time.”

After telling them this, Zhang Ruochen entered the Scroll World to recover his wounds.

The two Withered Pills he’d purchased in the auction had been used by him before. Now, Zhang Ruochen had to take in the ordinary medicine and cure himself, following the steps.

Luckily, he was not severely wounded.

He was weak mainly because he had used up his Holy Qi.

With the help of the spiritual Qi and the Qi of Life given out from the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree, Zhang Ruochen’s wounds recovered in just half day. His Holy Qi was filled up as well.

Zhang Ruochen talked to the Elephant-swallowing Rabbit outside the map. Knowing that Wei Longxing didn’t come around, he didn’t rush to get out of the Scroll World.

“I’ll take the chance to sanctify all of the 36 apertures of my hands and arms. Maybe I can also improve my cultivation to the peak of the Sixth Level Half-Saint.”

Zhang Ruochen took out a jar of divine blood. He reached out and raised one hand.

Holy Qi gushed out from his palm and entered the Divine Wood Jar.

Zoom—

More than 100 drops of divine blood flew out of the jar and floated in all directions of Zhang Ruochen, giving out bright light like stars.

With Zhang Ruochen’s cultivation, he didn’t need to refine the divine blood one drop after another. It would be too slow.

Zhang Ruochen opened his hands, and then opened the seven apertures in his palms.

The divine blood floating in midair gave out red silk threads as thin as hair, which connected with the seven apertures in Zhang Ruochen's palms.

The power of divine blood gushed into Zhang Ruochen's meridians and veins, starting to sanctify other 16 apertures in the arms.

Zhang Ruochen had refined 600 drops of divine blood in the past half-month, and finally sanctified the 36 apertures in his arms and hands.

Zhang Ruochen raised his arms a little. Dragon and elephant roars sounded in the air.

The shadow of dragon and elephant showed up to his both sides, giving out immense saint power.

The two arms had changed greatly from before. They were crystal-clear, as if they were craved from jade.

“This is a pair of Saintly Arms. It won't get hurt by ordinary Thousand-pattern Saint Weapons.”

Zhang Ruochen took out the Ancient Abyss Sword, trying to test the strength of his arms.

But he finally stopped himself from doing so. After all, the Ancient Abyss Sword was no ordinary Thousand-pattern Saint Weapon. It was too sharp. Even the saintly arms wouldn't defend against it.

“With this pair of Saintly Arms, will I win the saints of lower realms?” Zhang Ruochen felt the power in his both hands, putting on a smile.

Although saints of lower realms had been in the saint realms, their bodies were not sanctified. They might not win against Zhang Ruochen.

After the practice, Zhang Ruochen's cultivation reached the peak of the Sixth Level Half-Saint. And he felt that he was going to reach the Seventh Level.

With his current state, he only needed to take a Seventh-class Divine Origin Pill to break his current cultivation.

“I can fight the Firegold Raven Beast King at its prime time.”

Zhang Ruochen practiced his palm play several times and grasped the way to control his saintly arms’ power, then he walked out of the Scroll World.

Practicing in the Scroll World for half a month would just mean two days in the outer world.

“Where is this?”

Zhang Ruochen looked to his front and frowned.

Under his feet, it was the blood red Gobi desert. The sand and rock were like soaking in blood. Even the sky was blood red, looking creepy.

There were weathered rock mountains around. Some of them were as tall as 3000 meters, showing odd shapes like some kind of ancient beasts.

The Elephant-swallowing Rabbit said, “I don’t know.”

“You don’t know, and you dare to intrude?”

Zhang Ruochen felt the crisis out of instinct. The area was full of danger. It was not a peaceful place.

The Elephant-swallowing Rabbit appeared to be innocent, and said, “You told us not to stay in one place and that we have to move around. We intruded upon this area unconsciously, and couldn’t go out.”

Monster ape kept nodding beside it.

Chapter 1069 - The Chaotic Belt

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

He really had nothing to say to two savage beasts.

Since they'd come here, he had to study it. What's so special about this place?

Zhang Ruochen walked to the side of a blood-red weathered mountain. He took a little piece of rock, and smelled it.

Immediately he smelled light Qi of blood from the rock.

“Maybe it did soak in the blood once?”

Zhang Ruochen closed his eyes and put his spiritual power out to detect the surrounding area. He said to himself, The structure of the space isn't very stable. It could collapse at any time.

There were many broken spaces in the range of thousands of kilometers.

Some spaces were broken into chaotic area, a mixture of material space and the void space.

It wasn't strange that the Elephant-swallowing Rabbit and the Monster Ape couldn't get out. The space here was totally a mess. Sometimes they could fly for thousands of kilometers and still stay in the old spot.

“Could it be...the center of the Blue Dragon Void World?” Zhang Ruochen said.

The Blue Dragon Void World was about to be exhausted and come to an end. It must have started from the center, then

spread to its outer area.

At last, the whole world would collapse.

“Are there treasures in the central area?” The Elephant-swallowing Rabbit widened its round eyes and lifted its cute ears.

The Monster Ape also roared and reached out two palms to dig. It soon dug a pit in the ground.

Zhang Ruochen looked at them and shook his head slightly.

Holy Qi gushed out from his body and lifted him off the ground. He flew forward slowly.

Meanwhile, he used his Heavenly Eye to detect the mineral resources at the bottom.

As speculated by the Elephant-swallowing Rabbit, the material space had collapsed in the center of the Blue Dragon Void World. Some of the essence would soon be tilted and condensed into very rare treasures.

This area was extremely dangerous for other monks, who would die in the spatial cracks once they were uncautious.

But for the Time and Space Descendant, Zhang Ruochen, this place was full of treasure.

The Elephant-swallowing Rabbit and the Monster Ape followed him closely, using their claws to dig at the ground from time to time, leaving light holes in it.

Naturally, they got nothing by digging in this way.

All of a sudden, Zhang Ruochen, who was flying in midair, stopped. He said, “About 100 meters deep, you two try and see if you can find some treasure there.”

The eyes of the Elephant-swallowing Rabbit and the Monster Ape turned bright. They started to dig instantly.

Ah!

The Monster Ape shouted and expanded its body to an about 200-meter-tall black ape, giving out the Qi of wilderness.

Its palms were as hard as iron. It dug a giant pit of about 20 meters deep by cracking the rocks.

He kept digging for a dozen times, and finally reached the spot about 100 meters deep and found a greenish-grey rock.

The rock was about 1 meter long and a half meter wide. It wasn't in an odd shape, looking similar to any ordinary rocks.

But it weighed about 50 tons, strangely heavy.

Zhang Ruochen called the Ancient Abyss Sword out to crack the outer layer of the rock.

Zoom—

Dazzling green light gushed out from inside the rock, giving off strong Holy Qi.

A slight wind was formed near it.

Inside the rough rock was a giant green saint rock.

“It's a wind-elemental saint rock. Such a big one could be broken into 500 smaller pieces. It's a fortune,” Zhang Ruochen laughed.

The sum of some Half-Saints' wealth couldn't compare with 500 pieces of saint rock.

If a lower level Half-Saint found this green rock, he would be thrilled.

But for Zhang Ruochen, who had numerous treasures, 500 pieces of saint rock was not very attractive.

The Elephant-swallowing Rabbit was excited. It swallowed the green rock. Its white belly bulged with a square shape, like a big penguin.

It walked with shaky steps, falling to the ground many times.

“Why do you eat everything?”

Zhang Ruochen would very much like to sew its mouth shut.

But its digestion was terrible. In just a short while, its belly became smaller.

Then, Zhang Ruochen went on moving, and found about 20 treasures on the way.

There were all kinds of saint rocks and some saint jade with a strange smell.

One saintly jade was called the Saint Jade of the Celestial Way. It was buried several kilometers deep. The Elephant-swallowing Rabbit went down and dug it out, with its belly bigger than its body.

The Saint Jade of the Celestial Way was precious. It was made of the Rules of Celestial Way of a whole world and saint jade.

Although Zhang Ruochen was the Crown Prince of the Sacred Central Empire, he only saw it in the ancient records.

It was said that the Fish-Dragon Realm Monks, even if they were only at the First Change, could reach the state of Half-Saints overnight after refining one Saint Jade of the Celestial Way.

Refining the Saint Jade of the Celestial Way was like taking in the heritage of a whole world's martial moves.

Of course, there was an obvious drawback of refining the Saint Jade of the Celestial Way, and monks would find it hard to make progress after they had made it to the Half-Saint Realm at a fast speed.

It is actually a good choice for less talented monks to refine the Saint Jade of the Celestial Way. If I can find a large amount of them, I can produce many Half-Saints for the Sacred Sect in a short time, Zhang Ruochen said to himself.

Although Half-Saints could be seen frequently in the Blue Dragon Void World, they were the most of the Kunlun's Field's.

If they spread out in the whole Kunlun's Field, each would become a lord in his area.

And the power they stood for was central from the Middle Ages.

It's a pity that Zhang Ruochen only had a small piece of the Saint Jade of the Celestial Way now, and it wouldn't be easy

for him to find a large amount of them.

Zhang Ruochen finally arrived at the Chaotic Belt after a long way.

The Chaotic Belt covered up the area of dozens of kilometers. Its spatial structure had broken into pieces.

Standing at its boundary, Zhang Ruochen used his Heavenly Eye to see giant rocks floating in the center of the void space.

The rocks were broken at first, and then disappeared in the void.

“Is this the spot that material space exchanged with the void space?”

Zhang Ruochen could feel the strong waves in the surrounding space. The ground under his feet could collapse at any time.

Then, a layer of light curtains showed up at the center of the Chaotic Belt.

The world showed on it had lush green woods, ancient mountains, and broad rivers.

Thousands of human monks were fighting enormous savage beasts. It was a wretched sight, mountains collapsing and rivers reversing.

Some monks were students of the Martial Market Academy. Zhang Ruochen could tell it from their clothes.

Splash.

A large amount of red blood crossed the chaotic space and the light curtain to fall on Zhang Ruochen’s head like blood rain.

Even some corpses flew here and landed in the void space of the Chaotic Belt.

“What’s that place connecting with the void space?” Zhang Ruochen wondered.

There were five military bases built by the Ministry of War in the Blood Dragon Void World.

The base in Yingsha City was just one of them and had only a small number of human monks.

Apparently, the fight on the light curtain didn't happen around the military base in Yingsha City. It might be more than 50,000 kilometers or 500,000 kilometers away.

The battle ended soon.

Thousands of human monks had died. The savage beasts rushed to open their mouths and let out their sharp fangs to devour the human corpses on the ground, leaving the mountain covered with blood.

Some of the beautiful female talents survived.

A bunch of half-human half-beasts bound their hands and feet with iron chains, and dragged them to the front of the beast kings as if they were dragging animals.

Zhang Ruochen wanted to cross the light curtain to get to that place through the chaotic space.

But the spatial waves surrounding the light curtain were violent. Zhang Ruochen made a step forward, and the sky and the earth collapsed.

Zhang Ruochen had to retreat.

With his current understanding of space, he couldn't survive once he fell in the void space.

Pat!

The spatial passage collapsed. The light curtain broke into pieces. And everything disappeared.

Then, the second spatial passage appeared with the light curtain.

In it was a vast grassland. It was also a wretched sight of human monks killing Immortal Vampires.

There were about 10,000 human monks crowding together.

The number of Immortal Vampires was even several times bigger. They launched attacks from different directions, trying to kill all human monks.

But the human monks were powerful. Even though they had a smaller number, they managed to resist the Immortal

Vampires' attack.

Zhang Ruochen saw some familiar figures in the human monks, powerful figures of the Moon Worship Demonic Sect, Mu Lingxi, Le, Qi Feiyu, the Captain Rat and Snake Two... etc.

At that time, a gentle young man in green robes, who was sitting on a wheelchair at the center of the Demonic Sect, reached a white and clean hand to press into the void.

Boom.

A green demonic hand which was hundreds of meters long showed up, killing many Immortal Vampires who were flying in midair.

The corpses of the Immortal Vampires fell to the ground like rain.

Pat!

As the green demonic hand flew out, the passage was broken as well. The light curtain before Zhang Ruochen collapsed again. The sight disappeared completely.

Chapter 1070 - Space Transfer Formation

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The deranged space in the Chaotic Belt connected with regions of the Blue Dragon Void World, displaying bloody scenes to Zhang Ruochen.

It was imaginable that the fights in every places in the Blue Dragon Void World were not only for treasures, but for survival.

Savage beasts were stronger and suppressed human monks.

And it also showed the array of powerful forces and clans in Kunlun's Field.

Were it not for Empress Chi Yao, who had suppressed the beast kings in the Savage Barren Territory, humans wouldn't have a comfortable life to live in the Kunlun's Field.

"It's horrible. After the fight in the Blue Dragon Void World, how many living creatures could survive?"

The Elephant-swallowing Rabbit shrank its neck. Its teeth chattered, rat-rat.

"The living creatures who survived must be powerful figures. They will become lords."

Zhang Ruochen sighed and looked at the ground.

At the boundary of the Chaotic Belt, where the material space exchanged with the void space, purple saint jade was produced. It was bright and pretty.

It was the Spatial Saint Jade.

The Spatial Saint Jade was the main part to build a Space Transfer Formation, and the rarest one.

Zhang Ruochen came to the Chaotic Belt to find it.

The number of it was large. Some could be found on the surface.

“Collect all the Spatial Saint Jade.”

The Elephant-swallowing Rabbit and the Monster Ape each took out a Spatial Ring, and kept throwing the purple Spatial Saint Jade into it.

Zhang Ruochen himself also picked up some bigger-sized Spatial Saint Jade from the bottom.

Within about 2 hours, they finished collecting all the Spatial Saint Jade around the Chaotic Belt. There were almost 1000 pieces of it.

The biggest one was about the size of an adult’s body.

The smallest one was about the size of a walnut, pretty and clear like the purple crystal.

“I can arrange at least 3 Space Transfer Formations with them,” Zhang Ruochen nodded with content.

As the Blue Dragon Void World collapsed, more Spatial Saint Jade would be produced. It wouldn’t be too late for him to collect it by then.

The Elephant-swallowing Rabbit was still excited. It asked, “Lord Chen, too many treasures are buried here. Let’s dig more and take them back to the Kunlun’s Field. We are going to sell for a good price!”

“How can digging out treasures compare with robbing treasure from others?”

Zhang Ruochen touched his jaw with his fingers, putting on a weird smile.

The savage beasts must have collected great amounts of heavenly and earthly treasures. Once he could rob a beast king, he would get the reward more than he’d get by digging for half a year.

To keep a low profile, Zhang Ruochen sent the Elephant-swallowing Rabbit and the Monster Ape back to the Scroll World, and walked alone to the outer area of the blood red Gobi Desert.

He couldn't make it with his own strength, so he had to meet Sikong One and Sikong Two and the others first.

Avoiding the deranged space, Zhang Ruochen flew for more than 1000 kilometers to reach the outer area of the blood red Gobi Desert.

“This is a dangerous place for other monks. But for me, this is a place where I can burst out more power.”

Zhang Ruochen put on a thoughtful look, and stopped to find a secret place to arrange the Space Transfer Formation.

Leaving a Space Transfer Formation would be good. Maybe it could help when coming to urgency.

Four kinds of saint jade and seven kinds of saint rock were needed to arrange it.

Luckily, Zhang Ruochen had prepared all the materials in advance.

Zhang Ruochen was cautious in arranging the Space Transfer Formation for the first time. He didn't start it immediately, but began to read the Time and Space Secret Guide over and over.

Zhang Ruochen had read the article of the Space Transfer Formation before, now he had to confirm the details.

After reading it several times, Zhang Ruochen began to practice.

The base of the Space Transfer Formation was saint jade, then the seven elemental saint rocks, each standing for the power of water, fire, wood, metal, soil, wind and light.

It took Zhang Ruochen a whole day, several corrections and his full spiritual power to arrange a basic Space Transfer Formation.

Zhang Ruochen wiped the sweat off his forehead. He found it hard to hide his delight, and laughed. “I made it!”

Under his feet, it was a round Formation made of purple saint jade, which was about 30 meters in diameter, with inscriptions crossed underneath the ground, giving out light purple light.

In the Middle Ages, Saint Monk Xumi once arranged a Space Transfer Formation in the Kunlun's Field. It could go beyond five realms and even to the outer areas.

Sadly, the catastrophe at the end of the Middle Ages had destroyed most of the Space Transfer Formations.

Even though some remained, they were either buried underneath the ground, or sealed in humanless relics.

It could be said that Zhang Ruochen's Space Transfer Formation meant a lot.

The range of a basic Space Transfer Formation was within 150,000 kilometers.

In other words, Zhang Ruochen could arrive immediately at any spot within 150,000 kilometers' range through this Space Transfer Formation.

Of course, the farther it went, the bigger its deviation would be.

For example, sending to 5,000 kilometers away, the deviation would be no more than 50 kilometers.

Sending to 50,000 kilometers away, the deviation would be no more than 500 kilometers.

Unless it was spot to spot transfer, deviation would always happen.

The so-called spot to spot transfer meant the transfer through one Space Transfer Formation to another one. Only in this way could the transfer be accurate.

“With the experience of this time, it won't cost me so much time arranging the next one.”

Zhang Ruochen stood at the center of the Space Transfer Formation. He used his spiritual power to locate the spot and poured Holy Qi into the Formation.

The purple light in the Spatial Saint Jade in the Formation became brighter and brighter.

Zoom!

With a flash, Zhang Ruochen disappeared.

The light of the Formation died out.

About 10,000 kilometers away.

Zoom—

Spatial waves appeared in the sky of thousands of meters high. And Zhang Ruochen's body showed up. He fell down immediately.

Zhang Ruochen operated Holy Qi at once to condense a white cloud under his feet, slowing down his falling speed.

“I don't grasp the control of the Space Transfer Formation,” Zhang Ruochen said, mocking himself.

This time, he had been transferred to the sky, thousands of meters high. If next time, he was sent to the bottom of thousands of meters deep or the nest of some beast king, it would be tragic.

Zhang Ruochen didn't know the deviation for he had only located a rough spot.

“If Sikong One, Sun Dadi and the others had met with Senior Sister Huang, I should be no more than 5,000 kilometers from them.”

Zhang Ruochen released his spiritual power, which turned into light particles, to fly to all directions. He tried to locate Blackie's spot, but found three strong strands of savage beasts' Qi about 500 kilometers away.

The power wave shook Zhang Ruochen's spiritual power away.

They must be beast kings.

Why should there be three beast kings?

Zhang Ruochen wondered and suppressed his Qi. He ran fast on the ground to where the Qi came from.

Close to it, Zhang Ruochen could hear the noise of the battle and the roar of the savage beasts.

Zhang Ruochen found a higher place and looked to the horizon.

Three beast kings were seen leading thousands of savage beasts to enclose the human monks and launch a violent attack.

The savage beasts were mainly the Lion Camel Beasts and Snow Mountain Blue Eagles, led by two Lion Camel Beast Kings and the Blue Eagle Beast King.

Many Blue Eagle Beast King were seen on the ground. They were tall and full of strength. Their claws and teeth were sharp like blades.

Thousands of Snow Mountain Blue Eagles flew in the sky. Bone-piercing coldness was given out from them, making snowflakes in the surrounding hundreds of kilometers.

The amount of the human monks at the center was unclear. But Zhang Ruochen knew who they were.

It was the super-union of the human monks, including the Blood God Sect, the Shangguan Clan and the Cai Family, gathering all top figures.

The two sides were caught in a fierce fight. Thousands of corpses were seen on the ground, most of which were corpses of savage beasts.

“The three forces are heirs of the Middle Ages. They must have strong power and methods. As long as they don’t run into the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon and the Golden Armor Scorpion King, it wouldn’t be hard for them get out of the Yingsha Base,” said Zhang Ruochen.

Even if they got out, they were in a bleak situation.

The number of savage beasts were ten times as many as them, taking the absolute upper hand.

By then, Zhang Ruochen saw Wei Longxing.

Wei Longxing was in the Five-colored Saint Armor like Mars. He used his strong cultivation to suppress a Snow Mountain Blue Eagle.

He stood on its back and raised the Horned Ox Skull with both hands. He poured the endless Holy Qi in it.

The Horned Ox Skull expanded to hundreds of meters long. Carrying burning fire, it hit the Blue Eagle Beast King who flew in midair.

Bang!

The Blue Eagle Beast King hit the Horned Ox Skull in a hurry. Several blue feathers fell from its body. It flew backwards.

“What a hateful person! You dared to assault me. You are asking me to kill you.” The Blue Eagle Beast King made an angry roar.

Extraordinary Qi was given off from Wei Longxing. He took the Horned Ox Skull back and held it in his hands. He laughed heartily. “The strength of a beast king is nothing special.”

The female talent of the Cai Family, Cai Yunji, was surprised. “The cultivation of Wei Longxing should be so strong that he could fight a beast king.”

A student of the Blood God Sect was proud, and said, “Not only could Senior Wei fight a beast king, he did kill a beast king not long ago. The Horned Ox Skull was taken by Senior Wei by killing the Firegold Raven Beast King.”

Another student of the Blood God Sect put on a respectful face. “Senior Wei is definitely a human hero. By now, he’s the only one who has killed a beast king, made a win for humans and disgraced the brutal beast kings.”

Wei Longxing hadn’t been able to catch up with Zhang Ruochen. Naturally he returned to the camp of the Blood God Sect and claimed that he had killed the Firegold Raven Beast King to the members.

Therefore, many monks of the Blood God Sect believed that Wei Longxing had a stronger power than Hai Lingyin, and was the best of the Blood God Sect.

Numerous young students regarded him as an idol.

The unparalleled beauty, the Shangguan Twins, Shangguan Linglong and Shangguan Nihong looked to Wei Longxing after they heard people talking about him. They showed surprise in their eyes, an admiration for strong figures.

After all, killing a beast king could be called a tremendous achievement for humans.

Far away, Zhang Ruochen put on a murderous look.

Zhang Ruochen didn't care that Wei Longxing talked nonsense in front of other human monks. But Wei Longxing did try to kill him several times.

How could he let that go?

Last time, Zhang Ruochen had been extremely weak and had been nearly killed by him.

But now, Zhang Ruochen's cultivation had improved greatly. He had even refined a pair of saintly arms. Naturally, he didn't fear any challenge.

“Wei Longxing, you are going to die today!”

Zhang Ruochen shouted and stepped on a cloud of blood mist with his right foot. He rose up into the sky like a shell.

In just a second, he arrived above Wei Longxing and threw a palm. The roars of dragons and elephants were heard inside his arms.

Chapter 1071 - Powerfully Suppressing

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

A mass of tumbling blood clouds condensed above the humans and beasts. A huge palm reached out of it and pressed down.

The horrifying might made all the organisms below it tremble.

Wei Longxing was inside the cloud. Feeling Gu Linfeng's aura, he looked up. Rather than feeling fear, a smile appeared. He actually came voluntarily, he thought. How stupid.

Whoosh—

The Horned Ox Skull flew up from Wei Longxing's hand and enlarged to the size of a pavilion. Thousands of flames shot up around the skull. It released a shred of Supreme Saint power and crashed against the bloody palm print.

Kaboom.

The huge palm print rushed down at the Horned Ox Skull.

“How can this be?”

Wei Longxing's expression changed. He retreated hundreds of feet away in a streak of five-colored light and charged into the camp of the humans.

The Horned Ox Skull crashed into the ground, hitting the place Wei Longxing had just been standing at. It lifted up a wave of yellow sand and created a huge ditch.

Zhang Ruochen flew down from the sky and stood in the relatively empty desert. He stood up straight, giving off an extraordinary temperature.

Wei Longxing looked at his hands with extreme shock. He'd never expected that even with his cultivation and the Horned Ox Skull, he still couldn't block Gu Linfeng's palm print.

Just what level had Gu Linfeng reached?

The humans and beasts present all paused in curiosity. How come these two humans were fighting each other?

Shangguan Xianyan's almond eyes glanced at the fallen Horned Ox Skull. Shock appeared across her exquisite features. "So powerful!" she murmured.

The previous battle had shocked everyone. They all had a new understanding of Gu Linfeng's abilities.

Cai Jinglun, leader of the Cai Family, stood up. Wanting to resolve the conflict between Zhang Ruochen and Wei Longxing, he said, "Gu Linfeng, we humans should be united before our enemy. Can we move on from personal rivalries for now?"

"No," Zhang Ruochen said.

The beautiful twins of the Shangguan Clan both hated Gu Linfeng. They felt like he was being too willful and didn't care about the big picture.

Shangguan Linglong furrowed her brow. "Gu Linfeng, don't you know that Wei Longxing has already killed a Beast King? He's a hero of the humans. A hero! If you attack him, you're helping the beasts. Do you want to stand against all the humans?"

Zhang Ruochen put his hands behind his back and kept staring at Wei Longxing, ignoring the girl. It felt like he was saying that she wasn't qualified to speak to him.

Shangguan Linglong gritted her teeth. She was a young King after all. As the heir of the Taichi Way's sword way and a pride of the Shangguan Clan, she shone brightly. How could she be ignored like this?

Even if his cultivation was high, he still couldn't be so rude.

Wei Longxing was no longer smiling. He grew serious because he knew that either he or Gu Linfeng would fall down today.

Gu Linfeng's cultivation has improved greatly again. If I don't have the Horned Ox Skull, I may lose.

Wei Longxing's eyes kept flashing. Suddenly, he reached forward and slapped out powerful Holy Qi. Rather than attacking Zhang Ruochen, it was to retrieve the Horned Ox Skull.

However, Zhang Ruochen activated his Holy Qi and condensed it into a blood-red hand. It moved through the air to retrieve the Horned Ox Skull too.

The two bursts of power crashed with a deafening sound.

Boom, boom.

The two struck from hundreds of feet away and kept clashing against each other. Finally, Zhang Ruochen scattered Wei Longxing's Holy Qi. He grabbed forward and took the Horned Ox Skull, holding it in his right hand.

Wei Longxing grunted and took four steps back. Anyone could see from the previous clash that Gu Linfeng had totally overpowered Wei Longxing, snatching the Horned Ox Skull directly.

"How can Wei Longxing lose so quickly? Isn't he the top figure of the Blood God Sect below the Saint Realm?"

"Wei Longxing is indeed strong, but unfortunately, he met someone even stronger. It seems like the Deity is the true top figure."

"As expected of Gu Linfeng, undefeated with his saintly palm. He's so powerful and stole Wei Longxing's Horned Ox Skull without any justification. That's the skull of a Supreme Saint beast and contains a portion of the remaining power."

...

Everyone was discussing them, sometimes looking at Zhang Ruochen and sometimes at Wei Longxing.

Wei Longxing's face burned. His heart was filled with hate.

A few days ago, he'd earned incomparable honor and status. Then Gu Linfeng had come back and taken everything from

him.

He quickly calmed down. “Gu Linfeng, we indeed have some conflicts and you may have a bad opinion of me. But you’re starting an internal conflict when we have a great enemy before us. This really disappoints me.”

“I’ve said before that our next meeting would be the date of your death,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Wei Longxing looked very just. “Calm down. I’ll give you an answer after we defeat these beasts. The misunderstandings between us aren’t unsolvable.”

The elder that had been beside Shangguan Xianyan all this time walked out and stood between them. He was a Saint from the Blood God Sect and had a very high status. He’d just sealed his cultivation at the pinnacle before the Saint Realm, but he still gave off a mighty aura.

“Deity,” he advised. “You and Wei Longxing are both talents of the Blood God Sect. There’s no need to turn to things like this because of some misunderstandings. We should unite before the enemy.”

Everyone present thought that Gu Linfeng had crossed the line. No matter what the conflicts between him and Wei Longxing were, he could wait until the beasts were defeated.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t feel like explaining. “How to defeat the beasts is up to you. I only have one goal, which is to kill Wei Longxing.”

“You’re insufferable and cannot see what’s important,” Shangguan Linglong huffed.

Just then, blue light shone above Zhang Ruochen’s head. The Blue Eagle Beast King spiraled in the air and screamed at Zhang Ruochen, “That human’s life belongs to me. Kid, you better not get involved or else I’ll kill you first.”

“His life belongs to me.” Zhang Ruochen stared at the Beast King with icy eyes. “If you don’t leave immediately, I’ll kill you first.”

“How dare you!” The Blue Eagle Beast King roared.

It spread its wings and became hundreds of feet wide. The wings covered the sun with a turbid aura. They flapped and icy wind instantly flooded down from the sky.

Whoosh, whoosh.

The power contained in the wind was very sharp. It condensed into various blue sword images that kept flying at Zhang Ruochen. Some of the blue Sword Qi also fell into the human camp.

A Half-Saint used a martial technique to try and stop it. However, the Sword Qi easily broke through it and stabbed into his head. It pierced his entire body and he died right then and there.

Merely a beam of Sword Qi was this terrifying. Zhang Ruochen was at the front and would face hundreds of Sword Qi. Could he block them?

Boom!

Zhang Ruochen slapped upward, producing a blood-red dragon shadow. It shattered all the blue Sword Qi. Then he transformed into a streak of light and rushed upward. He flew to the height of the Blue Eagle Beast King and activated all his Holy Qi to attack.

“You dare to fight a Beast King at close range. Don’t you know that a Beast King’s physical body is much stronger than a human?”

The Blue Eagle Beast King scoffed. Extending a claw covered in metal scales, it went to meet Zhang Ruochen’s palm. The shocking cold Qi radiating from the claw formed wind blades in the surrounding space.

These wind blades flew out with the claw.

Boom!

Zhang Ruochen’s hand and the Beast King’s claw crashed against each other. The next moment, all the Spiritual Qi within 300 miles shook violently.

The man and beast retreated at the same time.

The Blue Eagle Beast King was one of the weaker Beast Kings. It was a bit lower than the Firegold Raven Beast King. However, it was at the peak now and still couldn't defeat Zhang Ruochen.

Whoosh!

After the first test, the man and beast had an understanding of their opponent's strength. After a short rest, they charged again and continued fighting. They all used different attacks and grew more intense.

"Gu Linfeng's combat ability is shockingly strong. He can actually counter a Beast King." Cai Jinglun squeezed his hands and took a deep breath.

He was the top of the new rank, but he couldn't fight with a Beast King. He naturally felt a lot of pressure. He had to work harder from now on. Otherwise, the distance between them would only get further.

"The Blood God Sect is so powerful," a human Monk said. "Gu Linfeng, Hai Lingyin, and Wei Longxing are all able to fight with a Beast King. Who would say that they're the weakest of the seven ancient sects?"

Only Wei Longxing smiled among the present people. Gu Linfeng, Gu Linfeng! he thought. Even if you've improved a lot, you shouldn't go against a Beast King. Are you trying to kill yourself?

Earlier, Wei Longxing had used the Horned Ox Skull and released his strongest power for a sneak attack on the Blue Eagle Beast King, but he could only make the beast lose some feathers. It was evident just how terrifying the beast was.

Of course, it would be great if Gu Linfeng could die under the Blue Eagle Beast King's claws. It would solve Wei Longxing's crisis. However, the battle didn't develop the way he'd predicted.

Boom!

Zhang Ruochen broke through the Blue Eagle Beast King's seal and slammed down on its neck. His hand sank into the flesh and left a bloody hole in the neck.

The Blue Eagle Beast King wailed.

The next moment, Zhang Ruochen flashed and landed behind the Blue Eagle Beast King. He stomped down and shattered a dozen bones with loud cracks.

Boom!

Kaboom!

...

Zhang Ruochen kept breaking the Blue Eagle Beast King's back, pressing it down to the ground from the sky.

The huge blue eagle sank into the yellow sand. Blood flowed out of its back, dyeing the ground within hundreds of feet red.

Chapter 1072 - All Efforts In Vain?

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The Blue Eagle Beast King cried out in pain. It was heavily injured. Practically all the bones in its back were broken. Blood containing great power flowed out of it, forming a small swamp of blood.

Everyone was floored, their eyes widening. They stared at the young man standing on the Blue Eagle Beast King's back. He was too domineering. He'd repressed a Beast King directly.

In the Yingsha City battle earlier, the Beast Kings had killed human Half-Saints like squashing ants. No one could counter them.

Countless strong human cultivators had become food for the Blue Eagle Beast King. Now, it was suffering and couldn't even pick itself up. It was tragic.

Shangguan Xianyan's glossy red lips opened slightly. Shock filled her eyes. Faced with the current Gu Linfeng, she actually felt like she couldn't breathe.

Wei Longxing was the main plotter for assassinating Gu Linfeng, but Shangguan Xianyan had had similar thoughts before too. She'd even used her power to force him away in an attempt to control the Blood God Sect.

If Gu Linfeng really wanted to take revenge, he wouldn't let her go.

Fortunately, I didn't attack him first. Instead, I was friendly to him many times. Maybe there's still a chance to fix this.

Actually, Shangguan Xianyan still had some trump cards. She wasn't exactly powerless. However, Gu Linfeng wasn't alone. He had many people behind him, each with overpowering strength.

In the Blue Dragon Void World, Gu Linfeng and his people could entirely combat a middle-age clan. Shangguan Xianyan wasn't confident in continuing to go against him.

One Lion Camel Beast King roared in anger, spitting out rings of deafening sound waves. "Humans, I'm warning you. Release the Blue Eagle Beast King now, or else you will die."

With one hand behind his back and the other wearing the Seven Kill Boxing Glove, Zhang Ruochen's eyes flashed coldly. "I'm afraid you aren't qualified to kill me."

"Presumptuous!"

Two Lion Camel Beast Kings started moving their huge bodies, rushing toward Zhang Ruochen. They wanted to save the Blue Eagle Beast King while killing this crazy human to protect the beast kings' reputations.

A phoenix's cry sounded in the sky. Layers of white clouds turned red under the heavenly fire.

A slender figure appeared in the fiery clouds. Wearing a Fire Phoenix Robe and holding a sword, she flew out quickly. "Gu Linfeng, don't have any concerns. Kill this Beast King immediately and show the might of the humans."

Wan Huayu was very handsome as she flew down. As soon as her war boots touched the ground, hundreds of feet in radius of the desert turned into a blazing fire. She struck with her sword, blocking a Lion Camel Beast King.

She'd used her trump card one more time to help Zhang Ruochen kill the Beast Kings. The Fire Phoenix's marks appeared on every inch of her body. She released power enough to fight a Beast King.

Shangguan Xianyan pursed her lips. "Disciples of the Blood God Sect," she said. "Together, stop the beasts and help the Deity kill the Beast Kings."

The Saint elder of the Blood God Sect looked at her, surprised and confused. In the end, he still charged and used a saint spell to knock down another Lion Camel Beast King.

There were a few powerful beasts above Grade Six. As descendants of divine beasts, their combat abilities were only a bit weaker than the Blue Eagle Beast King. Their targets were obvious. They went directly toward Zhang Ruochen and the Blue Eagle Beast King.

However, the leaders of the Shangguan Clan and Cai Family went over immediately and stopped them.

A battle between the humans and beasts erupted once again. It was a chaotic and intense fight.

“He even...suppressed a Beast King?”

Wei Longxing stared at Zhang Ruochen. His throat was dry as he felt extreme danger. He couldn't accept this. Once Gu Linfeng took care of the Blue Eagle Beast King, he would be the next target.

He couldn't sit and wait. He had to attack first.

Poof!

Wei Longxing raised his arms. Five-colored light shot out of his hands, forming two clouds.

He'd received a big opportunity in the Void World Battlefield. He'd found Five-Elements Saint Armor from the middle ages. Using pointers from the weapon spirit, he'd cultivated an ancient saint spell.

It was called the Five Elements Battle Technique.

Wei Longxing pressed onto the ground. His fingers dug into the sand and he released one of the techniques—Earth Battle Technique.

A huge burst of energy flooded out of his hands. It spread hundreds of feet away in the ground.

Kaboom!

Close to Zhang Ruochen and the Blue Eagle Beast King, the ground shook. Sand flew up, consolidating into a yellow

mountain that pressed down. This Earth Battle Technique magnified Wei Longxing's power by 36 times.

Only a saint spell could counter another saint spell.

Zhang Ruochen used the Seven-Apertures Blood Palm. He formed a blood-red palm print and swung it at the mountain.

Kaboom!

The mountain shattered immediately. Sand rained down to the ground.

Wei Longxing spat out blood and retreated without being able to stop. His organs burned in pain. He suffered some internal injuries.

While Zhang Ruochen split his power to defeat Wei Longxing, the Blue Eagle Beast King under his feet screamed and spat out a blue pearl the size of a human's head.

The blue pearl was a bone sharira of an ancestor of the Snow Mountain Blue Eagles, transformed into a battle treasure. It could release both powerful combat ability and defensive powers.

Earlier, it was this bone sharira that had fended off Zhang Ruochen's attack, saving its life. Now, the Blue Eagle Beast King saw that Zhang Ruochen was distracted by Wei Longxing, so it spat out the bone sharira to attack. It wanted to turn the tides.

"Go die!" the Blue Eagle Beast King yelled in anger.

Zhang Ruochen was surprised. He immediately activated the Ten Saints Blood Armor, wrapping it around him. He folded his arms, forming a blood-red defensive light shield.

Boom!

The bone sharira passed through the light shield and crashed against Zhang Ruochen's arms, sending him flying. He fell into the yellow sand, arms in extreme pain. It was fortunate that he'd cultivated his saintly arms. Otherwise, they would've been disabled.

The Blue Eagle Beast King wasn't much weaker than Zhang Ruochen and it had snatched the opportunity, using its strongest attack to kill Zhang Ruochen. However, he had the saintly arms and the Ten Saints Blood Armor. He blocked the bone sharira, ruining its plan.

When the Blue Eagle Beast King realized that it couldn't kill Zhang Ruochen, it immediately retrieved the bone sharira. It unfurled its large blue wings and flew into the sky to escape.

"Blood God Sect Deity," it uttered. "I will remember you and devour you one day."

All the humans present were furious. They'd united and had a chance to kill a Beast King. However, Wei Longxing had secretly attacked Gu Linfeng because of private conflicts, allowing the Blue Eagle Beast King to escape.

This was infuriating!

"We were only a step away from killing the Blue Eagle Beast King. If we succeeded, this would intimidate the beast groups and make them fear acting impulsively. All efforts are in vain now."

"Wei Longxing is so despicable. Now I'm doubting if he'd really killed the Firegold Raven Beast King."

...

Wei Longxing's actions incited everyone's anger. Because that strike hadn't killed Gu Linfeng, Wei Longxing also knew that there was no more place for him now.

He used a physical technique and escaped into the distance. He'd already used up his saint decree when chasing Zhang Ruochen and couldn't use it anymore. He could only use his own power to flee.

The Blue Dragon Void World has countless Genius Treasures, Wei Longxing thought as he escaped. If I can find a few of the legendary items, I might be able to surpass Gu Linfeng.

If he could get any of the legendary items, he could reach the level of the nine Heirs.

Chapter 1073 - Kill Without Mercy

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Wei Longxing didn't escape very far. Zhang Ruochen, with the Ten Saints Blood Armor, easily caught up even without using the Luan Phoenix Deity Print Speed.

“Where do you think you're going?”

A shadow of Pluto, hundreds of feet tall, stood behind Zhang Ruochen. He performed the Seven-Apertures Blood Palm.

Since he had nowhere to hide, Wei Longxing stopped running. He clenched his jaw for his last fight.

“Fire Battle Technique.”

Wei Longxing clenched his fists and red flames spewed out of him. He attacked, releasing 36 times the combat ability.

Zhang Ruochen struck with a palm. He broke through the fire palm print and hit Wei Longxing's chest.

Thud!

Wei Longxing flew backward and was tossed through the air. The blood from his lips spattered in the air too.

Next, Zhang Ruochen struck with a second palm on his back. He scattered the light from the Five Elements Saint Armor. With a crack, Wei Longxing's spine broke. His body practically cracked in half as he flew back.

Boom!

Zhang Ruochen rushed into the sky and flew above Wei Longxing. Using his hand like a blade, he sliced down at the

man's chest.

Crack, crack!

Wei Longxing's ribs all shattered and his organs were turned to mush. He crashed onto the ground. Lying in the ditch, he couldn't move at all.

His vitality was slipping away quickly. His eyes stared up at the sky, dimming gradually.

Zhang Ruochen walked over. Standing beside Wei Longxing, he looked indifferently and stepped down, ending his life.

The other human Monks were watching Zhang Ruochen's every move. When they saw him kill Wei Longxing with one foot, they all shuddered. Chills ran down their spines.

He's intimidating us, Shangguan Xianyan thought. He's telling everyone that anyone who dares to become his enemy will die.

Even with her status and mindset, she still felt a chill.

Zhang Ruochen was still calm after killing someone. He felt like a gentle jade. Looking up, he stared in the direction that the Blue Eagle Beast King had flown in.

It hadn't escaped far and he could still catch up. It had been hard to injure a Beast King. How could he let it escape?

Zhang Ruochen took out a saint decree. Activating the saintly power within, he burst forward with saintly speed.

Transforming into a streak of light, he chased after the Blue Eagle Beast King.

The beast naturally perceived Zhang Ruochen appearing behind him but didn't feel any fear. It wasn't this human's match, but it wasn't hard to escape.

Whoosh!

Holy light flashed and Zhang Ruochen appeared out of thin air, blocking the beast.

"You said that you'll devour me sooner or later?" Zhang Ruochen asked. "Now, I'm telling you that you won't have the chance."

“What, you want to kill me?”

The Blue Eagle Beast King huffed coldly. “I must remind you that if you really force me into a desperate situation, we’ll die together. Do you know why those two Heirs couldn’t kill a Beast King? With their cultivations, they aren’t completely confident that they could block a Beast King’s final desperate attempts.”

The Blue Eagle Beast King believed that this human could weigh the pros and cons. Continuing to fight wasn’t beneficial to anyone.

“Really? I’d like to see just how aggressive your final desperate attempt is.”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t show any sign of retreating. Instead, he strode forward, getting closer and closer to the Blue Eagle Beast King.

“Blood God Sect Deity, I admit I’m impressed by your courage. You’re fierce enough.”

Seeing that this man wasn’t intimidated, the Blue Eagle Beast King immediately activated the power within the bone sharira. It formed blue wings and flew forward with speed comparable to a saint.

As long as it could escape, no one would use kamikaze tactics. Now, the Blue Eagle Beast King’s speed was even faster than Zhang Ruochen with the saint decree.

“You think you can escape?”

Zhang Ruochen smiled. He used the Spatial Move and disappeared from the spot. He immediately crossed dozens of miles and appeared before the Blue Eagle Beast King. Using the Seven-Apertures Blood Palm and 40 times the combat power, he slapped forward.

The Blue Eagle Beast King crashed right into the palm print. Its huge head turned bloody and the bones shattered completely. It dropped from the sky.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t even give it a chance for a final attack. Powerful sword intent burst out, melding with his body.

He put his hands together and raised them above his head.

Whoosh!

His body like a sword, he used Sword Five and dragged out a blood-red streak. He cut through the bone sharira's defense and pierced the Blue Eagle Beast King's body.

By the time he stopped, he was holding a blue pearl in his bloody palms. It was the bone sharira he'd dug out of the beast.

With a thud, the Blue Eagle Beast King dropped onto the ground as a dead body.

Wan Huayu rushed over with her fiery-red phoenix wings. She was extremely shocked to see the Blue Eagle Beast King's body.

"You killed another Beast King. How did you do it?"

When Zhang Ruochen had killed the Firegold Raven Beast King, Wan Huayu had seen the bloody light flood out of the Life-Death Mirror and kill it. Thus, she knew that Zhang Ruochen had killed the Firegold Raven Beast King.

Wan Huayu was very smart and attentive. Zhang Ruochen feared that she would guess his true identity, so he put on a flirty smile. "If you agree with my proposal, I'll tell you immediately."

Wan Huayu knew that he was teasing her. Instead of getting angry, she put her sword away and puffed up her chest. Smiling, she said, "Sure."

This time, it was Zhang Ruochen's turn to be shocked. He didn't expect Wan Huayu would agree so easily. However, she wasn't done speaking.

"However, my father said that anyone who wishes to be his son-in-law must block three of his strikes without dying."

"What if I can't?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

Wan Huayu smiled, showing her white teeth. "Naturally, you die."

Who could take three of Wan Zhaoyi's attacks without a few hundred years of cultivation?

"Are you sure your father isn't trying to ruin you? Does he want you to be single for life?" Zhang Ruochen shook his head and changed the topic. "How's the battle over there?"

"After the Blue Eagle Beast King escaped, the two Lion Camel Beast Kings naturally knew that they couldn't wipe out the humans either. They led their groups and escaped to the northwest."

"Okay. Since they've retreated, there's no need for me to return."

Zhang Ruochen turned to leave.

"You want to leave just like this?" Wan Huayu asked, raising her voice.

"Any problems?"

Wan Huayu rolled her eyes. "All the humans of Yingsha City worked together to fend off the beasts. If you take the black saint flower away now, are you trying to take it for yourself? Don't you remember our agreement from earlier?"

"Oh, you're talking about this?"

Zhang Ruochen nodded as if remembering. It was just a black saint flower and didn't contain that much of the Saintly Source Spring. It wasn't that big of a deal to share it. Plus, many humans had died indeed. Zhang Ruochen felt bad about taking it all for himself.

"Let's go!" Wan Huayu said. "We'll go regroup with the Blood God Sect, Cai Family, and Shangguan Clan. The two Heirs should arrive soon too."

Wan Huayu was indeed worried that Gu Linfeng would try to take the black saint flower and Saintly Source Spring. That was why she was using the two Heirs to repress him. After all, this guy never acted logically. He could do anything.

Zhang Ruochen and Wan Huayu returned to the camp with the Blue Eagle Beast King's body. This immediately stirred up a

commotion. Yet another Beast King had died. This could lower the egos of the 12 beast groups for a while.

Half a day later, the two Heirs, Wan Family, Feng Family of the south, Xuan Sword Clan of the middle region, and Black Market Excellence Hall of the north gathered together. They were prepared to divide the Saintly Source Spring in Zhang Ruochen's hands.

Chapter 1074 - Big Commotion

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The Saintly Source Spring within the black saint flower was enough for 34,000 cups. Divided into ten portions, the two Heirs, Chi Wansui and Beigong Lan, took away seven portions. They brought them back to the Yingsha Military Base to divide amongst the people.

As the respected Heirs, there was no worry that they would take the Saintly Source Spring for themselves.

Zhang Ruochen took half of the remaining three portions. The other half was divided evenly between the Wan Family, Feng Family, Xuan Sword Clan, and Black Market Excellence Hall.

This way, Zhang Ruochen alone took around 5,000 cups of Saintly Source Spring. This was the biggest portion.

One cup and some auxiliary medicines could produce a Grade Seven Divine Origin Pill that was worth cities. Five thousand cups of the Grade Seven Saintly Source Spring represented a terrifying amount of wealth.

Many Monks present were envious and jealous, such as the Monks of the Cai Family and Shangguan Clan. Their families had each received 600 cups and had to give more to the ones that had killed the most beasts.

In the end, the leaders of the families could only take 300 cups back. It wasn't even close to Zhang Ruochen's number.

Zhang Ruochen had gotten the black saint flower first. Taking around 5,000 cups was reasonable. No one dared to complain.

After dividing up the Saintly Source Spring, all the Monks looked to the black saint flower. It was also extremely valuable and comparable to a 10,000-year-old saint medicine. It was hard to determine its medicinal value without close inspection.

Zhang Ruochen wrapped the black saint flower with a beam of Holy Qi. Holding it, he said, “The black saint flower belongs to me. Any complaints?”

They naturally had complaints.

The black saint flower had been born with the Saintly Source Spring. It was a treasure born from nature and definitely had many miraculous uses. Who didn’t want it?

However, Gu Linfeng’s combat ability was honestly too terrifying. He’d first killed Wei Longxing and then the Blue Eagle Beast King. Barely anyone present dared to go against him.

All the Monks looked to the two Heirs. Probably only they could restrict Gu Linfeng.

Chi Wansui’s Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion also had big conflicts with Gu Linfeng. That day, everyone had watched Gu Linfeng force five Canglong Army generals to their knees. This had truly humiliated the Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion. Those five generals had even died because of this.

Many cultivators believed that Chi Wansui would definitely object to Gu Linfeng.

Chi Wansui was a young man around 20 years old. He was handsome with thick eyebrows and defined features. He radiated with a noble aura.

“Gu Linfeng, the black saint flower is useful to me too. If you give it to me, all your conflicts with the Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion will be forgiven.”

Chi Wansui’s tone was very calm. He didn’t act overbearingly or unreasonably. It was like a conversation between friends, but he still gave off a feeling that couldn’t be disagreed with.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t intend to give away the black saint flower. “I indeed have some conflicts with the Lingxiao

Heavenly King Mansion, but that doesn't seem to be my fault.”

“Yes, it is my men who offended you first,” Chi Wansui continued to speak calmly. “But some of your actions were too cruel! I checked the corpses of the five Canglong Army generals. They weren't killed by beasts but by human cultivators! You should understand what I'm saying, right?”

It was clear that Chi Wansui already knew that Zhang Ruochen had killed those five generals. They were all Ninth Level Half-Saints and important figures. How big of a loss was their death to the Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion?

No matter how refined Chi Wansui was, he still couldn't truly forgive Zhang Ruochen. Of course, with the current situation, Zhang Ruochen wouldn't give him the black saint flower even if Chi Wansui truly wanted to make up with him.

Otherwise, the powerful image that Zhang Ruochen had developed would be destroyed. Everyone would think that he was afraid of the strong, and that he bowed down to Chi Wansui.

Zhang Ruochen chuckled. “If you place such high value on this saint flower, then it must be very useful. In that case, I'm even more unwilling to give it away.”

“You must think carefully,” Chi Wansui said. “It's always better to have one more good relationship in the Blue Dragon Void World.”

Zhang Ruochen didn't say anything. He'd already decided.

As of now, he still wasn't sure what the black saint flower could be used specifically for. He wanted to go back and find Blackie immediately. That fat cat claimed to know 100,000 years in the past and future. He should know why Chi Wansui cared so much about the flower.

Zhang Ruochen ran into Shangguan Xianyan as soon as he walked out of the tent.

The important figures of the Blood God Sect were all present, including the Saint elder, Hai Lingyin, Ji Shui, and Blue Night. They all stood behind Shangguan Xianyan. She had nine rings

of holy light around her. Her white dress fluttered and her eyes smiled. Her slender finger moved slightly.

Ji Shui immediately walked over with five-colored saint armor and offered it to Zhang Ruochen.

“Deity, this is your battle reward.” Shangguan Xianyan’s voice was gentle and almost friendly.

The five-colored saint armor was the Five Elements Saint Armor that Wei Longxing had worn. It was indeed a needed defensive treasure. Zhang Ruochen took it without complaints.

“Don’t go,” Ji Shui’s voice said from within the huge blood robe. “Stay!”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t keep his stern expression and instead smiled. “Senior Uncle Ji, it’s not that I want to leave you. It’s just that many people here don’t welcome me.”

Shangguan Xianyan’s eyes shone beautifully like stars. “Deity, can we speak alone?”

“I don’t think it’s necessary. Saintess, you can say whatever you wish.” Zhang Ruochen kept staring at Ji Shui with a smile.

Ji Shui ground her teeth in anger. This guy was getting more and more shameless, even daring to tease his Senior Uncle. If Ji Shui was powerful enough, she would definitely gouge out his eyes.

“You killed the Blue Eagle Beast King,” Shangguan Xianyan said. “You definitely angered the other Beast Kings and they will use extreme tactics against you. Stay! With the alliance between the Blood God Sect, Shangguan Clan, and Cai Family, even the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon won’t be able to kill you.”

“Deity, please stay!”

“Deity, please stay!”

The Monks of the Blood God Sect all lowered onto one knee, asking him to stay. After the last few battles, Zhang Ruochen’s powerful performance had won all of them over.

Many of the younger disciples all worshipped him as if he was a god.

Zhang Ruochen looked away from Ji Shui and gazed at those Monks. “You can’t stop the anger of the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon,” he said indifferently.

With that, he walked away, leaving behind a tall and slender silhouette. A moment later, he disappeared into the horizon.

Chi Wansui, Wan Huayu, Beigong Lan, and some other elites walked out of their tent and looked in the direction that Zhang Ruochen had left in.

An elder in gold thread armor mused, “How could he kill two Beast Kings in a row?”

Beigong Lan carried her ancient sword and radiated the etherealness of a sword saint.

“A Beast King’s last desperate attacks can kill even lower Saints,” she said. “Does this mean that they’d died before they could even set off their Sea of Qi? How can he be so fast?”

“He must have other hidden tricks,” someone guessed.

Chi Wansui walked to the corpse of the Blue Eagle Beast King. Reaching out, he pressed down on the bloody blue feathers. He closed his eyes, sensing closely.

He was born with a mysterious power that allowed him to sense tiny energy waves. It could be said that very few things could escape from his senses. If anyone wanted to sneak up on him, it would be suicide.

“The Blue Eagle Beast King’s fatal hit is a beam of Sword Qi,” he said. “A bit of sword intent remains in its blood. It’s very powerful and even comparable to Junior Sister Beigong’s.”

Beigong Lan’s pupils constricted. “There are only a few in our generation whose cultivation in sword is comparable to mine. If Gu Linfeng really killed the Blue Eagle Beast King, then he must be someone incredibly frightening.”

Chi Wansui retracted his hand and wiped the blood away. “Actually, Gu Linfeng might not have killed the Blue Eagle

Beast King. It might have been the Time and Space Descendant. Don't forget that Zhang Ruochen is somewhere close to the Yingsha City Base and he's a genius in the Sword Way. More importantly, according to information from the Ministry of War, they had some interactions before.”

With that, it dawned on everyone. They all thought that his analysis made sense. No matter how powerful Gu Linfeng was, he was only a Sixth Level Half-Saint. How could he kill a Beast King?

The Time and Space Descendant Zhang Ruochen must have used the powers of time and space to kill the Beast King.

...

News that the Blue Eagle Beast King was killed by the Blood God Sect Deity spread through the beast groups and stirred up a commotion. All the Beast Kings were furious.

That day, a dozen Beast Kings set out and captured more than half of the humans that had escaped from Yingsha City. They numbered five to six thousand.

Other than the Beast Kings of the 12 beast groups, there were even some from the Half-Saint Rank and Outer Rank. They'd been summoned by the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon to kill the humans near Yingsha City.

The humans quickly sank into an even more passive situation.

A Beast King would appear every now and then near Yingsha City, covering the sky with black clouds and shaking the earth.

The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon showed its true form and flew in the air. It called out to Zhang Ruochen, “The Blood God Sect Deity must kneel before me and apologize in three days. After that, I will devour 1,000 humans per day!”

The sound waves of the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon spread tens of thousands of miles away.

Chapter 1075 - Han Qiu's Condition

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Two Beast Kings had died in a row, causing a negative influence. If the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon couldn't turn the tides, this would definitely affect the morale of the beast warriors.

Thus, the Blood God Sect Deity must die. Only his blood could intimidate the human Monks once again.

Five to six thousand human elites had become prisoners. Most of them had had their legs broken, some having their cultivations sealed. They knelt in the desert hundreds of miles away from Yingsha City.

Countless savage beasts were gathered there with the human prisoners in the center. They bared their sharp teeth, ready to pounce at any time and eat them.

The sun blazed. The desert wind blew.

This humiliating scene infuriated all the human Monks in Yingsha City.

With Yingsha City as the center, 200,000 miles in radius was all desert. This took up most of the land in Blue Dragon Void World. The natives here called it the Ingmar Desert.

There were close to 100 beast groups in the Ingmar Desert. They had very obvious roles. Twelve of them surrounded the trapped humans. The others spread throughout the desert to gather the Genius Treasures.

The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon was honestly too strong. It had united all the savage beast groups against the human Monks. This was why the humans were in trouble now.

Any beast group was far above the humans. Of course, as more and more strong humans hurried over on Void Ships, the 12 beast groups couldn't control the humans anymore. Within a few days, a large batch of humans rushed out of the siege.

The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon summoned 12 more beast groups to Yingsha City to stop the humans.

They wanted to steal all the treasures of the Blue Dragon Void World. They didn't want to leave a single saint stone to the humans.

Some of the beast groups had already hurried to Yingsha City under the lead of their Beast King and grouped with the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon. Some others were on their way.

“Horrible! Those savage beasts don't dare to do anything in Kunlun's Field, but they can repress the humans like this in the Blue Dragon Void World.”

“We've been too comfortable in Kunlun's Field, so we can't accept this cruel reality in the Blue Dragon Void World. If the Empress hadn't charged into the Savage Barren Territory 300 years ago and killed eight beast Supreme Saints, intimidating the royal beasts, the First Central Empire wouldn't have had these centuries of peace and prosperity.”

“The younger generation these centuries have indeed been too comfortable,” an elder sighed. “They've lost the feeling of danger.”

The morale of the humans in Yingsha City were heavily reduced. Of course, some also believed that the two Heirs would definitely have a way to stop the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon's bloodshed.

Unfortunately, the two Heirs kept silent and didn't act.

A while later, news spread: “Gu Linfeng killed five generals of the Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion and offended Chi Wansui. Because of this, the two Heirs won't get involved.”

It was just a rumor and few people believed it, but it still created a bad influence. Everyone knew that with Gu Linfeng's stubborn personality, he would never kneel and apologize to the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon. It was even less possible for him to jump into the trap for a group of humans unrelated to him.

This was why everyone put their hopes on the two Heirs. If they wouldn't get involved, did this mean that they would watch the thousands of elites die tragically?

Would the humans still have the confidence to fight against the beasts after this massacre?

Of course, some Monks also believed it wasn't that the Heirs didn't want to get involved. They just couldn't change the situation.

What the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon had set up was a dead end. Even if all nine Heirs arrived at once, it would still be unresolvable, let alone the two Heirs alone. The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon's cultivation could kill those defenseless humans with the snap of a finger.

There was only one way to save those humans. Gu Linfeng had to voluntarily kneel before the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon and save those thousands of elites with his life.

That night, Chi Wansui appeared before the busiest restaurant in Yingsha City. "In the entire Blue Dragon Void World, only Gu Linfeng can save them. It's not that I don't wish to help them. I'm truly powerless."

Zhang Ruochen naturally heard the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon's voice, but he was still calm. He ignored it and continued tracking the Shooting Star Invisibility Cloak to search for Han Qiu.

In the evening, Zhang Ruochen came to a region with very strong wind. He stopped. "I know you're nearby. Show yourself immediately!"

Wild wind blew in the desert, wailing like a beast's cry.

Whoosh!

Sand on the ground moved quickly, forming a huge ten-mile-wide vortex. It sank right into the ground. A thin black figure appeared in the center and rose up gradually.

When the black Qi scattered, it revealed Han Qiu who looked at Zhang Ruochen with bright eyes. She chuckled. “I knew you put something into the Shooting Star Invisibility Cloak. But I’m a bit disappointed that you came so late.”

“If you knew that I left a ray of Qi in the Shooting Star Invisibility Cloak, why didn’t you refine it?”

Han Qiu walked toward Zhang Ruochen. Her ruby-like lips curled into a mesmerizing smile. “Why should I refine it? I have to return the Shooting Star Invisibility Cloak to you. It’s on me right now. Do you want to...take it off yourself?”

After comprehending the rules of darkness, Han Qiu’s personality had changed greatly.

When Zhang Ruochen first met Han Qiu, her personality had been like Huang Yanchen—a bit cold and proud. She’d indeed felt something for Zhang Ruochen, but she would have never taken the initiative like this.

In Zhang Ruochen’s opinion, it was a bit too much.

At this moment, Han Qiu had already walked to Zhang Ruochen and was only a step away. Her long black hair hung to the ground. No matter how violent the cold wind was, it couldn’t move a strand of her hair.

Zhang Ruochen stared into her eyes. It felt like those beautiful eyes were like black holes trying to suck away his spirit and soul. However, Zhang Ruochen wasn’t a typical man.

He immediately looked away. “Are you wearing the Shooting Star Invisibility Cloak on the inside or outside?”

“Obviously the most inside,” Han Qiu said, smiling.

Zhang Ruochen reached out toward her collar. Just as he was about to touch her, cold light flashed at his fingertips. Sharp Sword Qi surged out toward Han Qiu’s forehead.

Zhang Ruochen had put Sword Five’s concept into it. It was as fast as light and sparked in the air.

Whoosh—

Han Qiu vanished in a puff of black smoke. Zhang Ruochen's finger only penetrated her shadow.

The next moment, Han Qiu re-solidified to the right of Zhang Ruochen with an upset expression. "I knew you were the type that wouldn't understand these things."

Zhang Ruochen retracted his finger. "I also guessed that you've been hiding your cultivation. Your current abilities shouldn't be weaker than a Beast King, right?"

The Way of Darkness that Han Qiu cultivated was the best at hiding. It wasn't hard for her to hide her cultivation.

In the scroll world, Zhang Ruochen had supplied her with an endless stream of divine blood. With the devouring speed of the Way of Darkness, she'd already refined it all. She also used the Qi of Life from the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree and Qi of Death from the tree stump to reach the Sixth Level.

After that, she'd absorbed a great amount of Sainly Source Spiritual Qi from the crack in the earth. She instantly reached the pinnacle of the Seventh Level.

These days, she'd absorbed the power of the seven-colored saint flower and had new improvements.

When Zhang Ruochen found her, she'd just entered the Eighth Level. It could be said that Han Qiu, with the Form of Darkness and the Way of Darkness, could swallow all energy in the world.

No Monk could compare to her speed of cultivation. With her current abilities, not even Zhang Ruochen could be her match.

Han Qiu batted her lashes and laughed like a little fox. "If not for your unrestricted help, I would have never reached the level I am at now."

There was no smile on Zhang Ruochen's face. "Give the Sainly Source Spring to me."

"I can give you anything if you agree to my condition."

Han Qiu wiped her smile away. Piercing cold Qi instantly radiated off from her, turning her into an ice-cold beauty. Perhaps this was the real her.

“You want to talk about conditions with me?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“You think I’m not qualified right now?” she shot back.

After a moment of silence, Zhang Ruochen nodded. “Okay. I will agree if your condition isn’t too over-the-top.”

With the Form and Way of Darkness, she could become a sovereign in any era. A person like her would never submit to anyone.

Han Qiu must know what power she held now, so she wasn’t willing to be Zhang Ruochen’s follower anymore. Instead, she wanted to negotiate.

Staring into Zhang Ruochen’s eyes, Han Qiu said with determination, “I want to be the Crown Princess of the Sacred Central Empire, not the Crown Prince’s servant.”

Zhang Ruochen was slightly shocked. After observing her and seeing that she was serious, he said slowly, “Your condition is a bit too much. Please change it.”

Han Qiu shook her head and her eyes softened. She said, “As I said, I wouldn’t be like this now if not for all your help. I never thought about betraying you. I just don’t wish to be under anyone. Is this simple condition too much too?”

“Zhang Ruochen, you once saved me in the Heavenly Devil Mountain. We cultivated the Yin and Yang Sword Formation together. You encouraged me to join the Yin and Yang Sect. I went and learned the Taichi Instinct Technique. You told me to leave the Yin and Yang Sect, so I went with you.”

“Am I just an obedient servant in your eyes? Don’t you feel what I feel for you? Now, I’m telling you clearly that I do not wish to be your servant. Now, I will fight for what I should fight for.”

Chapter 1076 - I Will Fight With You

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Yellow sand danced in the desert, forming tornadoes that rushed into the air with wails.

This time, Zhang Ruochen stayed silent for a long time. Staring at Han Qiu, he said, “I never saw you as a servant. I can give you anything you wish. I will never be stingy about resources for you. However, there are some things I really can’t give you.”

If Zhang Ruochen gave in to Han Qiu’s condition today, she would only ask for more in the future. This would lead to an unpredictable crisis.

The current Han Qiu was a sharp poisonous needle. He shouldn’t touch her if he couldn’t give her feelings. Once he touched her, he would never be able to turn back.

Han Qiu bit her lip and crystal tears appeared in her eyes. She formed a sword technique with her slender fingers.

Whoosh!

A saint sword flew out and hovered before her. It shone with black light.

“Fight me. If you win, I won’t force you to do anything again. If I win, you must marry me and make me the Crown Princess.” Han Qiu was determined.

Zhang Ruochen put his hands behind his back and shook his head softly. “Why must we fight? Is it that we can’t even be friends and can only be enemies?”

“So will you fight me or not?” Han Qiu asked.

“I will not.”

Zhang Ruochen did not expect that his relationship with Han Qiu would develop to this state. If he really fought her today, they would become enemies no matter who won.

Even if Zhang Ruochen won, Han Qiu still wouldn't stay by his side and listen to his orders. If Han Qiu won, Zhang Ruochen wouldn't marry her either.

Sometimes, a battle couldn't solve the problem. It could only intensify conflicts.

Han Qiu bit her lip hard. Blood flowed into her mouth with a copper taste.

Whoosh.

Sharp cold light surged out of the saint sword as it flew out to Zhang Ruochen's heart. Han Qiu was forcing him to fight.

Suddenly, white saintly light carried another sword out. It crashed against Han Qiu's sword.

Thud.

The white and black sword flew out at the same time. One dropped into Han Qiu's hand. The other flew further back, landing in the hand of another extreme beauty.

Huang Yanchen carried the saint sword and dragged the tip on the ground. She walked over from the distance, step by step. Her long blue hair danced in the wind. She emanated an icy aura. “If you really had feelings for him, then you wouldn't use your sword on him no matter what. Forcing him has no use. If you wish to fight, then fight with me.”

Zhang Ruochen glanced at Huang Yanchen and frowned slightly. “Senior Sister, I think it's best if you don't get involved. I can take care of this.”

Huang Yanchen shook her head. “This is my business too. I believe that resolving women's matters between women is better.”

Seeing Huang Yanchen here, Han Qiu's presence enlarged rapidly. Her aura was more than ten times stronger than before.

Scoffing coldly, she said, "Huang Yanchen, you think you can fight me? If Zhang Ruochen didn't help you become an Heir, you wouldn't have your current skills. With your physique and talent, you aren't even worthy to clean my shoes."

"Oh?" Huang Yanchen was very cold but calm. "I'd like to ask you something. Do you think you could survive the backlash of the Form of Darkness without Zhang Ruochen's help?"

"If he hadn't given you the opportunity, would you have been able to enter the Yin and Yang Sect and learn the Taichi Instinct Technique, balancing the two opposing forces within you? If he hadn't sent you into the scroll world and given you endless resources, would you have your current cultivation?"

Han Qiu didn't deny what Huang Yanchen said. "Fine! Since you dare to accept the challenge, then I'll make it easy for you. Even if you're an Heir and have extraordinary achievements, I'm still far above you. If you die under my sword, it's because you're not strong enough. It's not my fault."

"If you lose to me, then you have to listen to me from now on."

Huang Yanchen radiated with a sharp aura. Beams of Sword Qi shot out. They shielded an area of 100 miles in radius, turning it into a zone of death.

Anyone under the Half-Saint Realm that ventured into this zone would die.

"Senior Sister, your cultivation has already reached the Ninth Level?"

At first, Zhang Ruochen had been worried for Huang Yanchen's safety. After all, Han Qiu had both the Form and Way of Darkness. She absolutely had a great combat ability.

Even though she hadn't completed the Form of Darkness, Han Qiu still wasn't any weaker than an Heir in the same realm.

On the other hand, Huang Yanchen only had a mortal body. Even if she had special opportunities in the future to make up for the difference in physique, she still lacked some things.

In the same plane, Huang Yanchen may lose to Han Qiu. However, she was now one level higher than Han Qiu. It was hard to predict who would win.

Whoosh.

Shreds of black light condensed automatically and circled Han Qiu. A black ball dozens of feet long appeared above her head. The black ball was like a black hole among the stars. It could swallow any material object or energy. Even light couldn't escape from it.

Instantly, all the Sword Qi among 100 miles was swallowed by it.

Next, Han Qiu stomped on the ground, making the entire ground spin in a giant spiral. Absorptive force came out of the spiral to try and drag Huang Yanchen in.

Huang Yanchen's feet seemed to be stuck onto the ground. She couldn't move. It was extremely easy if Han Qiu wanted to drag her in.

"Break," Huang Yanchen uttered. She waved her sword and hit the weakest part of the spiral.

"It's not that easy to break through my rules of darkness."

Evil dark Qi flooded out of Han Qiu's palms. She sent it into the underground vortex and it formed into many black tentacles. They covered Huang Yanchen's saint sword.

Huang Yanchen sent Holy Qi toward her arm to take the saint sword back. However, the Holy Qi was swallowed by the power of darkness as soon as it left her palm.

"Is that all you can do? As an Heir, you've really wasted the resources of Kunlun's Field." Han Qiu sneered and barked out a laugh. Then she hit the black ball above her head toward Huang Yanchen to swallow her.

To One Sword Technique, Huang Yanchen thought. The saint sword in her hands suddenly burst with powerful energy

waves and beamed with blinding light.

Even Zhang Ruochen had to close his eyes immediately so he wasn't hurt by the light. When he opened his eyes again, he saw that Huang Yanchen's sword had shattered the underground vortex and hovering black ball.

Chi Yao actually passed the To One Sword Technique to her.

Zhang Ruochen's pupils constricted. Shock flashed past his eyes.

The To One Sword Technique was the culmination of Blood Emperor Qingtian's lifetime accomplishments. It combined thousands of bits of knowledge of martial arts. It was only one move, but it contained the endless mysteries of the Sword Way.

Even Xue Hongchen, the top sword emperor at the time, had said that there was no way against Blood Emperor Qingtian's To One Sword Technique. If cultivated to the extreme, it could cut apart all saint spells in the world.

Of course, not even Blood Emperor Qingtian could cultivate the technique to its finest.

At the moment, Huang Yanchen's To One Sword Technique already had some fire to it. The power it unleashed surpassed many saint spells.

Han Qiu was also shocked. She hadn't expected that Huang Yanchen's sword techniques could be so advanced. Thus, she transformed into a shadow and retreated.

“Xuanwu Saint Trigram.”

Huang Yanchen waved her sword. The next moment, a mass of blue clouds that spread for dozens of miles covered the sky. Next, a Blue Fire Xuanwu the size of a mountain emerged from the ground. It had an ancient Eight Trigrams Print on its back.

At the moment, Huang Yanchen was standing in the heart of the Eight Trigrams Print. Her back was straight and she'd become one with the Xuanwu and blue clouds.

Boom!

Vast Qi spread outward, forcing Han Qiu back.

“Senior Sister actually used an ancient technique from the Xuanwu Race. She has become a powerful figure of her own right.” Zhang Ruochen nodded softly.

Huang Yanchen had refined the saintly source of the Blue Fire Xuanwu and gained some of the Xuanwu’s knowledge. It wasn’t that strange that she could use an ancient technique from the Xuanwu Race.

In the legends, Xuanwu was one of the earliest creatures born when the world was created. It used its body to push up the sky.

Han Qiu quickly steadied herself. She jumped into the air and spread her arms open, releasing the power of darkness completely.

“Dead spirits and ghosts, listen to my summoning. Open the gate to the netherworld.”

She bit her tongue and spat out fresh blood. The blood hovered in the air and scattered gradually, forming a bloody and ghostly gate.

The blood that contained the power of darkness wove together with the rules of darkness. It formed countless shackles that pierced the space and connected with the netherworld.

Various dead souls and spirits charged out of the ghostly door. They formed a ghost army. In addition, there were a few powerful corpses that crossed the gate and entered the Blue Dragon Void World.

Roar!

A bone dragon, countless meters long, flew out. Its evil aura was equivalent to a Beast King and it flew in the air.

Han Qiu could only travel between the living world and netherworld and summon the evil spirits after completing the Form of Darkness. However, Huang Yanchen gave her too much pressure. She was forced to use her blood and forcefully open the ghost door and summon an army.

Han Qiu paled more and more. She had lost too much blood and couldn't support the ghost door anymore. Thus, she immediately retracted her arms and flew to the head of the bone dragon. With the icy cold wind, she stared at Huang Yanchen like a powerful demoness.

Without the support of the power of darkness, the ghost door closed immediately.

The true battle was only just beginning.

Chapter 1077 - Meeting

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

There was an army formed by evil spirits and corpses on the ground. They stretched into the horizon, numbering in the hundreds of thousands.

Some of them could already form solid bodies, meaning they reached the Wuchang level. Some of the corpses were Half-Saint generals and rode on beast corpses. They held eerily white bone spears and emanated icy auras.

The bone dragon under Han Qiu spiraled up and spat out blue-brown fog. Its long tail was made of connected bone. It swayed lightly and hit a thousand-meter-high pile of sand.

Thud!

The pile of sand exploded. A Beast King was probably this strong as well.

This mere branch of the ghost army could give Han Qiu enough power to counter an ancient sect in the Blue Dragon Void World.

Han Qiu's eyes were eerie as she stared at Huang Yanchen. "It's not too late for you to surrender."

Whoosh—

Huang Yanchen waved her sword, creating a white sword burst hundreds of feet long. She shattered countless evil spirits and corpses, tearing a passage open.

There was a blue saintly cloud above her head and a huge Xuanwu under her feet. They forced the dead soul army apart and went straight for Han Qiu.

“Kill her,” Han Qiu called softly.

Thousands of attacks flew over at Huang Yanchen instantly.

The Xuanwu’s outer shell swelled into a semicircle shield. It blocked the attacks from the spirits and corpses.

Zhang Ruochen stood to the side, watching carefully. This should be Han Qiu’s first time summoning the dead spirits of the netherworld, he thought. She doesn’t know how to maximize their strength yet.

If she’d combined that attack with a combination formation, even a weaker lower Saint would be hurt, let alone Senior Sister Huang.

The dead soul army that Han Qiu had summoned was indeed powerful. With their numbers, they could kill even a Beast King. However, Han Qiu had lost too much blood and was very weak.

If Huang Yanchen could break through the siege, she would be close to victory.

Kaboom!

Huang Yanchen’s Holy Qi seemed to be boundless. Each attack would shatter a portion of the corpses, scattering hundreds of spirits. With her combat ability, she was definitely above the Blue Eagle Beast King. She could combat some of the more powerful Beast Kings.

After all, Huang Yanchen had just reached the Ninth Level while the Blue Eagle Beast King was the descendant of a divine beast that had survived the last disaster.

She still had a lot of potential. Becoming the Heir had improved her greatly.

If Zhang Ruochen wasn’t seeing this with his own eyes, he wouldn’t believe that these two women were fighting so intensely. Even if he wanted to stop them, he wouldn’t be able to pull them apart.

Huang Yanchen walked forward, getting closer and closer to Han Qiu.

Han Qiu felt pressure again. She had to steer the bone dragon and join the fighting.

The bone dragon was thousands of meters long. When it was alive, it had already reached the lower Saint Realm. Even though its combat ability had been reduced in death, it was still terrifying.

Boom!

It waved a talon and broke the Xuanwu's defense. It crashed against Huang Yanchen's sword technique, sending her flying back.

Huang Yanchen used a mysterious physical technique. Transforming into a streak of light, she started attacking the bone dragon.

Thud, thud!

Blue light streaked through the air and kept crashing against the bone dragon. Each crash would form a deep sword gash on the dragon.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes narrowed. He focused his Spiritual Power with all his might because the victor would be determined next.

Huang Yanchen's physical martial technique was possibly a saint spell. It was incredibly fast. Since it was a saint spell, it also used up a lot of Holy Qi.

If the bone dragon could survive until she emptied her Holy Qi, Han Qiu would win.

If Huang Yanchen could break through the dragon's defense, then she would defeat Han Qiu.

After dozens of attacks, the bone dragon couldn't take it anymore. With a boom, the huge skeleton shattered into seven parts and fell down.

Han Qiu obviously wouldn't sit and wait. She poured her limited power of darkness into her saint sword again.

Whoosh—

A beam of sword light flashed past Han Qiu's eyes. The next moment, she felt a prick of pain coming from her neck. She was already shrouded in the threat of death. She didn't dare to move now.

The slightest movement might kill her.

"You've lost!"

That moment, Huang Yanchen was holding the saint sword indifferently to Han Qiu's neck. The tip pierced the skin and drops of blood dripped down, dyeing Han Qiu's collar red.

Han Qiu clenched her fingers, unwilling to surrender.

She could lose to anyone but Huang Yanchen. Losing to her meant that she'd lost everything.

Han Qiu stared at Huang Yanchen with troubled eyes and laughed at herself. "I know that if I fall in your hands, I will die without a doubt."

Huang Yanchen gazed at Zhang Ruochen for his opinion.

"Let her go!"

With that, Zhang Ruochen walked away with his arms behind his back, disappearing in the yellow sand and wind.

Huang Yanchen put her saint sword away and stared hard at Han Qiu. Then she caught up to Zhang Ruochen. Only Han Qiu remained there. Her pretty and spirited eyes were now dull.

Han Qiu couldn't figure out why Zhang Ruochen could accept Huang Yanchen but not her.

In the desert, Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen walked side to side. They left two long trails of footprints.

"Actually, you should've agreed to Han Qiu," Huang Yanchen said. "Her condition wasn't that bad and you wouldn't lose anything. Not only would you get a beauty, but the Sacred Sect will also have an additional member with boundless potential."

Zhang Ruochen glanced at her eyes, wanting to find out if she was speaking the truth or not.

“Why are you looking at me?” Huang Yanchen asked. “Am I wrong?”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head. “Han Qiu indeed has boundless potential and her future is difficult to predict. However, some people can only be friends and aren’t suitable for furthering the relationship. Plus, I wish for my feelings to have a natural process. I don’t like people using them as bargaining chips.”

Huang Yanchen was quite satisfied with this explanation. “Since Han Qiu has boundless potential, why didn’t we kill her today? Aren’t you afraid that her love will turn to hate and become your true enemy after letting her go today?”

Zhang Ruochen thought carefully. “Actually, Han Qiu isn’t a bad person. She has just risen through the levels too quickly and lack challenges. Her mindset can’t control the power of darkness and has already been taken over by it.

“It’s time to let her go through hardship alone. After more challenges, only then will she truly mature. In the future, when the passage to the netherworld opens up again, she’ll be truly able to stand her ground.”

Huang Yanchen blinked and smiled faintly. “You’re that sure that she will be on your side when that time comes?”

“She will definitely return as long as the power of darkness hasn’t completely corroded her heart,” Zhang Ruochen replied with confidence.

“And what if it corrodes her heart completely?”

Instead of replying, Zhang Ruochen stared into the distance. Right before them in the desert was a huge six-colored saint flower. It was countless meters long and bloomed right under the sun.

The saint flower was supposed to have seven flowers and seven petals. It was now missing one petal.

Zhang Ruochen walked over. On one petal, there were some sharp words. Zhang Ruochen, I will prove to you one day that I am ten times better than Huang Yanchen and that you made a mistake.

Seeing this, Zhang Ruochen just smiled. He put the saint flower and the Saintly Source Spring in it inside his spatial ring.

Late at night, Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen reached the bank of Nisha River. They met up with Blackie, Sikong One and Two, and the others.

Blackie looked behind Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen. “Where’s the other person?” it asked.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t explain. “She’s not coming back for now,” he replied nonchalantly.

Sun Dadi rushed over. He pushed Blackie aside and said anxiously, “There’s a disaster! The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon captured thousands of humans as captives. It claims that if you don’t kneel down and apologize within three days, it will eat 1,000 humans per day. What do we do now? What should we do?”

Zhang Ruochen was still calm. As if he didn’t hear Sun Dadi’s words, he took out the black saint flower and six-colored saint flower. He gave it to Blackie and said, “Make a Grade Seven Divine Origin Pill for me. I want to try for the Seventh Level.”

Blackie stared at the two saint flowers and large amount of Saintly Source Spring with wide eyes. Cackling, it said, “No big deal. I got it.”

Zhang Ruochen thought of something suddenly. “What exactly is the medicinal value of the saint flower?”

Blackie glanced at Zhang Ruochen. “What do you know? Medicinal value? The saint flower’s medicinal value is only its side effect. The saint flower is condensed from a shred of Origin Qi from the Blue Dragon Void World. If you refine it, you can use its Qi to get closer to the Blue Dragon Void World’s Origin Qi.”

“In other words, you’re only qualified to compete for the Origin Qi by refining a saint flower?”

“The Blue Dragon Void World is an upper Void World. The Origin Qi may have already formed a conscience and become the World Spirit.”

The so-called “World Spirit” was like the god that had created the Blue Dragon Void World or Celestial Way. The top figures here had all come to take the World Spirit.

Of course, the World Spirit would only appear at the last moment before the Blue Dragon Void World was destroyed. Right now, he couldn't sense the World Spirit's exact location even if he refined a saint flower.

Chapter 1078 - The Divine Dew

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The Spirit of an Upper Class Void World was wanted by everyone.

All felt excited about it and stated that they would take the Spirit of the Blue Dragon Void World and stop it from falling into the hands of the savage beasts no matter what.

If the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon or the Princes of the Immortal Vampires got them, their power would become even stronger and might become unrivaled. Moreover, they would probably kill all human beings to establish their own civilization.

Sun Dadi looked sad, and he said, “We have only three flowers. Doesn’t it mean that only three of us can take part in it?”

Zhang Ruochen, Sikong One, Sikong Two, and Huang Yanchen were sure to fight for the Spirit of the Void World. But only three of them could go.

Sun Dadi felt nervous about losing this rare chance.

Blackie laughed. “Each ordinary flower can only give one person the qualification. But the Original Qi contained in the Seven-colored Holy Flower is more than ten times as much as the ordinary ones. Therefore, each person could gain the qualification from refining each pedal.”

Sun Dadi was delighted. He counted the numbers at once.

There were six pedals and two other Holy Flowers, which meant that eight people could get the chance.

Eight wasn't a big number, but was big enough to build a strong team, which was much better than fighting alone.

According to Blackie's guess, many places in the Blue Dragon Void World had Saintly Source Springs.

One or two Holy Flowers could be born with a Grade Six Saintly Source Spring, which would enable one person or two people to go.

Several or a dozen Holy Flowers could be born with a Grade Seven Saintly Source Spring, which would enable several or a dozen people to go.

And dozens of Holy Flowers could be born with a Grade Eight Saintly Source Spring, which would enable dozens of people to go.

As for the Grade Nine Saintly Source Spring, it only existed where the Spirit of the World was.

It was imaginable that the fight in other places in the Blue Dragon Void World would be very intense. Countless living creatures must have been turned into corpses.

Blackie entered the Scroll World to refine the Divine Origin Pill.

Zhang Ruochen put on a thoughtful look and began to consider. How should he use the eight vacancies?

He valued the Spirit of the Blue Dragon Void World much. After all, such a chance only came once in a million years and nobody would want to miss it.

Zhang Ruochen looked at Murong Yue.

Her cultivation had reached the Third Level of Half-Saint with a fast speed. But, her state was still not enough to fight the top figures.

Murong Yue was one of the important trainees of Zhang Ruochen. He would like to give her everything she needed for practice.

Murong Yue's body was also full of potential. She might be able to practice the Extreme Yin Body. Although she was a little inferior compared with Han Qiu, she was also a talent.

And her mind was more firm than Han Qiu.

Zhang Ruochen had seen Murong Yue privately and told her the thing about Han Qiu.

Murong Yue kneeled on one knee at once. She said with coldness, "Does Your Highness want me to send people to kill her? Or do you worry that one day I will betray you like her?"

Zhang Ruochen was frank. He nodded. "I do not want you to become like her. But surely I don't have doubts on you. I'm seeing you in private, for I want to give you my focus. In the following days, you will go to the Scroll World and practice alone, trying to improve your cultivation as soon as possible. Meanwhile, you should try to practice the Extreme Yin Body."

Zhang Ruochen was unprepared for the departure of Han Qiu and he didn't know whether she would come back.

Zhang Ruochen had powerful figures on his side, but he needed a merciless one.

Now, Zhang Ruochen was in desperate need of someone who could kill people without a blink to replace Han Qiu.

Apparently, Murong Yue was suitable for this job.

Zhang Ruochen had given Murong Yue some resources before, but those were just ordinary ones and had little effect on her.

Murong Yue frowned slightly, and said, "Perhaps I will let you down, Your Highness. My body has reached the limit and couldn't make a further step. It's impossible for me to have the Extreme Yin Body."

The so-called Extreme Yin Body was to practice one's body to the limit of Yin and coldness.

Once it worked, a breath of hers would freeze mountains and rivers, and make it snow.

There were many monks who had Yin Bodies in the Kunlun's Field. But few people knew what the Extreme Yin Body was.

“With your own power, you can’t reach the Extreme Yin Body.”

Zhang Ruochen took out the Universe Spiritual Map and opened the gate to the Scroll World. He stepped inside, and said, “Follow me.”

Entering the Scroll World, Zhang Ruochen led Murong Yue to a herb garden.

The soil was blood-red and luminous, as if it had endless mystical power.

It was the Divine Blood-red Earth, which was collected by Zhang Ruochen underneath the god corpse in the netherworld.

Even weeds would turn into divine herbs growing from the Divine Blood-red Earth.

Now, all kinds of divine herbs grew in the Divine Blood Herb Garden, amounting to thousands of them. They gave out purple, green, red and white brilliance.

The Qi of the divine medicine condensed into a long bridge of smoke. Zhang Ruochen and Murong Yue went inside and smelled the strong aroma, which made them feel like they were flying up to heaven.

At the center of the herb garden, there was a vine that was thousands of meters tall. It went all the way up to the sky, going through the clouds.

The diameter of its root was more than 6 meters, which could be measured by ten people joining hands.

“This is the legendary divine herb, Seven Star Sacred Tuber.”

Murong Yue opened her eyes widely, staring at this old vine with shock.

She heard that Zhang Ruochen had found a divine herb in the netherworld before, but she hadn’t seen it as the herb garden had been regarded as a forbidden place where nobody could approach.

It wasn’t easy to find a saint herb in the Kunlun’s Field.

Not to mention a divine herb.

“Yes, this is the Seven Star Sacred Tuber.”

Zhang Ruochen looked up, staring at the five leaves on the vine.

There were seven leaves on the Seven Star Sacred Tuber, Blue Dragon, White Tiger, Phoenix, Xuanwu, Kirin, Sun, and Moon, and each had its own function.

The Phoenix Leaf had been given to Sword Saint Xuanji as it could bring back lives.

The Kirin Leaf had a special power called the “Luck.” Zhang Ruochen had picked it up and given it to his student, Han Xue.

At last, Zhang Ruochen looked at the seventh leaf.

The leaf was like a giant crescent, which was hanging in the sky and giving out the extremely cold Qi.

“The sun is Yang, the moon is Yin. If this divine herb couldn’t help you get the Extreme Yin Body, then I would have no other means.”

Zhang Ruochen leaped in the sky and flew to the moon-shaped leaf. Soon, he landed on it.

The leaf was white like jade, giving out terrible Qi of coldness, which almost froze Zhang Ruochen.

Naturally, Zhang Ruochen didn’t want to pick it up. He just wanted to collect the Divine Dew of the Moon Essence.

The Divine Dew had some of the medical power of the divine herb, which was perfect for Murong Yue.

Zoom—

Zhang Ruochen landed on the ground, and passed the full cup of dew to Murong Yue. He said, “You can’t refine the leaf of the divine herb with your current cultivation. Taking in the dew on it should help you succeed in practicing the Extreme Yin Body.”

Murong Yue accepted the divine dew and left the herb garden at once to practice.

Zhang Ruochen collected other four kinds of divine dew from the other four herb leaves.

The Blue Dragon Divine Dew could improve spiritual power, which was a great treasure for Monks of Spiritual Power.

The White Tiger Divine Dew could build up one's body, which could help monks sanctify their bodies.

The Xuanwu Divine Dew could increase monks' lives.

As for the Sun Divine Dew, Zhang Ruochen didn't get its function yet.

The Divine Dew of Sun Essence was quite the opposite of the Divine Dew of the Moon Essence. Each drop was boiling with violent power.

Ordinary monks might die from swallowing a drop of it.

“Maybe, I can use it to improve my Masculine Qi to practice the Tenth Palm of the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm.”

Once it worked, the grade of the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm would enter the level of saint spells. And its power would surpass ordinary saint spells.

In the past, the Tenth Palm of the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm played by Wan Zhaoyi had defeated both Chen Wutian and Saint Qingxiao.

The power of it was overbearing.

The attack of the Tenth Palm might be 40 times greater than before.

“The Tenth Palm of the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm is called Dragon Swims in the Heavens. Once achieved, the masculine Qi inside the body would be thousands of times more than ordinary people. Demonic spirits under the level of Wuchang would evaporate near my body.”

The stronger the Masculine Qi of the monk, the greater the suppression on dead spirits, evil spirits, and demonic spirits would be.

Zhang Ruochen came to the foot of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree. He took out the Divine Dew of Sun Essence

and swallowed one drop.

Boom!

The Divine Dew of Sun Essence exploded inside his body like a small sun, releasing burning heat and turning Zhang Ruochen's body red-golden immediately.

Zhang Ruochen felt endless power and stood up to practice palm plays. Each of his palms had his full strength.

The power of the palm play was extremely strong and masculine, shaking the Spiritual Qi.

Once the power of the Divine Dew of Sun Essence died out, Zhang Ruochen took in another drop of it and went on practicing his palm play.

After a half-month, Zhang Ruochen had swallowed uncountable Divine Dewes of Sun Essence and finally practiced the Tenth Palm of the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm to its utmost.

Deafening roars of dragons sounded in the Scroll World all day. A red handprint of fire was seen falling from the sky to have leveled dozens of mountains.

“The leader of the Sacred Sect has practiced a special play, improving his strength to a new level.”

All members of the Sacred Sect were shocked by the news. They rushed out from their caves and kneeled on the ground to kowtow to where the dragon roars sounded.

Chapter 1079 - Like Hell

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“After I’ve practiced the Tenth Palm, Dragon Swims in the Heavens, to its utmost, I can increase the attack to 42 times. If I could enter the next level, the power might be even stronger.”

Zhang Ruochen looked at his palm contentedly.

Refining the Divine Dew of Sun Essence didn’t elevate Zhang Ruochen to the next state, but helped him to crack the 36 apertures in his waist and organs unexpectedly.

Zhang Ruochen planned to exercise the 36 apertures in his legs to speed up his practice.

But now, he could exercise the 36 apertures in the waist and organs first. In this way, his body would become even stronger.

Blackie had refined the Seventh Class Divine Origin Pills and given one pill to Zhang Ruochen in person.

And it took some of the Divine Dew away, claiming to use it and the Holy Flowers to refine a special kind of pill.

“Should I refine my body now, or improve my state?”

It took a great amount of time to sanctify 36 apertures.

At last, Zhang Ruochen chose to take the Seventh Class Divine Origin Pills in. Once he could crack his state, his power would increase greatly. And he could spend less time doing it.

It went well. Zhang Ruochen spent a few days to reach the Seventh Level Half-Saint.

Zhang Ruochen stood up. The skin of his face, neck and both hands all gave out seven-colored brilliance. Strong strands of

Holy Qi flowed in his pores.

“Is my current cultivation stronger than those on the Half-Saint Rank?”

Zhang Ruochen waved his arm slightly. Crack was heard in the air. Fire spread up like snakes.

He concentrated on practicing his palm plays and comprehending the newly-reached strong state, standing at the foot of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree.

Things were different in the Yingsha City.

It had been three days. Gu Linfeng didn't show up as they all expected. Thousands of human monks still kneeled outside the city.

Because of the strong wind, half of their bodies were covered by the yellow sand.

“Gu Linfeng won't show up. They are dead,” a young monk sighed.

Thousands of humans were going to be eaten by savage beasts, but they couldn't save them. The thought of it was heartbreaking.

A beast king took its human shape, standing outside the city.

Its real body was a red-eyed river deer. After it turned into the human figure, it looked contemptible and unsightly. It was short. And long hair grew on its head and chest.

River Deer Beast King sneered. “The so-called Son of Deity of the Blood God Sect is a coward who dares to say big words but dares not to do it. Lord Demonic Dragon only asked him to kneel and admit his fault, and didn't ask for his life. But he dares not to come. What a coward!”

Other beast kings all turned into human shapes and laughed loudly.

A female beast king in black clothing sighed. “It's reasonable that the Son of Deity dares not to come. But among tens of thousands of human monks inside the Yingsha City, no one came out. What does it mean?”

“The human race is petty and low. They are indifferent and selfish. They bully the weak and fear the strong. They have no balls and deserve to be killed,” said another beast king.

It got closer to noon.

The sun in the sky was heating the ground like an oven.

Some of the beast kings scolded Gu Linfeng, some degraded human monks with irony.

Some human monks couldn't bear such humiliation and rushed out of the Yingsha City, wanting to fight the savage beasts outside the city.

But the minute they stepped out of the gate, they were vanquished and left in blood.

Their bodies were dragged away and thrown into the beast crowds. Soon, they were eaten up.

Outside the Yingsha City, there were more than 20 beast kings. Each was very powerful. Fighting them would mean suicide.

The morale of the monks inside the city was low. Some strong monks bore the shame as they didn't want to die in vain.

Other monks were beaten, feeling extremely scared for the savage beasts.

If there were any Void World Ships, they would already get on board to go back to the Kunlun's Field. They would hide in the First Central Empire and never want to fight the savage beasts again.

Those beast kings intended to provoke those human monks, destroying their willpower.

Ahhh!

The real body of the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon came and flew above the clouds. Its giant body released extremely terrible Qi. With just a dragon roar, some human monks in the city were scared enough to shudder.

Compared with three days ago, the Qi of it became much stronger. Apparently, its cultivation had improved.

The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon said in a low voice, “Time’s up. The Son of Deity of the Blood God Sect didn’t come and kneel before me. Now you can select 1000 human monks and eat them.”

Cheers were heard among the savage beasts.

And the cries and begs of human monks sounded as well.

“Please leave me alone. I can be your slave from now on. I can do everything you want me to do...”

“I don’t wanna die. Help me!”

...

After being humiliated, beat and scolded by the savage beasts for three days, some of the human monks had been pushed to the edge of breakdown.

At this moment, they finally threw their dignity away, kneeled on the ground and begged those savage beasts in order to buy a chance to survive.

Of course, some determined monks were neither haughty nor humble, treating death with ease and appearing to be calm.

The weaker the human monks looked, the sooner they were picked by the savage beasts.

They didn’t eat them immediately, but let them kneel and beg and cry deliberately, laughing at them with contempt.

A fluffy hand of River Deer Beast King patted on the head of a young monk. It looked to Yingsha City, and laughed. “Haha! Humans inside the city, look at this! Your man kneels on the ground, begging me to take him as a slave. Should I take him?”

Monks in the Yinsha City were furious.

Boom.

A white saint sword rushed out from the gate, and hit River Deer Beast King like a shooting light.

River Deer Beast King changed his face and dodged immediately.

Puff.

But the sword was still quick enough to have gone through his right shoulder and wounded it badly.

One of the Nine Heirs, Beigong Lan dashed out from the Yingsha City. She took the saint word and chopped River Deer Beast King again. With formidable strength, she chopped its body in two.

Beigong Lan had met great opportunities recently. Her cultivation climbed up, and she now had the power to chop the beast kings.

The death of a beast king enraged all savage beasts.

Five beast kings attacked Beigong Lan together, wanting to kill her.

Killing an Heir was their true intention.

Beigong Lan was severely hurt in just a short time. Her green cloth was soaked in blood. Each step she made would leave a bloody footstep on the ground.

At last, Chi Wansui came out from the Yingsha City to rescue her.

But Chi Wansui was hit by the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, and was hurt more severely than Beigong Lan. He kept spitting blood after they returned to the Yingsha City.

Killing a beast king didn't cheer humans up.

On the contrary, the two Heirs being severely wounded had thrown all human monks into desperation.

Outside the city, endless screams were heard. All 1000 human monks were eaten alive. The whole ground had become red.

Some of the savage beasts licked the blood on the ground.

The scene was more horrible than hell.

Sun Dadi stood afar, watching the 1000 human monks being eaten by savage beasts like animals, and he was enraged enough to tremble.

He wanted to kill them, but he was stopped by Huang Yanchen.

“Why do you stop me?” Sun Dadi shouted with bloodshot eyes.

“The two Heirs almost died. You would also die in vain if you rushed there,” Huang Yanchen said peacefully without a blink.

“How can you be so indifferent? I will go to my lord. He surely has a way.”

Sun Dadi pinched his hands, and all veins on his body bulged. He held his anger and rushed out.

He connected to Blackie and entered the Scroll World. He found Zhang Ruochen practicing palm play under the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree.

After Sun Dadi told the story, Zhang Ruochen appeared to be calm like Huang Yanchen. He nodded, and said, “Is that all?”

Sun Dadi said, “Don’t you want to rescue them? We are all human monks and they are bullied like that. How can you stand it?”

Zhang Ruochen stared at Sun Dadi’s eyes and exhaled a long breath. He said, “Rescue them? How can I rescue them? You want me to kneel in front of the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon and say that I was wrong. Do think that in this way, it would let the human monks go? It’s not that I don’t want to rescue them, but I can’t.”

Sun Dadi gave it a careful thought and bit his teeth. “Let’s fight them. Killing one would be a tie. Killing two would be our win.”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head, and said, “Since the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon dares to set it up, it has prepared well. Anyone who came to it would die. It was mere luck that Beigong Lan and Chi Wansui could survive from it.”

“What should we do then? Watch them being eaten alive by those savage beasts? I can’t do it. If you won’t go, I’ll go myself. I deserve to be killed in the battlefield.”

Determination appeared in Sun Dadi's eyes. He grasped his iron stick and turned around to leave the Scroll World.

Bang!

Zhang Ruochen sighed and hit the top of his head across the space with a palm. The power gushed out and shook him. He fainted and fell on the ground.

Letting him leave would be to let him die.

Meanwhile, Blackie sent a message to Zhang Ruochen. "The pretty princess of the Wan Family comes to visit you again. Do you want to see her?"

Zhang Ruochen knew why Wan Huayu wanted to see him. He thought about it and finally took Sun Dadi, who had passed out, and walked out of the Scroll World to meet her.

Chapter 1080 - Before the War

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Wan Huayu had come together with Shangguan Xianyna, Cai Jinglun and Shangguan Yu. Each of them stood for a heritage of the Middle Ages, and was an influential figure in the Kunlun's Field.

They looked awful. Apparently, they had been to the Yingsha City in the afternoon and had seen savage beasts eating people.

They would never forget the scene.

The positions of humans and savage beasts had shifted. Humans became the food of savage beasts. None of the human monks could accept it.

Wan Huayu jumped right to her intention that she wanted him to work with them and rescue the rest human monks.

Zhang Ruochen stood across from the four with hands folded behind him. He was straightforward. And he said lightly, "Not to mention the gap of the power between savage beasts and human race, suppose we have the same power...why do you think that I will go to rescue the human monks?"

Wan Huayu shrank her eyes, and gave out her will power. "We are all human monks and have to unite to fight the savage beasts. If we only think about our own, the human race would be scattered like sand and go to extinction."

Zhang Ruochen wasn't moved by it and appeared to be indifferent.

Shangguan Xianyan stood out. She didn't look flirtatious, but somewhat gloomy. "Son of Deity, savage beasts led by the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon are devouring us, treating us like food and toys."

"Now is the time that all human monks, whether in right ways or in evil ways, should work together to fight them. If we could rescue some human monks, it would be great. Even if we couldn't, we have to let them pay dearly."

Zhang Ruochen smiled and stared at Shangguan Xianyan opposite to him. "I remember that you are a woman of wisdom, not courage. Who made you believe that you can make dozens of savage beasts pay dearly? Since you have become the leader of the Blood God Sect, you should take the responsibility of keeping all students of the Blood God Sect alive, not sending them to death."

Zhang Ruochen didn't think their idea would work from the beginning to the end.

Now the number of savage beast clans outside the Yingsha City had come to about 30. Among them, there were more than 20 powerful beast kings.

Each clan had many savage beasts at the state of Half-Saint.

The total sum of the savage beasts was more than ten times the number of the human monks in the Yingsha City.

What's the difference between fighting them and suicide?

Cai Jinglun glared at Zhang Ruochen and snorted. He said to Shangguan Xianyan and Wan Huayu, "Those beast kings were right. He is a coward. Why did you think that he would serve his part?"

Zhang Ruochen remained calm. His eyes just stared at the blowing sand afar, as if he didn't hear Cai Jinglun's satire or he was waiting for something.

Both Wan Huayu and Shangguan Xianyan sighed and shook their heads. They felt disappointed, said no more words, and were the first to leave.

Among the four, Shangguan Yi, the top figure of the Shangguan Family, didn't say many words.

When he was going to leave, he said to Zhang Ruochen, "To fight the savage beasts, Evil Ways, Demonic Ways and monks of the imperial court are all willing to work together. But you are scared of death and challenge. A person like you can't make any achievement."

Then Shangguan Yi left as well.

Monks who followed Zhang Ruochen fell into silence.

They stared at Zhang Ruochen from time to time with expectation.

They knew that Zhang Ruochen wasn't an indifferent person. He must have been considering a perfect way, not really feeling scared to fight the savage beasts.

Sun Dadi had woken up and sat on the floor silently.

All of a sudden, he moved his neck and grasped his iron stick. He held it on his shoulder and walked to Wan Huayu and Cai Jinglun.

"Where are you going?" asked Zhang Ruochen.

Sun Dadi didn't turn his face, and said coldly, "One has to follow those who have the same path. I don't want to follow a coward. I believe, there must be some human heroes unafraid of death, and I will follow them."

Zhang Ruochen said, "You can hardly survive from their fight."

"So what? Were it not for the human saints and talents who had fought the savage beasts and paid the price of their lives and blood in the past, how could human beings win a place of survival? Even if I had to die, I have to make some scores first." Sun Dadi was very determined.

Zhang Ruochen still looked at the sand far away. Suddenly, his ears moved and heard the news passed from thousands of kilometers away.

He rounded his lips to put on a smile, and said, “Stay! Fighting along with them won’t save many people, and may cause more deaths. There’s another way to rescue them.”

Sun Dadi stopped at once and turned around to look at Zhang Ruochen. He was confused. “Do you mean it?”

Other human monks all stood up and looked at Zhang Ruochen with eagerness.

Blackie stood beside Zhang Ruochen and smirked, “Do you believe that Zhang Ruochen never thought about saving people? Zhang Ruochen had talked with me in the Scroll World. At last, we worked something out.”

“What is it?” asked Sun Dadi.

Blackie said with a steady speed, “If we fought them face to face, we would surely die. So, they can only use some strategies.”

Sun Dadi was in a hurry, and asked again, “Strategies? What about them?”

Blackie reached out a claw to stop Sun Dadi from being so anxious, and said, “I have to ask you something first. How have the savage beasts united together to deal with humans? They used to be quite scattered.”

Sun Dadi scratched his head. Light flashed in his eyes and said, “Because of the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon. It used its strong power to suppress all beast kings.”

“That’s right.”

Blackie nodded, and said, “Therefore, Zhang Ruochen thought that as long as we could find the weakness of it, we could rescue the human monks.”

“Two Heirs together were just equal to the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon. Such a terrible creature has weakness?” asked Sun Dadi.

“Every creature has its weakness.”

Blackie laughed and said, “The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon had a close connection with Princess White Li of the

Nine Li Cats. It is said that the Princess likes to condense into human shape and have unparalleled beauty. Since the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon has captured thousands of human monks, why don't we capture Princess White Li?"

Sun Dadi was delighted. He gave it a careful thought and clapped his hands. He shouted, "Haha! You are amazing to have thought about this. Next, I have to see whether the lives of thousands of human monks mean much or the life of Princess White Li in the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon's eyes."

Blackie rolled its eyes and said, "Do you think that Princess White Li is easy to capture? It is also a Taigu that remains with great power and ranks No.78 on the Half-Saint Rank. Do you think that you can resist the attack of its single finger with your cultivation?"

Sun Dadi was shocked and shook his head.

Blackie added, "Besides, the White Li Clan has a special technique called Near-Far Pace. Once the pace is used, it could get to thousands of kilometers away with just one step. Even saints couldn't stop it. It isn't easy to capture at all."

Blackie had a close connection with the Nine Li Cats, so it knew them well.

Sun Dadi moved his eyes while thinking, and laughed. "If other monks couldn't stop it, my lord surely can! My lord is the Time and Space Descendant. Fast as Princess White Li is, it can't escape from my lord's control."

Blackie laughed, and said, "Didn't you just say that one has to follow those who have the same path? Why are you calling him 'my lord' again?"

The red face of Sun Dadi turned redder.

He held his fists and made a bow. "My lord, I have misunderstood you. Please forgive me."

"You are not wrong. You don't have to ask for my forgiveness."

Zhang Ruochen added, “The reason why I didn’t tell you before is that I wasn’t sure if I could trace Princess White Li. If I can’t find it, there’s nothing we could do about it.”

“Have you traced her now?” asked Sun Dadi.

Zhang Ruochen nodded. “Just now, Sikong One and Sikong Two have passed words back that they’ve found the trace of Princess White Li and they are narrowing down the location.”

Until now, Sun Dadi had not realized that Sikong One and Sikong Two, these two bold monks, had gone. They had gone to find Princess White Li.

Now Sun Dadi almost prostrated himself before Zhang Ruochen in admiration. He was cautious, calm and not indifferent. He just had a different way of thinking and solving problems.

Such a figure deserved his loyalty.

“My lord, let me follow you to capture Princess White Li. More people, more power,” said, Sun Dadi.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and took out a portion of Divine Dew White Tiger. He gave it to Sun Dadi and patted his shoulder. He said, “You have to refine this quickly. It should help you to pass the First Trial of the Pre-Saint.”

Sun Dadi’s current cultivation was a little weaker than that of a beast king.

Once it passed the First Trial of the Pre-Saint, it should have the power to fight beast kings right away.

Zhang Ruochen went to where Sikong One and Sikong Two passed their messages, taking Blackie with him. He was prepared to use their power, three people and a beast, to capture Princess White Li.

Wan Huayu and others also gathered an army of human monks outside the city. They started to make plans to work with monks inside the city to strike the beast clans.

The night would surely be filled with blood.

Chapter 1081 - Princess White Li

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Ingmar Desert was vast and empty. Among the yellow sand and Gobi, only some lively oases could be seen.

Generally speaking, the areas of those oases might tend to have heavenly treasures.

Now there was an oasis before Zhang Ruochen.

A curved river flowed in its center. Under the setting sun, the river glittered like golden dragon scales.

At the center of the oasis, there was a 300-meter-tall saint tree. Its black trunk and white leaves made a sharp contrast.

The tree was so tall that the branches and leaves of it had covered most of the oasis. At night, sparkles would fall from the white leaves, making the oasis a wonderland.

The saint tree only grew recently after it took the Essence of the Heaven and the Earth of the Blue Dragon Void World.

A young girl in white stood under the saint tree. Her body was covered by the rain of sparkles like a Fairy Lingbo who didn't belong to the human world.

She had long black hair and a well-shaped figure, which made strikingly beautiful curves. The skin outside her cloth gave light fluorescence like a fairy.

Under her cute butt, there was a white tail falling to the ground, and it would move from time to time.

“Although the saint tree only lives for half a month, it can compare with a saintly herb which has lived for 30,000 years. It should be the spiritual root of the area in the surrounding thousands of kilometers.”

Her eyelashes were long and extremely pretty. Vivid light showed in her eyes. After she observed the saint tree, she put on a smile that could attract all human beings.

An old man and an old woman both in white stood behind her to her right side and left side.

The old man looked outside the oasis and walked to her, cupping his hands. “Princess, there is the Qi of human.”

Princess White Li pressed her little red lips slightly, and said carelessly while observing the saint tree. “Human? Hasn’t the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon surrounded them in the Yingsha City?”

“Maybe some have escaped from it.”

“They could get out, which means that they have some power. I have no interest in human monks. If they are clever enough to make their way around, I will let them go. But, if they dared to intrude upon the oasis or scheme something, you wouldn’t have to be polite with them.”

Princess White Li didn’t mind those humans outside the oasis, and reached out a white and flawless hand to touch the dark trunk gently.

Zoom!

A green vine stood out from her sleeves.

The green vine was of spirit. Its root stung into the trunk of the saint tree like needles, absorbing its Qi of life.

The light given by the saint tree dimmed.

But the green vine became thicker and longer, winding and climbing up the trunk, rustling.

At the top of a dune outside the oasis.

Zhang Ruochen, Blackie, Sikong One and Sikong Two stood together, watching Princess White Li under the Black-White

Saint Tree.

Sikong One touched his round head, and asked with wonder, “What’s she doing?”

Zhang Ruochen stared at the green vine winding on the saint tree. Surprise flashed in his eyes. He said, “Is that a Saint Eating Flower?”

“Yes, it is.”

Blackie lay face down on Zhang Ruochen’s shoulder, looking a little alarmed.

“Saint Eating Flower? It’s just a green vine. Where’s the flower?” Sikong One was more puzzled.

Zhang Ruochen said, “When it blossomed, it had the power to devour saints. By then we shouldn’t attack, but run right away.”

Blackie said, “Saint Eating Flower has a powerful attack. It could take in the saint power of other saint creatures to improve itself. As far as I know, the last Saint Eating Flower died in the Middle Ages. Where did Princess White Li find this seedling?”

The Saint Eating Flower of Princess White Li was truly just a seedling. It was absorbing the saint power of the saint tree, wanting to grow up quickly to blossom. Then its flower could devour saints.

According to Blackie, there was a Saint Eating Flower in the Middle Ages rooting on many saint corpses. It almost made it to become a deity.

Alas, it failed to pass the trial and was turned into ash.

It was the last Saint Eating Flower in the Kunlun’s Field. After that, they died out.

Blackie guessed that the seedling of Princess White Li’s Saint Eating Flower might have been born in the ash of the divine trial. It inherited part of the old Saint Eating Flower’s memory. Once it blossomed, it would become a terribly harmful plant.

Like the Sky-connecting Divine Wood, even if it was cut down, new seedlings could grow from its root.

“Look, there is a flower bud on the tip of the green vine,” Sikong One cried.

Zhang Ruochen looked to it and saw that the vine on the saint tree had become as thick as an arm. At its tip, among the green leaves, white light was given out, and a flower bud about the size of a fist was produced.

“We can’t wait and must act now.”

Zhang Ruochen felt not good and used his moves to dash into the oasis. He ran to the saint tree.

Blackie followed him and said, “Zhang Ruochen, don’t attack now. Let me talk with them. We are all cats and have many common words. Maybe we can solve it in peace.”

“You can negotiate this?”

Zhang Ruochen found it hard to believe Blackie, and he didn’t want to waste his time.

“I am quite influential and respectable among cats like Thousand-bone Empress among human beings. Once I show them my identity, they will surrender,” Blackie said confidently, patting its chest.

“Senior Uncle, let it try, then we’ll act.”

Sikong One was confident in Blackie as well.

As the three people and one cat intruded upon the oasis, the old man in white and old woman in white stopped them immediately.

The old man stepped his right foot forward, pressing down the earth. He scolded, “Retreat, or you will die pathetically here.”

His cultivation was strong as he had passed two Trials of Pre-Saint. His Qi was even stronger than that of Blue Eagle Beast King.

Blackie walked to him and laughed. “Kid, we are all members of the Nine Li Cats. Let’s talk, not fight.”

The old man stared at Blackie. Coldness was seen in his eyes. “How dare you call me a kid?”

Blackie stood up like a person with both claws in front of his chest. He said haughtily, “In the Middle Ages, the Saint Mother of the White Li Cats wanted to become a student of mine, but I didn’t consent to it. Aren’t you descendants of the Saint Mother White Li? What should I call you if not ‘kid?’”

“How dare you to insult the Saint Mother? Even if you are a cat, I have to teach you a good lesson today.”

The old man bent his fingers into sharp white claws. With a slight wave of his arms, a low boom was heard.

“I’m telling you the truth. Why don’t you believe me?”

Blackie was caught in the middle, for it didn’t want to fight its own kind.

Apparently, the so-called negotiation had failed.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t want to waste time. He pushed Blackie aside and strode to the front. He played a palm.

Right after it, a dozens of meters long blood red dragon shadow flew out from his palm to attack the old man.

“It’s powerful.”

The old man changed his face a bit, and transferred all his Holy Qi to wield the claw print and clash with the shadow of the blood dragon.

Boom.

The old man flew back for more than 100 meters til he could stop himself. Blood came out from the corner of his mouth, showing that he was wounded.

The ground between him and Zhang Ruochen was cracked. All plants were destroyed and turned into burnt soil.

Under the saint tree.

Princess White Li was surprised. She turned around and looked at the young human. She said to herself. How could he be so powerful?

Princess White Li was clear about the old man's strength, which was stronger than ordinary beast kings.

And now he'd been wounded by one palm of a young human, which meant that the young man's power was even greater.

Zoom—

Princess White Li turned into a shooting light. Her bare feet stepped on the white current to fly to the old man and the old woman.

“Your Highness, the human is very powerful. He should have reached the peak of the Second Trial of Pre-Saint.”

The old man looked grave and treated Zhang Ruochen as a great enemy.

The pupils of Princess White Li were like two round moons, giving out chaotic power. She looked at Zhang Ruochen and saw his true state.

Even she was a little surprised and unconvinced. She asked, “You are a Seventh Level Half-Saint?”

The old man was astonished and looked at Zhang Ruochen again. He found it hard to believe that he was just a Seventh Level Half-Saint.

His power was almost at the peak of a Second Trial Pre-saint, and maybe had reached the level of a Third Trial Pre-saint.

If he was truly a Seventh Level Half-Saint, it was totally weird.

Zhang Ruochen looked to the Saint Eating Flower and saw that the flower bud grew bigger, so he gave an order immediately, “Let's do it and end it soon.”

Both Sikong One and Sikong Two transferred their Buddha Qi inside their bodies, condensing into a shadow of a black dragon and a shadow of a white tiger.

Ahhhh!

Hoooo!

Roars of dragons and tigers were heard in the oasis immediately.

Princess White Li glanced at Sikong One and Sikong Two. She could feel the strong energy wave coming from them.

She put on a serious face, and said, "Wait. What are you here for? Are you fighting for the saint tree? Actually, we don't have to fight. I can give it to you."

In Princess White Li's opinion, most saint power of the saint tree had been taken in by the Saint Eating Flower, so it didn't matter if she gave it to them.

"We are not interested in the saint tree, but you. We want to capture you and let you bore kitties for me." Blackie laughed.

Princess White Li looked at Blackie and felt speechless.

She finally realized that the people before them were coming after her.

Chapter 1082 - The Fleet Formation

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

When Zhang Ruochen and the rest intruded upon the oasis and were going to capture Princess White Li, the war between savage beasts and the human race outside Yingsha City started.

This time it was the human race who had started it.

The things done by the savage beasts were bad enough to enrage gods and humans. They not only played, humiliated, beat and degraded human monks, but also treated the elites as food and ate them alive.

They used a more than 3-meter-long iron sting to penetrate a young woman alive, then set her on the fire.

While she was baking, the cries and screams of the young woman could be heard.

After they finished baking her, they divided her to eat.

They threw living people into iron pots, steaming, boiling and frying them, then they would eat them slowly.

When had human monks seen such a terrible scene before in the First Central Empire?

Some human elites realized that it was a serious problem.

If human monks couldn't get stronger, the positions between the prey and the hunter would exchange.

Those humans who didn't want to be the food of savage beasts should stand out and fight them to cheer the humans up.

Since they were born as humans, they wouldn't have to fear any challenges.

The battle tonight was led by two Heirs, Chi Wansui and Beigong Lan. Meanwhile, the Ministry of War, Martial Market Bank, Black Market Excellence Hall, and some ancient sects and households all joined them.

They planned to make the savage beasts pay hard and display the human race's power, even if they couldn't save those captured human monks.

Chi Wansui had taken in the Withered Pill and recovered his wounds. He reached his prime time again.

He stood at the top of the wall of the Yingsha City. He was tall and in golden armor. Might came out from his whole body. And he stared at the savage beasts hundreds of kilometers away.

Beigong Lan stood to the right of Chi Wansui. She was in plain green clothes. Her clear eyes stared at the dragon shadow in the clouds, and she said, "Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon's cultivation has improved greatly, and should have reached the peak of the Ninth Level Half-Saint. With its current cultivation, isn't it at the top of the Half-Saint Rank?"

"Maybe not."

Chi Wansui's eyes gushed out dazzling golden lights, and said, "It has improved, but the others on the Half-Saint Rank have made progress as well. The current powers of you and I have also become stronger than when we first entered the Blue Dragon Void World."

Chi Wansui raised his head to look at the moon in the sky. He shrank his eyes and said loudly, "Activate the Half-Saint Ships."

A rumbling noise was sounded in the central area of Yingsha City.

Right after it, hundreds of ships rose up and flew to the savage beasts through the light lamp of the City Defense Battle Formation. They left dark shadows on the ground and blocked the light of the moon and stars.

It was the Forbidden weapon made by the Ministry of Divinity, called the “Half-Saint Ships.”

Each ship cost dearly and was as giant as a mountain. It could burst out the attack at the state of Half-Saint.

The Fleet Formation made of hundreds of Half-Saint Ships had the power to vanquish saint creatures.

Since they were forbidden weapons, they couldn't be used randomly.

But Chi Wansui had a special identity, as he was the best talent of the royal families to have brought 400 Half-Saint Ships from the base of Ministry of War in the Chaotic World Mountain to the base of Mingsha City.

And only because Chi Wansui had the forbidden weapons of the Ministry of War, he had the power to fight savage beasts.

Chi Wansui stood on a deck of the main fleet. He looked grave and gave an order, “Attack!”

Noise was heard inside the 400 Half-Saint Ships and power condensed around the ships to spread energy ripples.

Zoom—

400 white light columns flew out from the fleets and fell on the ground to land in the camp of the savage beasts.

Boom.

The earth quaked violently. Black pits appeared densely on the ground. Thousands of savage beasts were struck by the power and turned into corpses.

On the ground, the screams of savage beasts sounded.

Meanwhile, lots of human monks followed the Half-Saint Ships to dash into the battlefield and collect the savage beasts' lives.

“Kill!”

“The final fight is today. We have to make it clear to those savage beasts who the real owners are!”

...

With 400 Half-Saint Ships in front of them, crowds of human monks followed them closely and killed the savage beasts fiercely.

The ground was covered with savage beasts' corpses.

A 100-meter-long Ghost-Eye Eagle flew to them. Its big eyes were like lanterns and gave out strong Qi of beast kings. It shouted, "You human monks dare to go out of Yingsha City, we won't let you return today."

"Since you want death, I will kill you first."

Chi Wansui pointed at Ghost-Eye Eagle King.

The 400 Half-Saint Ships formed a Fleet Formation. Above the ships, a one-meter-thick white light column flew out.

Looking up from the ground, the 400 light columns attacked the Ghost-Eye Eagle King simultaneously like 400 white rays.

Bang!

The body of Ghost Eye Eagle King exploded into blood mist.

Blood rain fell from the sky, rustling.

To be called forbidden weapons, the Half-Saint Ships surely had great power. They could kill beast kings with one shot.

The death of a beast king cheered human monks up. They sang happily and advanced, intending to split the beasts.

Ahhh!

An angry roar was sounded from the bottom of the ground, making a strong wind of blood.

Under the yellow sand, Golden Armor Scorpion King crawled out slowly. It raised its sharp pliers, which gave out golden fire, hitting the Half-Saint Ships flying in the lower sky.

In the fleet formation, 400 light columns flew out to clash with the Golden Armor Scorpion King's attack.

The Golden Armor Scorpion King made a whine and was thrown back.

A hole appeared in its back, from which blood kept gushing out like a spring.

“Even Taigu Remains couldn’t resist the attack of the Fleet Formation.”

“Great! Now how can those beast kings stay proud?”

Human monks feared the beast kings the most. And the two beast kings had been killed and wounded after they just showed up.

Now what should they fear?

The 400 Half-Saint Ships began to condense power, preparing to suppress the Golden Armor Scorpion King and to uplift the morale of the humans.

Zoom!

The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon turned into a person in black. It fell down from the sky and landed on the head of the Golden Armor Scorpion King.

The black demonic fog condensed into hundreds of dragon shadows and flew around him.

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon looked to Chi Wansui, who was on the deck of the main ship, and laughed like a demon. “Empress Chi Yao is really one of the most powerful living creatures born in the Kunlun’s Field after the Middle Ages to have built such powerful battle weapons.”

“But, as the most talented human of the royal family, it’s disappointing that you only dare to fight savage beasts with the help of the treasures built by the Empress. After the nine Emperors and the Empress, does the human race have no heir?”

Chi Wansui looked calm and didn’t get angry because of the satire of the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon. He said, “Arranging battle formations and using battle ships or saintly weapons is part of one’s strength, isn’t it?”

“You are absolutely right.”

The Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon nodded and added, “But, strong as the Fleet Formation made up of 400 Half-Saint Ships is, I don’t care about it.”

Human monks were shocked and thought that the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon was too arrogant.

Everybody had seen the burst power of the Fleet Formation. Even the Golden Armor Scorpion King was severely wounded by it.

Even the lower saints wouldn't dare to stand against it.

Under saints, could any living creature resist it?

“Ok, let's see if you can take the attack of the Fleet Formation,” Chi Wansui said in a low voice.

Above the 400 Half-Saint Ships, round formation patterns were condensed. They revolved quickly to push their power to the peak.

Before the attack wave could get out, a strong strand of Qi, which pressed souls, was given out to land on human monks and savage beasts.

The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon laughed, and reached out one hand to touch his navel.

Zoom!

Rings of black brilliance came out from his navel.

He took a dragon bone out from his body.

The dragon bone had 782 parts, and ancient black patterns appeared on the surface of it.

When the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon pulled the dragon bone out, furious dragon roars were sounded within the area of thousands of kilometers.

720 dragon shadows flew out from the clouds and the earth and gathered around the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon.

The dragon bone grew larger and larger, like a mountain connecting the ground and the sky.

It was imaginable that the dragon bone was not one of the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon's own, but was the main bone left by a Supreme Saint of Dragons, which could be called a dragon meridian.

The Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon waved the dragon bone and attacked the Fleet Formation made up of 400 Half-Saint Ships.

The power that burst out from the dragon bone broke the space in the Blue Dragon Void World into pieces. Dozens of spatial cracks appeared.

The fleet formation made up of the 400 Half-Saint Ships shot an attack wave at the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon.

Boom.

The dragon bone landed on the Fleet Defense Battle Formation of the Fleet Formation and shook it violently.

But the attack of the 400 Half-Saint Ships missed the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon.

The weakness of the Fleet Formation showed up.

The attack of the Fleet Formation was strong enough to kill saints, but it was inflexible. It was enough to deal with ordinary beast kings, but couldn't deal with the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon.

Boom!

Boom boom!

...

The Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon threw the dragon bone 17 times in a row and finally cracked the Fleet Defense Formation and landed among the 400 Half-Saint Fleets.

In such a short time, more than 20 Half-Saint Ships were broken into piles of scrap iron and fell to the ground.

Losing 20 battle ships made a big hole in the Fleet Formation, which made it less of a threat to beast kings.

In the meantime, ten beast kings led ten savage beast clans to run to the gate of the Yingsha City and cut off the human monks' way back.

The Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon held the dragon bone in hand and looked down on the humans and savage beasts,

standing in the sky. He said, “Tonight, let’s kill all the human monks in the base of Yingsha City. From now on, everyone, feel free to kill.”

Endless savage beasts crushed from all directions and surrounded human monks. An insane slaughter had started.

Chapter 1083 - Catastrophe Finger

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The situation was dire for humans as there were more savage beasts than estimated.

Lots of red ants crawled out from underground, and they were as large as adult human beings. They had hard shells like solid armor.

Meanwhile, Shizu Birds, Firegold Ravens, Snow Mountain Blue Eagles, Ghost Eye Vultures and other birds all flew forward, completely blocking the sight of the human monks.

There were tens of thousands of birds in the sky, and even the smallest ones were at least as large as dustpans. The largest ones were more than three hundred feet long, and they could easily level a hill with one scratch.

Beast kings were not the only great beings among the savage beasts. There were many level-six savage beasts who could easily match with human half saints.

At least half the human monks rushed out of Yingsha City. They originally wanted to slaughter a large group of savage beasts to secure a leading position, yet they were now encircled and trapped in a hard fight.

Their way of escape had been destroyed, which meant they could only fight to death until they survived the battle.

“I’ll fight you all till I die. Die! Savage beasts!” A human half saint from Central Region Saint Academy had been severely injured, so he couldn’t keep fighting anymore.

He rushed into a group of Lion Camel Beasts. He exploded his lower abdomen and went to his end with them. That part of the desert was annihilated, turned into scorched earth covered with bodies.

A while ago, his partner had been killed by a Lion Camel Beast.

He had been wanting to take revenge, and now, he had fulfilled his wish.

There were many human warriors who weren't afraid of death. If they were antagonized, they would fight til they bled the last drop of their blood.

Chi Wansui stopped holding back. He took out his heir stamp and dashed toward Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon.

The heir stamp, originally the size of a fist, emanated an imperial golden force, and it became as large as a small city.

Inside the heir stamp was the force of the empress. It was exceptionally mighty and was able to kill saints.

The space around the heir stamp kept being shattered and turned into a realm of chaos.

“He’s finally going to use his trump card.”

The dragon bone used by Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon was also extraordinary as it could resist the attack from the heir stamp.

The space structure of Blue Dragon Void World was too fragile to withstand the strength of the heir stamp and the dragon bone.

The combat between Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon and Chi Wansui was earth-shattering. It kept crushing the space, and there were tens of enormous cracks on the desert as if the ground was about to collapse.

Even the beast kings and pre-saints were shocked by such a battle.

Was it still a battle in the State of Saint?

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon and Chi Wansui were still just level-nine half saints, so they weren't pre-saints yet. It was impossible to reckon how powerful they would be when they became pre-saints.

As for the other heir, Beigong Lan, she didn't join the fight between Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon and Chi Wansui.

She was stationed in Yingsha City. She used the heir stamp and resisted seven beast kings all by herself.

Meanwhile, the human monks who were hiding in Yingsha City also rushed out to the battlefield, led by Wan Huayu, Cai Jinglun, Shangguan Yi, Shangguan Xianyan and the others.

The powers all took out their Thousand-pattern Saint Weapons and utilized Destruction of the Thousand-patterns.

Among the savage beasts, some incredible level-six savage beasts took out the ancestral devices from their race, and they triggered power that could rival that of the Destruction of the Thousand-patterns.

Both the battle and the killing were getting much more intense.

There were deafening sounds in the originally tranquil desert. Large numbers of savage beasts and human monks collapsed at each moment.

Unfortunately, there were ten times more savage beasts than humans, and they mastered two to three times more destructive ancient devices than the humans did.

Human monks were being pushed into a more and more dangerous situation, and they might be completely annihilated.

...

In an oasis that was tens of thousands of miles away.

White Li Princess blinked her eyes. She didn't get angry at all. Instead, she smiled and thought that Blackie was trying to pursue someone who was way out of its league.

To her, Blackie was too fat, and it had nothing to do with being handsome.

As for White Li Princess, she was exquisite like an angel. Lots of beast kings were pursuing her in the Savage Barren Territory.

White Li Princess said, “You can’t even transform your shape, and you think you’re good enough for me?”

Her voice was melodious, and each word she said was like a musical note, and each sentence she said was a tune, and it had an endless aftertaste.

“It’s not that I can’t transform my shape, I just don’t want to transform into a human shape. Cats are the most noble creatures in the world. Why would I turn into a human?” Blackie sneered.

“If you really believe that cats are the most noble race, why do you turn to a human and become a pet of his?” White Li Princess asked.

Blackie was irritated and shouted, “I’m not his pet. I’m just his partner. If you dare degrade me again, I’ll beat you back to your original form!”

White Li Princess thought of Blackie as a mere moron, so she didn’t give a damn about it.

She looked to Zhang Ruochen and said, “I’m not hostile against humans. I suggest that we don’t mess with each other. Otherwise, it’s not gonna end well.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled and said, “Actually, there’s no need for us to fight each other. If you’re willing to do me this favor, it’ll be all good.” White Li Princess knew that all three human beings were top-tier masters. It would be the best that she didn’t need to fight them.

She said, “Tell me! Let me know your deal.”

Zhang Ruochen told White Li Princess everything, and he wished that she could cooperate with him to save those human monks.

After hearing what Zhang Ruochen said, White Li Princess shook her head and said, “The goal of Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon is to become the master of Kunlun’s Field,

and fighting humans is the first step it takes. Even if I go, I won't be able to change its mind. I suggest that you go now, otherwise, I have enough reason to kill you just because of your motive."

"If that's the case, I'll have to fight you," Zhang Ruochen said.

White Li Princess smiled, and there was coldness in her smile. She said, "I've already given you a chance to go away, yet you're still provoking me. Do you really think that I won't kill you?"

White Li Princess was indeed straightforward. She knew that this fight was inevitable, so she made the first attack.

She stepped forward, and took a step which was hundreds of feet, arriving right in front of Zhang Ruochen, pointing toward him.

A blade with gleaming light flew out of her fingertip and hit toward the eyebrow of Zhang Ruochen.

Even when she was trying to kill someone, she did it elegantly.

"Catastrophe Finger."

Zhang Ruochen was shocked that White Li Princess was skilled at the saint spell of the Taichi Sect.

Catastrophe Finger was a pinnacle finger technique. It would concentrate all the Holy Qi in one's body and kill an enemy a thousand miles away through ten mountains. It was definitely an incredible technique.

The Ten Aperture Sword Finger Zhang Ruochen used to practice was only a basic technique under Catastrophe Finger.

White Li Princess was one of the Taigu Remains, and she was ranked seventy-eight on 'Half-Saint Rank,' and she was powerful enough to fight a lower-class saint.

Zhang Ruochen knew that he had to be careful. He immediately performed Luan Phoenix Deity Print Speed, and there was firing under his feet. He moved out to the right.

"Hua!"

Catastrophe Finger flew across Zhang Ruochen's temple, and the force rushed out of the oasis and went through more than ten hills.

It only dispersed once it travelled a thousand miles away.

Even lower-class saints might not be able to resist that finger.

There was a thin bloody trace on the left temple of Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen wasn't hit by Catastrophe Finger. Instead, the force of the finger flew across Zhang Ruochen and slashed his skin.

Zhang Ruochen's body was sturdy enough that even Hundred-pattern Saint Weapon couldn't injure his skin, yet the force of the finger was able to slash it. The power of Catastrophe Finger was indeed terrific.

"Yi?" White Li Princess blinked with her starry eyes, looking weird. She said, "You're fast, faster than some lower-class saints."

Zhang Ruochen inferred from what she said, and asked, "Are you saying that you killed some lower-class saints with your Catastrophe Finger?"

White Li Princess didn't answer his question, and she pointed forward again.

Instead of dodging it, Zhang Ruochen took out the Abyss Ancient Sword and performed Sword Five.

His body and his sword merged together and flew out like a trace of black light. It let out an unstoppable force and clashed with Catastrophe Finger performed by White Li Princess.

"Hong!"

Traces of sword Qi spread out like circular waves.

Both of them bounced back thousands of feet.

White Li Princess started to be more serious and stopped looking down at Zhang Ruochen. She said, "Though you're still young, you have already finished Sword Five, which is incredible. Your cultivation on sword master is already in the

same class with that of the best sword master talent Xue Wuye.”

White Li Princess must have met Xue Wuye before.

Xue Wuye was indeed a man of his time. Wherever there were exquisite ladies, he would be there, and most of them would eventually hook up with him. Only a few were able to resist his charm.

Was this White Li Princess successfully seduced by him?

“Who told you that he’s the best human talent on sword mastery?” Zhang Ruochen was holding the Abyss Ancient Sword and smiling gently.

“Are you implying you are the best instead of him?” White Li Princess asked.

“Of course.”

White Li Princess shook her head and said, “Your sword mastery is indeed profound enough, but it’s still way inferior to his. His sword master realm is the limit that any half saint can reach, and once he becomes a saint, he’ll become a sword saint. You’re not there yet.”

“How many of his attacks can you resist?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

White Li had indeed fought Xue Wuye before. She answered Zhang Ruochen’s question honestly. “Seventeen.”

“Okay. I can defeat you with fewer than seventeen attacks.”

Zhang Ruochen looked confident and shook his long sword. All of a sudden, Sword Qi spread, and he became sharper and more aggressive.

White Li Princess shot a glance at afar. She saw that the white-caped old man and the white-caped old woman had been suppressed by Sikong One and Sikong Two.

She then said, “If you can defeat me within seventeen moves, I’ll go see Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon with you. If you can’t, then immediately leave with your men.”

“Okay!” Zhang Ruochen promised.

White Li Princess indeed had the power to negotiate with him. She was the princess of a race, so she must have some hidden cards.

That Carnivorous Holy Flower alone was already difficult to deal with.

Yet Zhang Ruochen took up this challenge again.

Chapter 1084 - Sword Match

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

After that previous fight, Princess White Li had an idea about the human male's true abilities. He was indeed strong, but she could still counter him.

He might have some hidden tricks he hadn't used, but so did Princess White Li. If they truly started fighting, they might not be able to produce a victor even after three days and nights.

It was a fantasy to want to defeat her in 17 strikes.

"You're too conceited!" Princess White Li said.

Zhang Ruochen didn't say anything more. He poured Holy Qi into the Abyss Ancient Sword. All the strength runes on it were activated, making the sword extremely heavy.

"First strike, thunder and fire burning the plain."

The ancient black sword stabbed into the ground. Lightning covered the sky and shot toward Princess White Li. The purple bolt of lightning was very thick. It melted more than 100 feet of the ground as soon as it landed, forming a small pool of lava.

Boom, boom.

Dozens of lightning bolts fell one after another. It felt like the world was ending soon. The green land was instantly turned into scorched earth—completely destroyed.

This move was from the True-Thunder Fire Sword Technique. Zhang Ruochen had completed the entire set long ago and could unleash saintly might.

Princess White Li was still composed. Walking with light steps, she kept dodging the plummeting bolts of lightning, leaving behind dozens of beautiful afterimages.

“Is that all you can do?” She pointed with a slender finger, sending a finger sword to Zhang Ruochen’s chest.

“Gold Morning Sun.”

Zhang Ruochen stabbed forward again. His sword flew out like a shooting star, crashing against the other’s finger sword. It was another saint technique.

This one was from the Nine-Life Sword Technique.

Princess White Li retreated again, shocked inwardly. This human was so young, but he was already an expert in two saint sword techniques. He’d also completed Sword Five of the Wordless Sword Manual.

Where did he get the time?

Many strong cultivators on the Half-Saint Rank and Outer Rank were only experts in one saint spell and could already fight the heroes of the world.

She naturally didn’t know that Zhang Ruochen had spent a lot of effort on cultivating sword techniques in the Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map. He’d only combined his knowledge of the Saintly Way from two worlds, but it was already extraordinary.

Whoosh.

Princess White Li and Zhang Ruochen’s battle grew more and more intense. Their speed picked up more and more too. In the end, all one could see were blurs.

After ten strikes, Princess White Li had seen through Zhang Ruochen’s tactics and became more relaxed.

“You indeed have high attainments in the Sword Way, but you lack variety,” Princess White Li said. “You’re unable to surpass Xue Wuye. You’ll be unable to defeat me in 1,700 strikes too, let alone 17 strikes.”

“Really?”

A strange smile flashed past Zhang Ruochen's eyes. He grasped the Abyss Ancient Sword and used Sword Five again.

Whooshes sounded around the blade. Dense shadows appeared, forming a sword river that struck toward Princess White Li.

She shook her head softly. Standing her ground, she formed a sword print with her fingers. Just then, she felt sharply an unfamiliar energy wave within the sword river.

“It's...time...”

By the time Princess White Li grew cautious, the time around her had already paused. The next moment, Zhang Ruochen's sword was already between her brows. The cold sword glinted. If it went in a bit more, it could pierce Princess White Li's skull.

“Fifteen strikes,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Princess White Li was dazed. She dissipated the sword print she'd formed without losing her composure. Biting her lip with her white teeth, she said, “Time and Space Descendant, Zhang Ruochen. Am I right?”

“Indeed.”

“You are so calculative,” Princess White Li said.

“In my opinion, it's strategy.”

Actually, Zhang Ruochen and Princess White Li were at the same level. It wasn't easy for Zhang Ruochen to win. It was even more impossible for him to win within 17 strikes.

This was why he had to be smart. He'd used the True-Thunder Fire Sword Technique and Nine-Life Sword Technique in the beginning to numb Princess White Li. It led up to using the time sword technique of Life and Death of Scale Eight in the end.

If Zhang Ruochen had used the time sword technique in the beginning, it would be when Princess White Li was the most alert. It would be impossible to defeat her, even if Zhang Ruochen could hurt her.

Once Princess White Li grew cautious, it would be impossible for Zhang Ruochen to trick her again.

Princess White Li stood up straight, not admitting defeat. “Let us fight again. If you can defeat me, I will help you save the humans from the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon with all my might.”

Even if the opponent was the Time and Space Descendant, Princess White Li was still confident in countering him. She’d only lost in the previous round because she hadn’t been careful enough.

“Are you still qualified to negotiate?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Princess White Li huffed coldly. She looked at the Carnivorous Holy Flower from the corner of her vision. She discovered that the fat cat had somehow sealed it within a formation.

No, it seems like I’ve underestimated that fat cat.

Princess White Li knew that her advantage was over, and was ready to retreat. She moved back and used the Close Heavenly Pace. The vast land behind her was shrinking quickly. One hundred miles became only a few feet.

Zhang Ruochen knew that the White Li Cat Clan had this natural saint spell, so he didn’t let down his guard. As soon as Princess White Li started moving, Zhang Ruochen immediately used the Great Spatial Move and caught up. He pointed, hitting the Tianxin Aperture in her back.

Whoosh—

Rings of white flooded out of her back, sealing 90% of the Holy Qi within her. She fell down involuntarily.

Zhang Ruochen reached out. He held onto her thin waist and picked her up. Princess White Li’s waist was very thin and flexible. She immediately flipped up and jabbed Zhang Ruochen with a sharp finger.

“If you don’t want to die, you better be more obedient.” Zhang Ruochen was flying in the air with a cold expression. He held

her waist with one hand, pointing the Abyss Ancient Sword at her neck with the other.

The sharp blade already left a trail of blood down her pale neck.

Princess White Li glared at him angrily. She retracted her finger and then turned her delicate face to the side. “You make me hate humans even more than Xue Wuye.”

“Really?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“At least Xue Wuye won’t hurt a girl with his sword.”

“That’s why he’s Xue Wuye and I’m Zhang Ruochen.”

The oasis was destroyed and broken. Other than the Carnivorous Holy Flower, there was no other living plant. The holy tree had withered too, all the leaves having fallen off. It added a bit of misery to the land.

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen flew down and placed Princess White Li on the ground. He immediately hit 18 spots on Princess White Li’s body to seal all her Holy Qi.

Blackie stood under the withered holy tree. It was maintaining the formation to seal the Carnivorous Holy Flower.

The flower had already grown into a towering vine. The root was as thick as a bowl. It had grown scales too. They shone metallically like dragon scales. The flower at the top of the plant was the size of a basin, but it hadn’t bloomed yet. It shone brilliantly with ripples of saintly light.

The spirit and wisdom had already been born. Knowing that Princess White Li was captured, it started attacking Blackie’s formation.

Kaboom.

Even though it hadn’t bloomed yet, the flower’s strength was still considerable. It even broke some of the formation runes. It wouldn’t be long before it destroyed the formation.

Zhang Ruochen took out the Life and Death Mirror. He was ready to destroy the flower with the Destruction of the

Thousand Patterns before it could break through the formation.

While controlling the formation, Blackie said, “The Carnivorous Holy Flower is a powerful battle plant, rarely seen throughout history. I think you should try to tame it and plant it in your Sea of Qi. That way, your combat ability will improve greatly.”

“Are you tricking me?” Zhang Ruochen frowned.

The Carnivorous Holy Flower could suck a Saint’s Holy Qi entirely, but Blackie wanted him to plant it in his Sea of Qi? Wasn’t this suicide?

Princess White Li stood on the side with a strange smile. She felt like Blackie was tricking Zhang Ruochen too.

She was more familiar with the Carnivorous Holy Flower than anyone else. If Zhang Ruochen really planted the flower in his Sea of Qi, he would definitely become its nutrient. He would quickly be sucked dry.

Blackie shook its head quickly. “As long as you can tame and feed it, it won’t suck your Holy Qi. Instead, it’ll become an attack you can use. Even the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon will fear it when it blooms. Aren’t you tempted?”

Princess White Li chuckled. “You think you can tame the Carnivorous Holy Flower?”

She and the flower were working together. It wasn’t a master-servant relationship.

Blackie stared at her. “Others might not be able to, but the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree can.”

The Divine Sky-Connecting Tree was the master of all plants. Any plant would feel respect for it. The Carnivorous Holy Flower was only a sapling now. The Divine Sky-Connecting Tree could tame it.

Zhang Ruochen thought carefully, weighing the pros and cons. In the end, he took out the Universe Spiritual Map. He wanted to communicate with the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree first and then make a decision.

The Divine Sky-Connecting Tree had a weak spirit now. Only Zhang Ruochen could communicate with it for a short period.

“The Divine Sky-Connecting Tree?”

Princess White Li’s pretty eyes filled with shock. She stared at Zhang Ruochen’s Universe Spiritual Map. Could it be...

Chapter 1085 - Blooming

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The Universe Spiritual Map hovered before Zhang Ruochen, shining with green light.

He closed his eyes and put his hands together. Splitting his Spiritual Power, he entered the scroll world to communicate with the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree.

A moment later, Zhang Ruochen put his Spiritual Power away and opened his eyes. The look in his black eyes was heavy. Finally, he looked to the Carnivorous Flower.

“What did the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree say?” Blackie asked.

“It said that everything has two sides.”

“What does that mean?”

“It can help me tame the flower,” Zhang Ruochen continued, “and teach me the ancient way of cultivating origin plants. However, the Carnivorous Holy Flower is very fierce. If my cultivation and Spiritual Power can’t suppress its ferocity, it may create a negative effect. For example, I may become a demon.”

Blackie shook its head. “Since it’s so dangerous, let’s not tame it and just destroy it!”

“No.” Zhang Ruochen walked toward the Carnivorous Holy Flower with his hands behind his back. Reaching the edge of the formation, he looked up, studying the Carnivorous Holy Flower’s roots and veins. “I’ve already made the decision to tame the flower and make it into an origin plant.”

“Are you crazy?” Blackie yelled.

Zhang Ruochen was still calm. “Where does motivation come from if there is no pressure? I need to use the Carnivorous Holy Flower’s threat to force out my potential.”

Since he’d already decided, he didn’t waste any more time.

He reached out his right hand and lifted it up. Faint spatial ripples appeared above the scroll. A branch of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree extended from the scroll world. It passed through the formation and approached the Carnivorous Holy Flower.

Rustle, rustle.

The leaves looked extremely green, as if it were carved from green jade. It radiated with the thick aura of vitality. This branch was only the tip of the iceberg, but it was already thicker than the millennium-old holy tree.

Any creature looked like dust below the branch.

Princess White Li raised her pale neck and looked up at the tree branch. She was shocked and impressed. Was this the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree of the legends?

“Wasn’t the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree cut down in the middle ages?” She couldn’t keep calm.

Zhang Ruochen ignored her. He just told Blackie to watch her and make sure she couldn’t escape.

The Carnivorous Holy Flower felt the living Qi from the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree. It stopped attacking the formation and its sharp roots left the holy tree, sinking into the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree’s branch.

It actually wanted to try eating the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree. However, the tree’s power had far surpassed the flower. It dragged the flower directly into the scroll world.

Zhang Ruochen entered the scroll world too, appearing below the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree.

The Carnivorous Holy Flower had already become a small seven-foot-long vine. It curled up below the tree, trembling. It was like a peasant bowing to an emperor. It was in extreme fear.

A mighty voice sounded within the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree. "I've already tamed the Carnivorous Holy Flower. You can use an ancient spell now to turn it into an origin plant."

Whoosh!

A breeze blew past. A large leaf fluttered down, landing in Zhang Ruochen's hands. The next moment, an ancient passage appeared in his mind. It was the passage for growing an origin plant.

"Thank you, senior." Zhang Ruochen bowed politely.

"Thankfully, it hadn't bloomed yet," the mighty voice said again. "Otherwise, it would be unable to become an origin plant. You are just in time. I've already told you the pros and cons. Next, it will depend on whether your abilities can handle the Carnivorous Holy Flower."

Zhang Ruochen bowed again. Then he walked to the Carnivorous Holy Flower and used the technique from the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree to put the flower into his Sea of Qi.

Zhang Ruochen's Sea of Qi was extremely vast. It was thousands of times larger than an ordinary Half-Saint. It was like a rumbling sea with white steamy Qi. He materialized his saint soul and sat in the center of the sea as a saintly man in white. He cupped the flower with both hands and started refining it.

After a long while, the flower's saint soul melded with Zhang Ruochen's. It connected with his spine, extending from his tailbone to his head.

A youthful voice sounded in Zhang Ruochen's mind automatically.

"Zhang Ruochen, I don't submit to you willingly. I am only submitting to the Divine Tree. If your saint soul, Spiritual Power, and cultivation can't suppress me, I will choose to devour you."

Zhang Ruochen and the Carnivorous Holy Flower's saint souls were connected now. He could obviously sense its evil thoughts.

“You can try.” Zhang Ruochen made a grabbing movement and a white sword was in his hands. “My saint soul won’t be much affected even if I cut you.”

The Carnivorous Holy Flower fell silent. After a pause, it said, “Now, you must supply me with enough nutrients and help me bloom. If you can’t, I can only suck your energy until I am full.”

The flower’s nutrients indeed had to be supplied by Zhang Ruochen. It would only leave his power alone if it was full. Also, it could only help him fight if it was full.

The two were in a mutual-beneficiary relationship. Among them, Zhang Ruochen was the master. The flower was the servant.

The servant must listen to the master’s commands. Of course, if the master was too weak, the servant may also affect the master’s mind and even devour him.

Zhang Ruochen calculated carefully and came up with an idea. The flower wouldn’t be able to affect him too much, even if it bloomed. After all, if a servant wanted to fight back against its master, it had to be at least ten times stronger than its master.

“Fine!” Zhang Ruochen agreed. “I’ll help you bloom first.”

The best nutrients for growing the Carnivorous Holy Flower were naturally divine medicine, Saints, and Grade Seven Beasts.

Grade Six Beasts, Half-Saints and spiritual medicine more than 6,000 years old could be used, but they wouldn’t be as effective.

Zhang Ruochen wasn’t stingy. He took out a Saintly Source and tossed it at the Carnivorous Holy Flower.

“That’s...Saintly Source... I didn’t think you’d have such good things...haha...”

The Carnivorous Holy Flower was ecstatic. The many roots quickly stretched over and surrounded the Saintly Source. It started absorbing the saintly power crazily.

Zhang Ruochen had two Saintly Sources. He'd gotten them when he'd killed the two lower Saints from the Demonic Sect.

After absorbing the saintly power, the Carnivorous Holy Flower cracked and popped. It thickened and grew longer. Electric currents flowed across the vines. The white flower bud at the top grew bigger.

The Saintly Source shrunk at a speed visible to the naked eye. If one had a Saintly Source, there was more than a 50% chance that one could become a Saint.

However, Zhang Ruochen had tossed it out as if it was a pebble for the Carnivorous Holy Flower. Any Ninth Level Half-Saint or Pre-Saint would cry if they saw this.

The vine was now as thick as a water barrel and completely covered in lightning. The flower at the top was huge. With a soft pop, it finally opened up a bit. White light shone from it, making the space below the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree as bright as daytime.

The flower opened up gradually and the Carnivorous Holy Flower's aura grew stronger. An hour later, it opened up completely. It was beautiful, like a divine lotus hanging up above. It had a fragrant scent.

The fragrance was mesmerizing and could produce hallucinations.

"The more beautiful a flower is, the more dangerous it is," Zhang Ruochen commented.

The Carnivorous Holy Flower's voice was still youthful as it said, "Zhang Ruochen, I'm only half-full. Give me another Saintly Source."

"You want more nutrients?"

"You're my owner. You naturally have to supply it."

Zhang Ruochen touched his nose and smiled. "I don't have any more, but I can take you to a dangerous battlefield. There should be many Half-Saint and Grade Six Beast corpses. We can collect nutrients together."

“A dangerous battlefield?” The Carnivorous Holy Flower didn’t think so. “I already have one blooming flower. With my help, nowhere is dangerous to you in the Blue Dragon Void World.”

“Then I’d like to see if you’re truly that powerful.”

With that, Zhang Ruochen put the Carnivorous Holy Flower back into his Sea of Qi and exited the scroll world.

Blackie immediately walked over. “How is it?”

Zhang Ruochen nodded. It had succeeded. Then he looked to Princess White Li. She was standing below the withered saintly tree by herself, exuding a cold aura.

“So you have the legendary Divine Sky-Connecting Tree. No wonder you have such great power as a Seventh Level Half-Saint.” After a pause, she added, “You’ll kill me after you save the humans, right?”

Since Zhang Ruochen had shown her the Universe Spiritual Map and Divine Sky-Connecting Tree, it was clear that he already saw her as a dead person. She couldn’t be allowed to live.

Zhang Ruochen indeed planned on killing her after saving the humans so there weren’t any future troubles. However, since Princess White Li had already guessed it, Zhang Ruochen decided to wipe her memory lest she try anything drastic.

“Look into my eyes,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Princess White Li looked over and their eyes met. Specks of white light shot out of Zhang Ruochen’s eyes and flew into Princess White Li’s eyes. Gradually, her beautiful large eyes became dazed and empty.

If Princess White Li’s cultivation hadn’t been sealed, she could resist Zhang Ruochen’s spiritual invasion. But now, with Zhang Ruochen’s Spiritual Power at the 49th level, he easily wiped Princess White Li’s memory.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen wrapped up the rest of her memory into an egg-sized memory ball. It flew out of her forehead.

Whoosh—

Zhang Ruochen reached forward and caught the white ball of light. Thinking carefully, he put it away instead of crushing it.

“It seems like I still lack cruelty... I’ll just keep it with me for now!” He sighed.

He’d already told himself that he had to kill Princess White Li so there wasn’t any trouble in the future. However, when the time came, he probably wouldn’t be able to do it.

He didn’t hate Princess White Li, and she was quite innocent too. She hadn’t done anything wrong. Zhang Ruochen still had some morals that didn’t allow him to kill the innocent.

This kind of personality was a disadvantage. Many times, one had to choose between interest and principles.

Chapter 1086 - No Light In Hell

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The stronger one's Spiritual Power was, the more mysterious their abilities were. Some of them were even more terrifying than saint spells.

Wiping and extracting a Monk's memories wasn't hard for a 49th level Spiritual Half-Saint.

"Princess White Li is from an ancient race. She can hide a portion of her memory in her blood," Blackie reminded. "Her Spiritual Power is far from yours, but her will is very strong. Once she becomes a Saint, she may recover her memory."

"No problem."

Zhang Ruochen didn't want to control Princess White Li. He only wanted to use her to top the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon. It wasn't a big deal even if she recovered her memories later.

Spirit returned to Princess White Li's eyes. Her clear eyes studied Zhang Ruochen and Blackie curiously. "Who are you? Why are you with me, the princess?"

Zhang Ruochen exchanged a glance with Blackie. As expected, she still had some memories hidden in her blood that Zhang Ruochen couldn't take away. At least, she still knew that she was a princess.

Excited, Blackie walked over, rubbing its claws. Smiling, it said, "You are my queen. Your name is Queen White Li."

When it said this, Blackie had already reached out to grab Princess White Li's hands. The princess was dazed, but she still grabbed Blackie's paw.

Just as Blackie was getting cocky, a gust of icy power spread from Princess White Li's hand, freezing it. Then the princess waved her hand, tossing Blackie far away.

Princess White Li was from an ancient race. Even with her cultivation sealed, her physical strength was still terrifying. Swinging her arm with all her might, she threw Blackie into the horizon. It disappeared as a small black dot.

Even Zhang Ruochen was shocked. What was going on?

“A stupid cat dares to call itself king? If it's that way, then isn't it in a higher level than I?”

Princess White Li pouted. Instead of a composed fairy, she was like a spoiled princess. Even though she'd lost her memories, she was still very intelligent and saw through Blackie's lie.

Zhang Ruochen looked into the sky. He couldn't see Blackie. It probably wouldn't be back any time soon.

The white-haired man and woman had woken up, but Sikong One had put the Vajra Shackle on them, sealing their bodies and cultivations. Right now, rings of golden chains were wrapped all around their limbs.

“Princess, don't worry about us!” the elderly woman said anxiously. “Hurry and run. The three humans are top fighters. You aren't their match!”

Princess White Li pointed at herself in confusion. “Are you talking about me? Why should I run? Who are you?”

The man and woman's expressions changed. They realized something was wrong with Princess White Li.

The woman's face twisted. “Zhang Ruochen!” she roared. “What did you do to the princess?”

Still composed, Zhang Ruochen walked over to them. “My target is the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon, not Princess

White Li. If you two can cooperate with me, I promise Princess White Li won't be in danger.

“You—”

The woman wanted to continue, but the man stopped her. He saw the situation clearly. With their current state, they couldn't negotiate with Zhang Ruochen at all. Plus, since Zhang Ruochen was willing to talk to them, it meant that they wouldn't die right now.

“I hope the Space and Time Descendant will keep his word,” the man said.

“Oh?”

Zhang Ruochen suddenly sensed something. He looked up at the starry sky. While sensing, he walked to a higher sandhill.

It was dawn right now. The Evening Star in the east of the sky quickly dimmed. Various red stars suddenly appeared around it.

Whoosh—

Dozens of shooting stars shot through where the Evening Star was and flew to the north.

“The Evening Star has lost its luster. Instead of the sun, the east is covered in blood. This kind of astrological scene represents...no light in Hell.”

Zhang Ruochen sighed, his expression ugly.

Sikong One scratched his head and asked curiously, “Senior Uncle, what does that mean?”

“Senior Brother,” Sikong Two said immediately, “No light in Hell is an inauspicious phenomenon. At the same time, it is related to something happening in the world at the moment. The Evening Star clearly represents Yingsha City.”

“What does it mean if the Evening Star dims?” Sikong One asked.

Sikong Two sighed. “It's possible that...Yingsha City has already been lost.”

“What exactly does ‘no light in Hell’ mean?” Sikong One still didn’t understand.

“When Hell arrives, it becomes devoid of light. Or it means that many creatures have died and are unable to see light anymore. From this, we can interpret that the humans and beasts in Yingsha City have fought again. The bloodshed must have been horrible with rivers of blood and mountains of corpses.”

“It’s only some stars,” Sikong One said again. “How come you and Senior Uncle can see all these things? My cultivation isn’t any weaker, so why can’t I see?”

Sikong Two put his hands together. Instead of explaining, he chanted a hymn as if sending the dead away.

“When your Spiritual Power is in the 49th level and getting closer to becoming a Saint,” Zhang Ruochen said, “you’ll be able to understand the world through the stars. This is called astrology!”

In the distance, Princess White Li’s eyes grew curious. She was interested in the mysterious astrology.

She immediately walked over to Zhang Ruochen. Instead of fearing him, she grabbed his arm like a little girl. Happily, she asked, “Can you teach me astrology?”

Zhang Ruochen had a worried expression. Ignoring Princess White Li, he said to Sikong One and Two, “Stay and accompany Blackie. I must head to Yingsha City immediately.”

He hadn’t expected that the humans of Yingsha City would be unable to control themselves and fight with the beasts so quickly. This put him in a tight spot.

How exactly was the situation there? Was it really “no light in Hell?”

If he knew that they would fight tonight, Zhang Ruochen wouldn’t have wasted so much time here.

“No.” Sikong Two immediately went to stop Zhang Ruochen. “Senior Uncle, the astrological phenomenon has already

appeared. This means that everything is set and no one can change it. Going to Yingsha City now is going against nature. You will die. No one can fight against nature.”

Sikong One also added, “Since they dared to go forcefully against the beasts, they’re looking for death. Why should we get involved?”

“Don’t worry. I’m just going to look.” Zhang Ruochen couldn’t keep waiting. Wrapping Princess White Li and the two elders in Holy Qi, he used the Great Spatial Move and disappeared from the spot.

This journey was dangerous. Zhang Ruochen decided to go alone. Even though astrological phenomenon had already appeared, Zhang Ruochen still wasn’t afraid. Maybe he could do something if he went to look.

In the end, he wasn’t a cold-blooded man.

When he reached the outside of Yingsha City, he saw a hellish scene. The ground was completely cracked. The cracks were dozens of miles long, clearly the result of the Destruction of the Thousand Patterns.

A cold wind blew, bringing about a bloody scent. There were human and beast corpses for as far as he could see. He couldn’t even count them.

Black smoke rose up from the corpses. War fire burned. There were no cries anymore. Everything was silent.

Zhang Ruochen saw some familiar corpses on the battlefield.

Cai Jin, the manager of the Cai Family, was a Pre-Saint and had come to the Blue Dragon Void World to search for an opportunity to become a Saint. Right now, he was an incomplete corpse, fallen in a puddle of blood. Perhaps because all his blood had run dry, his old face looked extraordinarily pale and menacing.

Chi Yutang, one of the four lords of the Lingxiao Heavenly King Mansion, had died as well. Half of his head and internal organs had been eaten by a beast. All that remained was a bloody shell.

Zhang Ruochen discovered the aura of Blue Night, 13th disciple of Discipline King Haiming, and quickly found his corpse.

There was a patch of scorched dirt, hundreds of feet wide. The earth had caved in and red electric fire surged in the dirt. The center was Blue Night's body. It had become a pile of broken bones.

"Blue Night is dead. Can Ji Shui still be alive?" Zhang Ruochen muttered to himself. In the end, he could only sigh and shake his head. He used a physical technique to fly toward Yingsha City.

As expected, Yingsha City had been conquered. Half of the towering city walls had collapsed. Only some remnants were still standing.

Some faint rumbles sounded inside the city. The war between the humans and beasts seemed to have not ended yet.

Hundreds of humans hung from the damaged city wall. They'd all been stabbed through by a single black metal nail to the wall. Some of them had already died from loss of blood while the others were still wailing and struggling.

The scene was tragic. Blood flowed continuously from the wall, converging in the pool of blood on the concave land.

Wan Huayu and the beautiful twins from the Shangguan Clan, Shangguan Linglong and Shangguan Nihong, were all nailed on the wall.

Shangguan Nihong had already died. Her body was cold and stiff. Shangguan Linglong was still alive but on her last breath. A nail had gone through her neck to nail her to the wall. Her entire body was dyed red by the blood.

Wan Huayu was still alive. A nail had pierced her stomach, positioning her right above the city gate. The fire phoenix armor was dull now, but she hadn't let go of her blood-red sword.

Devastation and desolation.

Yingsha City was still vast, but it gave off an eerie feeling as if it was a ghost city from Hell.

Zhang Ruochen walked on the bloody sand, stepping past the corpses scattered on the ground. He walked toward Yingsha City. The cold wind blew past his robes, rustling them.

Many beasts were gathered below and atop the city walls. They'd stayed behind to watch the gate. That moment, they saw the human striding toward Yingsha City.

Chapter 1087 - A Cruel Figure

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“Hey! There’s still a living human.”

“Since he didn’t die, he must’ve escaped but come back to die. What an idiot.”

...

The beasts were surprised. They hadn’t expected that any humans would come back to Yingsha City, so they all laughed. They looked at Zhang Ruochen with more mockery.

More than 20 black scorpion beasts climbed out of the yellow sand, appearing before Zhang Ruochen. They spat out poisonous black fog and their eyes shone with green light.

Anyone could see that they were filled with murderous intent and were ready to split up this human.

“Living is pain, death is pain. Life but yellow dirt,” Zhang Ruochen said as he walked, feeling extremely emotional.

Hearing the noise, the humans on the wall who were still alive opened their eyes. They stared at the human who was walking over.

“Hurry...run...” someone rasped out. His voice was very weak, like a candle in the wind that would die at any moment.

Wan Huayu and Shangguan Linglong also opened their dull eyes, looking at the unfamiliar man. He was very young and handsome, with a noble aura. Instead of a strong cultivator, he looked more like a rich heir who liked to travel and sightsee.

Right now, he was surrounded by dozens of black scorpion beasts. He was most likely going to die.

They'd witnessed too many deaths yesterday and were a bit numbed. However, Wan Huayu felt like he was familiar. She might have seen him before. However, she'd lost too much blood and couldn't remember where she'd seen him.

"Hurry...leave... Yingsha City has fallen..." As Wan Huayu said this, blood poured out of her mouth. Blood continued flowing out of her pale stomach too.

"You really are strong. You can still speak. No wonder you killed so many strong cultivators of my race."

A half-human beast standing below the gate snorted coldly. He lashed out with his fire whip and hit Wan Huayu, leaving a long gash on her right leg. Wan Huayu grunted and her slender legs shook violently.

However, the human man didn't listen to their warnings. Instead of running, he continued walking toward Yingsha City.

The half-human beast stared at Zhang Ruochen and scoffed. "Kill him. Rip him to shreds."

The 20-something black scorpion beasts pounced on Zhang Ruochen at once. They were all around seven or eight meters long. Their sharp pincers shone coldly like blades.

The humans hanging on the wall all sighed. Some of them closed their eyes, unwilling to see what would happen next.

Zhang Ruochen didn't stop walking. He just reached out and pressed forward. A Space Domain spread out instantly. Its invisible pressure spread in all directions.

Boom, boom!

The black scorpions flying in the air all cried out in pain. Their shells shattered and their bodies exploded, forming a bloody mist. Seeing this, the humans on the wall opened their eyes again in shock.

The beasts present were surprised. Then they started yelling in anger. Some continuously stomped on the ground with their

hooves. Others jumped down from the wall, flames rising up from their bodies.

The beasts had taken over the human military base, becoming the rulers of this area. How could they let a human kill more than 20 beasts?

Unbelievable.

Boom!

A group of beasts with immense murderous Qi rushed toward Zhang Ruochen. There were black scorpions, lion camels, blood-drinking ants and others. More than 1,000 beasts charged across the sand, lifting up rolls of smoke.

Thousands of huge beasts charging at once was definitely a powerful scene. Even the Spiritual Qi in this area shook violently.

Even a mountain would be flattened instantly, let alone a human.

Zhang Ruochen stopped, paused, and then continued forward. But when he took his first step, the sky changed instantly. Even the black clouds shook.

Thousands upon thousands of Sword Qi lined up in a row, crossing dozens of miles. As Zhang Ruochen walked, the Sword Qi whooshed forward like a dozen-mile-long wave. It crashed into the horde of thousands of beasts.

Poof!

Poof!

...

The sharp Sword Qi killed the rows of beasts as if cutting down grain. In the end, only a few dozen strong Grade Six beasts survived. The rest of the thousands of beasts all became bloody corpses.

The entire time, Zhang Ruochen walked forward with a steady pace. He didn't speed up or slow down.

These beasts were all very wise. When they saw how terrifying this human was, even they were frightened.

Whoosh, whoosh.

The dozens of miles of Sword Qi continued pushing forward. The beasts didn't dare touch it at all. They kept retreating until they got into Yingsha City.

The humans hanging on the walls were all shocked. They hadn't expected for there to be such a powerful swordsman amongst the younger generation.

Who was he?

Now, the people finally started studying Zhang Ruochen to guess who he was. He was showing his true appearance right now. Very few people had seen him like this before, so no one could recognize him.

The half-human beast below the city gates had the body of an alligator and head of a man. It was completely covered in yellow-brown scales.

"I underestimated you," it huffed. "Seems like you have some skills."

Whoosh—

The half-human beast held a flaming whip. Waving its arm, it swung the whip out. Dozens of miles of flames crashed toward the Sword Qi wave.

The beast was very strong. It had already experienced the First Trial of the Pre-Saint.

Zhang Ruochen reached out and formed another sword technique.

Whoosh!

The Sword Qi immediately retracted and grouped together, forming a long white battle sword. It flew out with ear-splitting booms like a streak of white light. It pierced the half-human beast.

The beast's body was dyed red. It flew back like a cannon and smashed against the wall, embedding into it.

It was still alive.

The next moment, thousands of beams of Sword Qi flooded out of its body, cutting it up into ground meat. It poured down from the wall.

The Sword Qi flew back and circled Zhang Ruochen, forming a sizable Sword Qi Domain.

The beasts on the broken wall were dumbfounded. It was their first time seeing a human perform the Way of Sword so precisely and fluidly. Was he a young Sword Saint?

Even the human female Heir hadn't cultivated the sword to this point.

“A domineering and cruel figure has arrived. Immediately notify the Beast King.”

“So scary! He just moved a finger and already killed the Alligator General. He's a Pre-Saint but didn't even have the chance to escape before getting killed.”

...

The savage beasts were in terror and immediately notified the Beast Kings fighting in the city. Only a Beast King could stop him.

Zhang Ruochen stopped around 300 feet from the city gate. He looked at the humans hanging on the wall with calm eyes.

Wan Huayu's voice was weak. “Hurry and leave... Yingsha City has already...been lost... You can't change anything. Once the Beast Kings come out, you can't leave e-even...even if you...try...”

Zhang Ruochen didn't answer. Ignoring Wan Huayu, he studied the nails in their bodies and discovered beams of powerful Spiritual Power. The black nails were actually Spiritual Power implements. They sealed their strength so they couldn't escape and could only watch as they bled to death.

“Such strong Spiritual Power. It seems that there must be a Beast King that focuses on Spiritual Power.”

Zhang Ruochen could estimate the level of the Spiritual Power from the ripples contained in the metal nails. This Beast King

was very close to level 50 and was even stronger than Zhang Ruochen.

He reached out. Spreading his fingers, he cast his Spiritual Power. The black nails in the hundreds of humans on the wall trembled with grating noises.

The humans were all shaken. They were clear how terrifying the owner of the nails in their bodies was. They'd already submitted to their fate, thinking that they would definitely die. There was no way to escape.

But a young and handsome man had appeared out of nowhere. He even had Spiritual Power strong enough to shake the nails stabbed into them.

“Collect.”

Zhang Ruochen clenched his fist and pulled his arm back. The hundreds of black nails flew out at once. Under Zhang Ruochen's control, they circled in the air and flew toward the beasts atop the wall.

Amid pained cries, more than a hundred beasts fell from the towering walls. Hundreds of humans slid down from the wall. When they landed, they sprawled on the ground, coughing up blood.

Around 200 humans were still alive but with severe injuries. Of course, those that were still alive were all the strongest of the strong.

Everyone looked at Zhang Ruochen gratefully. Respect and curiosity also colored their eyes. Who exactly was he? How could he be so skilled in both Spiritual Power and the Sword Way?

Roar!

Just then, a Beast King's roar spread out from within Yingsha City. The roar and clattering of hooves approached, rushing out toward the city gates.

Chapter 1088 - He Is Zhang Ruochen

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The ground shook more and more violently. A Beast King charged toward the city gates. The powerful and wild aura flooded out from inside the city.

The injured humans below the city wall all repressed their wounds and immediately escaped. With their current weak state, the Beast King could kill them with an exhale.

However, they realized that instead of escaping, the young man stood straight in front of the city gates. A semi-transparent shield of light wrapped around him, stopping the air current from surging out.

“Hurry and run! A Beast King is charging,” a heavily injured elder yelled while escaping. “If you don’t run, you’ll die here.”

“Oh no. He must be targeted by the Beast King already,” someone guessed. “He can’t move at all.”

Why else wouldn’t he run when he discovered the Beast King’s aura?

Bloody light flowed out of the city gates, dyeing the surrounding world red. The fleeing humans who were touched by the red light were all locked. Then a powerful weight pressed down on them so they couldn’t move at all.

“So we still can’t escape?”

Everyone felt bitter inside. They looked back and saw two huge mountains charge out of the red light.

No.

They weren't mountains—they were two Beast Kings.

Two Lion Camel Beast Kings charged out. They were more than 700 feet tall and just like two quickly moving mountains. Their auras were bigger than two savage barren mountains, shaking their souls.

“Where is that cruel figure? Come out to die!”

“How dare you humans run? I will capture you all and punish you cruelly. I'll break your legs first and see if you can keep running.”

The two Lion Camel beast Kings seemed able to swallow mountains. When they spoke, their words were like huge bells. The newly-freed humans spat out blood and fell to the ground from the vibrations.

They locked onto the fleeing humans and rushed out.

Standing before the two Beast Kings, Zhang Ruochen seemed tiny. Compared to them, he was like an ant.

The two Lion Camels didn't know he was the “cruel figure.” They stomped forward, about to turn him into flattened pie.

When they were around 100 feet from Zhang Ruochen, he raised his arms. Two beams of Holy Light appeared with crackling noises.

Argh!

Roar!

A dragon's roar and elephant's cry sounded.

Zhang Ruochen's aura sharpened. A blue dragon and elephant's apparition appeared on either side of him. These two images were even bigger than the two Lion Camel Beast Kings. Their auras were much stronger too, and were even comparable to an ancient divine dragon or hellish elephant.

The two Lion Camel Beast Kings were shocked. Things seemed wrong.

A boundless world seemed to be contained within the tiny human. Horrifying might spewed out of him.

Kaboom.

Zhang Ruochen slapped forward and the dragon and elephant shot out. They crashed against the two Lion Camel Beast Kings, sending them flying. It was like two metal mountains clashing. The huge noise could shatter a lower-level monk's eardrums.

“Dragon in Nine Days!”

Pushing off, Zhang Ruochen flew into the sky. He hit out two hand prints again, performing the tenth palm of the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm. He unleashed 42 times the combat power.

His palm transformed into a dragon claw and elephant hoof, falling onto the two Lion Camel Beast Kings. They crashed into the city walls, making them cave in.

Kaboom!

The two Beast Kings fell into the rumble. Countless 10,000-pound rocks buried them. A river of blood flowed out from the jumble of rocks.

The humans almost went dumb with shock from this scene. It was too bloody! It had only been the first clash, but the two Beast Kings were already suppressed and buried under the rocks, bleeding.

Who would believe this if they hadn't seen it with their own eyes?

“Who is he? Is it Xue Wuye, the heir of the Sword Emperor?”

“No, no. He's cultivated the tenth palm of the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm and can suppress a Beast King with his hands. He must be Master Lidi with the golden Buddhist Emperor body.”

“He doesn't look like a Buddhist monk though.”

Wan Huayu stood in the desert filled with corpses. Her injury had already scabbed over and was no longer bleeding. With troubled eyes, she stared at the lonely but proud figure walking into the city.

“He is the Time and Space Descendant, Zhang Ruochen.”

She remembered now. She'd indeed seen Zhang Ruochen before, but it had been his wanted poster.

“He's Zhang Ruochen?”

“Ah! I should've guessed. I heard many legends about him in my family. Apparently, he won't lose to Xue Wuye in the Sword Way, won't lost to Yuan Suihan in Spiritual Power talent, and his Five Elements Chaotic Body won't lose to Master Lidi's Undying Golden Body. He has the strong points of the three top Heirs and also the powers of time and space. He's the top human figure since the middle ages.”

This came from a beautiful woman. She looked up to Zhang Ruochen and had gotten a lot of information about him from various sources. Now that she saw him, she wasn't disappointed at all. Zhang Ruochen was as handsome as she'd imagined and his combat ability was shocking too. He could suppress a Beast King with his bare hands. This excited her greatly.

“Zhang Ruochen had risked his life and entered the netherworld to save his master, Sword Saint Xuanji, by finding the pill of resurrection. He really values relationships.”

“He once used the stone tablet from the Thousand-bone Empress to block the way to the netherworld, stopping the dead spirits from entering. He saved millions of humans. I don't understand why the Empress wants to arrest him.”

The young woman looked toward Yingsha City and sighed. She thought it was unfair to Zhang Ruochen.

Kaboom!

The two Lion Camel Beast Kings stood back up from within the rocks. They had very strong vitality. They didn't die from Zhang Ruochen's full-power strike. However, they both had palm-sized holes in their stomachs and were still bleeding.

“I wasn't being serious before. Let us fight again.”

“Attack with our ancestral weapons. We must kill him.”

The two Beast Kings knew that this young man was very strong and they were both injured. Thus, they each spat out a round stone disc. It was only 90 feet long, but it was extraordinarily heavy and radiated with an eerie bloody light.

The two discs stacked atop each other. Squiggly runes appeared on the surface and a huge savage power rushed out. It felt ancient, aged, and more aggressive than the Destruction of the Thousand Patterns.

Zhang Ruochen stopped walking. His expression unchanging, he waved an arm and cut down before him. He formed a long spatial crack.

The ancient power bursting from the stone disc crashed into the spatial crack and immediately disappeared without hurting Zhang Ruochen.

The two Lion Camel Beast Kings realized something was wrong. They'd really ran into a cruel figure today. He could tear apart the space without using saintly power. He could even control the broken space to some aspect.

Even the ancestral weapon couldn't dominate him.

Whoosh!

At some point, the cruel figure had teleported to behind them. The two Beast Kings were very alert. They immediately controlled the stone disc to attack the human again. They didn't believe that he could block the ancient force every time.

However, Zhang Ruochen's attack arrived first.

“Die!”

The Abyss Ancient Sword flew out with a trail of black light. It struck one Beast King's stomach. It pierced the scales and the sword light stretched up to its back.

With a poof, the Beast King's body was split apart. The left and right halves fell to the ground heavily.

The other Beast King realized it couldn't defeat this cruel human. Even escaping was difficult, so it roared, “You killed my companion... How dare you... Human, you are dead!”

Without hesitating, it used an ancient spell. It activated all the Holy Qi within it, directing it to its Sea of Qi. It was going to explode its Sea of Qi in a suicide attack.

Zhang Ruochen sensed the extreme danger. All his hair stood up straight. However, he didn't panic. He chose decisively to activate the Abyss Ancient Sword, and stabbed at the Beast King's Sea of Qi.

Whoosh!

The Abyss Ancient Sword spun quickly with a grating noise. Finally, it pierced the Sea of Qi before the Beast King could do so.

With a huge boom, wild Holy Qi flooded out of the Sea of Qi. It crashed around, forming pillars of light. The Beast King's physical body exploded. The huge mountain-like body still fell in the end.

After performing the sword technique, Zhang Ruochen immediately flew backward to avoid the Beast King's last desperate attempt.

The previous situation had been extremely dangerous. If Zhang Ruochen had hesitated a tiny bit, he wouldn't be able to retreat unhurt like this.

Whoosh!

The Abyss Ancient Sword flew back, piercing the stone disc in the air.

The stone disc was very big. It was an ancestral weapon of the Lion Camel Race and had a weapon spirit. Even the Abyss Ancient Sword had to take some time to repress and refine it.

After absorbing the stone disc's savage and ancient Qi, it glowed brightly. Sword Qi flew into the air, scaring all the surrounding beasts and making them run into the city.

It was too terrifying. A dominating human had appeared, killing two Beast Kings in a row.

A large group of humans had retreated into the center of Yingsha City. They'd activated the last level of the defensive formation and were struggling to survive.

All the Beast Kings were gathered there. They led countless savage beasts to attack the last defensive formation wildly. If they could penetrate it, then all the humans would die.

This battle also had a far-reaching effect for the humans. It determined the fate of humanity for the coming centuries. If they all died, there would be an obvious difference in abilities of the future strong human cultivators.

Chapter 1089 - City Center

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The center of Yingsha City was a vast greenstone square. It had eight towers around it. The defensive formation was set up with the towers as the foundation points.

At the moment, around 20% of the humans were still alive. They'd grouped up in the square and hid within the defensive formation. They withstood the beasts' attack with difficulty.

The humans that could survive obviously weren't weak. However, the endless battle had used up most of their Holy Qi. They were all exhausted and unable to keep going for long.

Dawn had come, but surrounded by beasts, they couldn't see the light at all.

“Die!”

“Kill!”

...

Beast Kings were all around them. They attacked together with dozens of shockingly powerful ancestral weapons. If one looked from afar, one would see dozens of star-like objects falling on a shield of light.

Boom! Boom!

The shield formed by the defensive formation shook violently under the attack of a dozen ancestral weapons. White rings rippled out. It was like a thin bubble that could burst at any time.

Below it, everyone held their breaths. They looked up nervously. The defensive formation blocked the dozens of

attacks and didn't break. However, it had become much more transparent.

How many more hits could it take? Everyone let out long exhales and wiped their cold sweat.

Many of them were extremely fatigued. They hadn't rested in a long time and had used up most of their Holy Qi. They'd used up all their pills too. Once the defensive formation broke, they would most likely die here.

Even the strongest two Heirs weren't as composed as before.

They also exerted the most energy. During the continuous battle last night, they'd used the Heir Stamp—their strongest weapon.

Each time they used the Heir Stamp, a portion of their Holy Qi would be used up. Other than that, they used very costly murderous tactics to kill dozens of Beast Kings.

Chi Wansui's golden saint light dimmed. His hair was loose and his body was covered in blood. He looked like an exhausted general on the bloody battlefield.

Beigong Lan had also lost her fairy-like temperament. Her white robe was spattered with blood. Each blood spot had a hole beneath it. There was even a bloody claw mark on her back that had almost gone straight through her body.

Most of these grave injuries were from the last desperate attacks by Beast Kings before they'd died. If other Half-Saints had gotten these injuries, they would've died no matter how strong they were. Beigong Lan had a special physique allowing her to survive until now.

The Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon transformed into human form with a pair of dragon wings and black horns. Powerful demonic Qi surged out, forming a huge vortex of clouds.

He stood in the sky and called out to Chi Wansui, "Chi Wansui, if you surrender and become my slave, I can consider setting these 10,000 humans free."

There were thousands of humans left on the square. When they heard the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon's words, they were all furious.

He actually wanted the Heir to become his slave?

The Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon was clear that even if they broke the defensive formation and killed 90% of the humans, they still couldn't kill the Heirs. They had trump cards and could escape.

However, to the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon, it would be a great regret if he couldn't capture the two Heirs. After all, the Heirs were the strongest of all humans. They had very unique statuses. Not only were they the Empress' disciples, they were also the heirs of the human emperor.

Not even 10,000 human elites were comparable to an Heir. Only capturing the two Heirs could hurt the human race enough. Also, when they returned to Kunlun's Field, only then would they be able to negotiate with the Empress.

It would be best if they could capture all nine Heirs.

At the same time, the Yak Beast King yelled to Beigong Lan, "If you are willing to be my slave, I can consider freeing 10,000 humans too."

The Yak Beast King stood on the ground, not too far from the greenstone square. Its body was like a small mountain and very strong. It called directly to Beigong Lan, wanting to make the female Heir submit to him.

The Yak Beast King was very strong. It was second only to the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon.

"Fight them! Worst case scenario, we all die."

"Heirs, you cannot become their slaves. Even if we die, we die without regret."

...

"Don't you humans talk about retreating when necessary?" the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon yelled again. "Submit to me for now and you can save 10,000 lives. You won't lose at

all. You might even defeat me one day and escape from my control.”

Hearing this, Chi Wansui tightened his fists. Fire raged within him.

He knew what the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon was doing. In addition to negotiating with him, it was dividing the humans present. After all, as long as he nodded, he could save many people. But if he didn't, the people here would most likely die.

Who didn't want to live on?

The Yak Beast King pushed dark air out of its nose as if huffed. “You can save 20,000 humans, but you're not willing to sacrifice yourself. Even if you escape successfully, you won't qualify to become emperors with your character.”

There were some humans who were willing to die with the two Heirs. However, there were also some that kept silent and glanced over at Chi Wansui and Beigong Lan with anticipation.

This silence didn't last for too long.

A deafening boom suddenly came from the city gates. Then everyone in the city center saw a horde of beasts running over from the gates. They were in a panic as if running for their lives.

“A powerful human is killing his way into the city! He killed two Lion Camel Beast Kings in a row!”

“Demonic Dragon Lord, he is a cruel man. He killed thousands of beasts by himself and is unstoppable. Only you can suppress him.”

News of the horrible figure reaching Yingsha City quickly stirred up a commotion. All the humans in the square were excited. They guessed that human reinforcements had arrived.

The various Beast Kings were caught off-guard. How could there be another strong human cultivator near Yingsha City?

The two Lion Camel Beast Kings weren't the strongest, but killing them at once wasn't easy.

Zhang Ruochen walked down the widest street in Yingsha City with a steady pace. He walked forward, step by step.

Each step was hundreds of feet apart.

At the same time, the Abyss Ancient Sword flew above his head, dragging out thousands of beams of Sword Qi. They swept in all directions. Any beast that tried to stop him was killed instantly.

As he walked, thousands of beast corpses were already piled on the ground.

During this entire time, Zhang Ruochen never moved a finger. He only used his Sword Intent to control the Sword Qi and already frightened the beasts so much that they fled into the city center.

Usual Pre-Saints would have used up all their Holy Qi by using the Sword Way like him. However, Zhang Ruochen had built a strong foundation in the four martial arts realms. He'd resonated with the gods four times. Each time, his Sea of Qi widened ten times more than the usual Monk. This way, his Sea of Qi was 10,000 times larger than the average man.

This had slowed down Zhang Ruochen's cultivation speed, but it allowed him to have better stamina.

The savage beasts in the city center were lined up in a formation as if facing a great enemy.

Zhang Ruochen gradually slowed down and looked at the savage beasts. Finally, his eyes locked onto the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon.

"Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon, I will propose an exchange with you. I want to use a savage beast to exchange the lives of all humans."

He faced the tens of thousands of beasts by himself, but Zhang Ruochen was still calm and fearless. Merely that composed aura scared many of the Beast Kings. They knew that he wasn't a simple figure.

Chapter 1090 - A Sliver Of Hope

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

All the Beast Kings were shocked, but then they started laughing and staring at Zhang Ruochen as if he was an idiot. Did he not know who the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon was?

He wanted to use a savage beast's life to negotiate with the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon?

The humans within the defensive formation felt a bit disappointed. They'd thought that powerful reinforcements were here, but instead, only a single person came. No matter how strong someone was, how could he change anything?

Even if it was Master Lidi or Xue Wuye, in the top five of the Half-Saint Rank, would they be able to change the tides?

“You aren't qualified to negotiate with me.”

The Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon never even looked at Zhang Ruochen. So what if he had killed two Lion Camel Beast Kings?

They were naturally weak and weren't top fighters at all. The Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon was strong enough and had very high standards. Only those on the Half-Saint Rank were qualified to speak to him.

Roar!

A Golden Scorpion Beast King roared, spitting out deafening sound waves. He formed a 370-foot-high black beastly shadow that charged toward Zhang Ruochen.

Humans should be killed directly instead of wasting time talking to them.

The Golden Scorpion Beast King was an ancient race and 56th on the Half-Saint Rank. He was even stronger than Princess White Li. Merely his sound waves were very destructive.

The black beastly shadow and gale demolished the buildings between the beast and Zhang Ruochen. It quickly flew to Zhang Ruochen.

He stood in place and pointed forward. The thousands upon thousands of Sword Qi immediately grouped over, forming a 120-foot-long sword.

Whoosh—

The sword light fell down, hacking apart the black beastly shadow formed by sound waves. It dissipated.

Next, the Golden Scorpion Beast King's tail swept over toward Zhang Ruochen. There were thorns on the tail that were even sharper than a saint sword. It scraped past a huge stone altar, slicing it in half immediately.

The Golden Scorpion Beast King had boundless strength. The golden scorpion tail was an extremely powerful tactic too. It had killed more than 100 human Half-Saints with this trick.

Zhang Ruochen didn't escape. He opened his hand and grabbed in the air. The Abyss Ancient Sword flew back. Zhang Ruochen grabbed the sword and cut down, using a trick from the True-Thunder Fire Sword Technique.

“Heavenly Thunder World.”

A long beam of black sword light surged out of the tip of the Abyss Ancient Sword. It crashed into the golden scorpion tail with the power of lightning and thunder.

Boom!

Zhang Ruochen flew back more than 200 feet before landing again. His right hand that had held the sword was in immense pain. His entire arm was numb.

No wonder it's 56th on the Half-Saint Rank, Zhang Ruochen thought. It shouldn't be underestimated.

After circulating the Holy Qi through him quickly, the pain and numbness of his right arm quickly disappeared.

The Golden Scorpion Beast King wasn't well off either. A ten-foot-long gash opened up on its tail. It pierced the golden shell and made it bleed.

One must know that ever since the Golden Scorpion Beast King became well-known, only Chi Wansui, one of the nine Heirs, could pierce its shell and make it bleed.

Chi Wansui was a monstrous figure, ninth on the Half-Saint Rank. He also had to use the Heir Stamp to accomplish this.

All the Beast Kings present knew how strong the Golden Scorpion Beast King's defense was. Anyone who could penetrate its defense must be a powerful and dangerous person.

Some of the Beast Kings started moving. Some went to Zhang Ruochen's right or flew to his upper left. Others cut off his exit path. They were very serious, as if facing a great enemy. They treated him as seriously as the two Heirs.

The Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon turned around. It studied Zhang Ruochen carefully and finally took this young man seriously. "Now, you are qualified to report your name!"

Zhang Ruochen scanned the surroundings. He saw at least eight Beast Kings within 200 feet of him. Even some lower Saints would choose to escape immediately. Eight Beast Kings was enough to kill a Saint.

Zhang Ruochen didn't show any fear though. Staring straight at the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon, he said, "Zhang Ruochen."

The Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon clearly had some knowledge about this figure. Hearing the name, its eyes flashed. "You're that Time and Space Descendant?"

"I guess!" Zhang Ruochen said.

The Monks on the greenstone square were all shocked. They hadn't guessed that the young man who'd killed his way into Yingsha City was the famous Time and Space Descendant, Zhang Ruochen.

A Half-Saint from the Ministry of War felt incredulous. "Zhang Ruochen really risked everything to come save us?"

"Everyone has misunderstandings of Zhang Ruochen," Beigong Lan said. "The Empress wants to arrest him and he seems to be a horrible criminal. He's not a cruel man though. Instead, he's done many impressive feats."

Earlier, news had spread that Lin Yue of the Yin and Yang Sect was very possibly Zhang Ruochen. Lin Yue had helped Beigong Lan before, so she'd specifically read some material about Zhang Ruochen.

At that time, she learned that she and Zhang Ruochen were both genius students of the Martial City Academy. If the Empress' verdict hadn't turned him into a wanted criminal, he wouldn't have left at all.

As Zhang Ruochen's background was gradually revealed, many Monks had positive feelings toward him.

Yingsha City had already fallen, but Zhang Ruochen still dared to come in. This courage and loyalty impressed countless human cultivators.

The Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon was clear about his cultivation realm. "You have big potential and could be a nice opponent. However, you really don't treasure your own life. You're only a Seventh Level Half-Saint and yet you dare to appear before me?"

"Since I came, I'm obviously confident I can leave."

Zhang Ruochen was composed. He waved his sleeve and the space around him warped. Next, three figures walked out of the space. They were the three top figures of the White Li Cat Race—Princess White Li and the two white-haired elders.

The Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon's gaze fell upon Princess White Li and quickly looked away. It snorted coldly.

“You actually captured Princess White Li. That’s quite something.”

“So, I will use Princess White Li’s life to exchange for all the humans of Yingsha City,” Zhang Ruochen said. “What do you think?”

All the Beast Kings present knew about the close relationship between the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon and Princess White Li. They may become companions.

This human had actually kidnapped Princess White Li to threaten the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon. He wasn’t the typical kind of brave.

Would the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon destroy the human in anger? Or would it choose to surrender and release all the humans of Yingsha City? No one was sure what the beast would do.

Demonic Qi rolled off of it. It thickened, casting half of Yingsha City into darkness. It was clear that the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon was furious.

“Don’t you know that dragons have reversed scales connected to our hearts?” the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon roared. “White Li is my reversed scale. How dare you touch her?”

Zhang Ruochen stood on the ground. Hands behind his back, he looked up. “So what if I touch her?”

The Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon turned and transformed into its original form. A black dragon, dozens of miles long, appeared in the air. The huge dragon head looked down at Zhang Ruochen.

“I can tell you two things. First, no matter what happens today, every human in Yingsha City will die. Second, you will be punished cruelly. I’ll make sure you wish you were dead.”

Zhang Ruochen furrowed his brow. He didn’t expect the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon to be insistent. Not even Princess White Li could stop it from doing what it wanted to.

“Actually, we can try another negotiation method,” Zhang Ruochen said.

“Speak,” the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon uttered.

“We’ll each take a step back. As long as all the Beast Kings in Yingsha City retreat to 10,000 miles away, I’ll return Princess White Li to you. How about that?”

The Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon obviously knew what Zhang Ruochen meant. The Time and Space Descendant wanted to fight for a chance for all the humans in the city to live.

As long as all the Beast Kings retreated, the remaining beasts wouldn’t be able to stop the humans at all. Of course, 10,000 miles wasn’t far for a Beast King. It would only take around an hour total to hurry back.

As long as the humans could break through the siege before the Beast Kings returned, they’d be able to survive. If they couldn’t break out in an hour, they could only die.

There are too many beasts in Yingsha City, the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon thought. The humans won’t be able to break out in an hour at all.

It couldn’t figure out any way for the humans to escape. Snickering, it said, “Your request isn’t that bad.”

“So you agree?” Zhang Ruochen smiled.

“Yes!”

In addition to the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon, there were 18 Beast Kings in the city. Zhang Ruochen took Princess White Li out of Yingsha City first.

The Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon followed behind them the entire time so Zhang Ruochen couldn’t escape.

The 18 Beast Kings didn’t fly up and hurry over until Zhang Ruochen and the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon were 10,000 miles away.

After the Beast Kings all retreated, the humans of Yingsha City immediately started fighting back with all their might.

“Kill. Kill them!”

“Zhang Ruochen has used his life to win an hour for us. We can’t let his death go to waste!”

The humans all believed that Zhang Ruochen would definitely die. After all, he was facing 19 Beast Kings. There was no way he could survive.

They were about to die today, but Zhang Ruochen had used his own life to force the tides to turn. He’d flipped nature to get them a chance to survive. Many of the humans felt ineffable gratitude and emotions.

Chapter 1091 - One Versus All Beast Kings

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Spiritual Qi quickly surged and formed enormous whirlpools ten thousand miles away from Yingsha City.

Inside each whirlpool stood a beast king.

They were either still as enormous as other savage beasts or had already turned into human forms. Different visions were formed around them, yet there was one thing in common.

There were powerful forces coming out of their bodies, so powerful that there was lightning and storms on the ground, snuffing out the light around them. If other creatures trespassed, they would be too scared to even stand up.

“Ao!”

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon was flying in the sky and making a deep sound, “Zhang Ruochen, I’ve already fulfilled my part of the deal. It’s time for you to fulfill your part to give me White Li Princess.”

“Of course.”

Zhang Ruochen looked calm. He then said, “I’m just not sure whether White Li Princess is willing to go with you or not.”

“What do you mean?”

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon looked to White Li Princess. It realized that White Li didn’t feel like before. It said, “Come to my side, White Li.”

White Li Princess looked at Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon who was flying in the sky. She curled her red lips and looked confused. She asked, “Will you be my saddle horse?”

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon realized that something was wrong. It turned its head and glared at Zhang Ruochen, yelling in anger, “What did you do to her?”

“All I did was to take away her memories. That’s all,” Zhang Ruochen said.

“Give me back her memory origin pearl.”

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon dived through the clouds. It reached out its enormous black claw that was as big as a palace, exploding a tumbling demonic force.

Before the claw could reach Zhang Ruochen, the land under Zhang Ruochen started to cave in.

Obviously, Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon wanted to kill Zhang Ruochen with that claw.

Zhang Ruochen knew that he was not a match of Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon now, so he shouldn’t resist it directly.

However, he still wanted to test for himself how powerful Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon was. Instead of backing down, he squeezed the Abyss Ancient Sword and started to utilize Sword Intent.

“Sword... Five...”

Zhang Ruochen just achieved Human Sword, and he was about to perform Sword Five, the completeness realm, yet he heard a whisper.

“Careful.”

A beautiful being flashed beside Zhang Ruochen, then, White Li Princess grabbed Zhang Ruochen’s arms and performed Short Distance Poles Apart Pace, gliding through the crack between the dragon claws and rushing tens of miles away.

After all, White Li Princess didn’t hate Zhang Ruochen.

If she had to choose between Zhang Ruochen and Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, she would naturally choose Zhang Ruochen who she was more familiar with. At least Zhang Ruochen didn't look like a bad guy.

As for Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, it reeked of belligerence, which made her uncomfortable.

Both Zhang Ruochen and Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon were dazed as they didn't expect something like this to happen.

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon was infuriated. It yelled, "All the savage beasts, get back to Yingsha City and kill all the human monks!"

"Ao! Ao! Ao!"

All the savage beasts in the desert started to howl.

Eighteen savage beasts rushed toward Yingsha City.

Zhang Ruochen had calculated it before. One half was too short, so even if the human monks were all able to make it out of Yingsha City, they wouldn't be able to make it too far, so they might be annihilated in the end.

Which was why he had to stall those beast kings as long as possible.

Every minute he won was a higher chance for human monks to survive.

"Did I say you can come back to Yingsha City?"

Zhang Ruochen was very aggressive. Suddenly, a fierce storm was formed, centering on his body. His cape shook and his hair was fluttering in the wind.

He looked majestic. He took a step forward and stepped on the ground.

"Hong Long!"

The power of space gushed out and spread.

The space structure within a hundred square miles around started to collapse, which led to hundreds of enormous cracks,

sweeping across all the beast kings.

Those beast kings trying to make it back to Yingsha City had to retreat.

Even Zhang Ruochen didn't know his upper limit in Blue Dragon Void World as the space structure here was very fragile. All he needed to do was to trigger some space power if he wanted to shatter the space.

There couldn't be a better battle zone for the Time and Space Descendant.

Some beast kings opened their wings wide and flew up, ready to leave in a different direction.

“Where do you want to go?”

Zhang Ruochen pressed the space with his palm, and exerted another space force, destroying the space structure, turning that piece of sky into chaos.

Beast kings were all sharp enough to dodge it immediately.

Meanwhile, the shattered space also forced them to retreat.

“What a reckless bastard. Do you really think you can fight all the beast kings?” Mud Deer Beast King was irritated, yelling at Zhang Ruochen.

“Do you really think you can handle the anger of all beast kings?” Some of the beast kings shouted at Zhang Ruochen in the lower sky.

“How do you want to die, Zhang Ruochen?”

...

Zhang Ruochen was only a human nobody, yet he arrogantly thought that he could resist all the beast kings. Even the human saints didn't dare to do so.

Wan Huayu and the others who were standing hundreds of miles away were also amazed.

What is Zhang Ruochen doing?

Does he want to fight all the beast kings by himself?

Wan Huayu, Shangguan Linglong and some others had made their way out of Yingsha City and arrived at some hidden spots already. They saw Zhang Ruochen and savage beast kings fly out of Yingsha City, so they assumed that something important was happening. They then followed up and saw such a thrilling scene.

“He’s indeed my hero...Chen! So cool!”

That female monk who had been admiring Zhang Ruochen couldn’t look more excited. There was awe in her eyes.

She swore that if she could get back to Kunlun’s Field alive, she would definitely write the deeds of Zhang Ruochen into a book and publicize them.

It didn’t matter whether Zhang Ruochen was able to resist all the savage beasts or not as the move he just made was exuberant and incomparable.

No matter how this day would end, it would be a legend of Zhang Ruochen.

Even Wan Huayu who was always rational was now thrilled. If she wasn’t severely injured, she would’ve rushed toward Zhang Ruochen and fought side by side with him.

It didn’t even matter that he was a felon of the dynasty.

“No wonder my father admires Zhang Ruochen this much. He’s indeed an exceptional human being. He is the bravest and has the greatest potential.”

Although this was only the first time that she met Zhang Ruochen, she already appreciated him, and even worshipped him.

She was also a girl with great pride, yet she now worshipped another youngster, which was rare.

Perhaps some people had special charms in the world.

“Let’s team up and kill him, then we’ll go kill other human monks.”

The savage beasts tried to make a sortie several times, yet they were all obstructed by the shattered space. They decided

unanimously that they should kill Zhang Ruochen first.

If all the savage beasts could cooperate and made an attack at the same time, they could annihilate him.

Kui Bull Beast King and Golden Scorpion King made the first attacks.

Kui Bull Beast King was a Taigu remnant, and it was ranked forty-two on 'Half-Saint Rank.' It was the most powerful one aside from Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, and it was as powerful as one of the nine heirs, Beigong Lan.

As for Golden Scorpion King, it was the third most powerful beast king.

When they cooperated, even Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon needed to take them seriously, not to mention Zhang Ruochen, a mere level-seven half saint.

“Mou!”

Kui Bull Beast King roared, and its green hair immediately turned black.

There was an immensely powerful mind power ripple in its roaring.

That mind power went into Zhang Ruochen's body, combined with its sound waves.

Though Zhang Ruochen realized the attack in time and immediately mobilized his mind power to resist the sound waves, his saint soul was still fiercely shaken and got slightly injured.

Zhang Ruochen lost his attention for a short while, and his eyes started to gleam again.

At this moment, Zhang Ruochen saw hundreds of hairs flying out of the body of Kui Bull Beast King, piercing toward him.

Each hair looked like an iron barb that was ten feet long with mind power ripples.

If Zhang Ruochen didn't have level-forty-nine mind power to resist the sound waves from Kui Bull Beast King in time, he

would have been pierced through by all the hundreds of hairs and been rendered a lump.

“Remarkable creature! Is it Kui Bull Beast King who is ranked forty-second on ‘Half-Saint Rank’?”

Zhang Ruochen tried to dodge the attack while wielding his Abyss Ancient Sword, which formed a group of sword shadows, resisting all the black hairs.

The hair was so solid that even the Abyss Ancient Sword couldn’t cut it.

With such sturdy black hair, the defense power of Kui Bull Beast King was only slightly weaker than that of the Golden Scorpion King.

What was surprising to Zhang Ruochen was that White Li Princess warded off the attacks from Golden Scorpion King so that he wasn’t struck in the front and rear.

He wondered how Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon would feel if it saw that.

“No wonder you’re the Time and Space Descendant. Impressive indeed,” Kui Bull Beast King said with a cold voice.

Kui Bull Beast King had incredible mind power, which was close to level fifty, which was much stronger than that of Zhang Ruochen.

This was actually a talent of Kui Bulls. Also, Kui Bull Beast King devoted its major energies to mind power, so it certainly had better mind power than Zhang Ruochen.

Shua Shua!

Thousands of black hairs flew out of Kui Bull Beast King, which gathered with the previous hundreds of bull hairs, turning into a black river, rushing toward Zhang Ruochen.

Kui Bull Beast King became more and more powerful, and it seemed that it could overcome everything. It would do everything to suppress Zhang Ruochen.

“Heir Stamp.”

Zhang Ruochen took out his Heir Stamp from his space ring. He held it in his hands and mobilized Holy Qi in his body.

All of a sudden, a golden emperor Qi gushed out, warding off all the bull hairs.

Even Kui Bull Beast King took three steps back before it could balance itself again. It left three giant footprints on the ground.

“How does Zhang Ruochen have an heir stamp?”

Those beast kings were pretty intimidated by heir stamps. A while ago, Chi Wansui and Beigong Lan used their heir stamps to kill several beast kings, which impressed and terrified them.

However, with Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, Kui Bull Beast King and Golden Scorpion King by their side, all the beast kings were so confident that they weren't even scared of Zhang Ruochen's heir stamp.

“Let me see how powerful you are.”

Seeing Kui Bull Beast King struggle to defeat Zhang Ruochen, Mud Deer Beast King joined the fight.

“I'll also fight you.”

“I'm Shizu Bird Beast King, and let's see how long you can last.”

...

After only fifteen minutes, seven beast kings joined the fight, and all of them were powerful. They performed their best attacking techniques, trying to annihilate Zhang Ruochen.

Chapter 1092 - Fight Nineteen Beast Kings Alone

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“Hua La!”

Mysterious Hedgehog Beast King stood among the black mist, and it was more than a hundred feet tall. It was a black hedgehog. It opened its mouth wide and exhaled toward Zhang Ruochen.

Inside the Holy Qi condensed more than one hundred lightning bolts, turning into a highly destructive electric river.

In another direction, two beast kings utilized ancestral devices at the same time, triggering ancient power.

One of the ancestral devices was a crimson antelope horn which was more than twenty feet long. It was extremely pointy. There were blazing flames gushing out of the horn, covering the sky within tens of square miles with fiery clouds.

The other ancestral device was a jade that was as large as a water tank, and the energy ripples coming from that tank were larger than those from the antelope horn.

All the seven beast kings performed their powerful techniques, and each technique was earth-shattering and terrifying.

Even the human monks who were standing hundreds of miles away could feel the danger as there might be strong repercussion gliding through them.

Even the repercussion was enough to kill them.

At the center was Zhang Ruochen fighting seven beast kings, and nobody knew how long he could last.

Zhang Ruochen was under lots of pressure, and he couldn't be more cautious and concentrated.

“Space distortion.”

Zhang Ruochen waved his hands, forming circles of half-transparent ripples, yet they all deviated and didn't fall on Zhang Ruochen.

Certainly, it wasn't an easy task to resolve the attacks from all the seven beast kings, even with the space power he had.

Zhang Ruochen had consumed lots of Holy Qi. If he kept fighting those seven beast kings like that, he would die after running out of Holy Qi even if he could survive the seven beast kings.

He stopped defending and started to attack. Zhang Ruochen took a step forward and performed spatial move, getting out of the encirclement of the seven savage beasts and arriving above Mud Deer Beast King.

“Hua!”

He slashed down with his Abyss Ancient Sword, which left a trace of black sword light more than sixty feet long. It was arc-shaped and looked much like a black moon falling from the sky.

Mud Deer Beast King was horrified. It immediately used an ancestral device that looked like a triangular shield, resisting the attack from Zhang Ruochen.

The Abyss Ancient Sword slashed down beside the ancestral device shield, making a shrill noise and gleaming flares.

Mud Deer Beast King took a couple of steps back as it felt terrified.

It was alarmingly dangerous just now. If it didn't dodge it perfectly in time, it would either be killed or be severely injured.

Spatial power was indeed bizarre. It could go beyond the space, distort the space and tear the space apart.

Zhang Ruochen's skills left all the beast kings dazzled, and they couldn't take him down in a short while.

"If that Time and Space Descendant matures, he will definitely become a major enemy of all the savage beasts," a beast king said about Zhang Ruochen.

"Empress Chi Yao alone is powerful enough to suppress all the savage beasts for hundreds of years. If that Time and Space Descendant becomes a supreme saint, savage beasts will be subjugated in the next thousand years," another beast king said.

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon was also paying attention to what was happening in the war zone. It gave an order to beast kings who were not fighting Zhang Ruochen, "Other beast kings, get back to Yingsha City now. As long as I am here, the Time and Space Descendant will certainly die."

"Rest assured, lord demonic dragon. We will definitely kill all the human monks."

The other eleven beast kings rushed toward Yingsha City.

At this moment, Zhang Ruochen was checked by the seven savage beasts. He was even unable to fend for himself. It seemed that he would die soon, so there would be no one able to ward them off.

Zhang Ruochen shot a glance at those eleven beast kings, and he started to think rapidly.

"Great spatial Move."

Zhang Ruochen moved his body and transported himself tens of miles away, catching up with a beast king that had turned into its human shape.

"Where are you going?" Zhang Ruochen yelled.

That beast king was from the Teng Snake Clan, and she was a beautiful woman wearing black armor in its human form. Her waist was flexible and thin, and her skin was bronze-colored.

She had already passed the second pre-saint trial, and she was also a descendant of divine beasts, carrying the bloodline of divine beasts. She was naturally powerful.

Teng Snake Beast King was shocked that Zhang Ruochen suddenly showed up.

At this moment...

“Hua!”

Zhang Ruochen performed Scales Sword Technique, combining the time mark and his sword technique, piercing toward the eyebrows of Teng Snake Beast King.

The pace of time was slowed around Zhang Ruochen, yet his sword moved faster.

“Pu Chi.”

Teng Snake Beast King didn't even have time to resist it. Her head was pierced through by Zhang Ruochen. Blood splashed.

“No.”

Zhang Ruochen realized that something was wrong. He put his sword back, kicked his legs and bounced back.

Even though Zhang Ruochen was exceptionally quick, he was still one step late.

Teng Snake Beast King's long legs became a snake tail, and her waist became the body of a snake, and her hands became black flesh wings. Her body quickly bulged and became a ferocious Teng snake more than a hundred feet long.

She swung her snake tail and whipped toward Zhang Ruochen, carrying saint light.

Zhang Ruochen used his sword to ward it off and resolve most of the power. He stepped three hundred feet back before he could balance himself again. His right hand was injured between his thumb and his index finger, where it started to bleed.

Teng Snake Beast King stood up, and she reeked of blood. She said with a cold voice, “My lower abdomen is not between my eyebrows. Even if you pierce through, you can only injure me. You can't kill me.”

Zhang Ruochen was indeed a bit disappointed for not being able to kill Teng Snake Beast King.

However, what Zhang Ruochen really wanted to do was to stop Teng Snake Beast King from leaving. Injuring her was enough to achieve that goal.

The eleven beast kings rushing back to Yingsha City didn't realize that Zhang Ruochen could catch up with them this soon and injure Teng Snake Beast King.

“Doesn't that Time and Space Descendant fear death? Does he really think that he alone is powerful enough to stop all the beast kings?”

Many beast kings felt speechless as they had never met such a dedicated human monk.

Zhang Ruochen performed Great Spatial Move, dashing toward the beast king at the front. He was standing in the sky, creating a space crack and slashing toward that beast king.

That beast king sensed the danger ahead of time. It stopped and dodged the attack.

Even so, the power from the space crack still scared that beast king. It was only a couple of feet away from the space crack, and it almost died.

Zhang Ruochen kept making attacks, and whoever was at the front would be hit by the space power or the time sword techniques.

Two beast kings couldn't dodge the attacks in time, and they got severely injured.

Although beast kings were still rushing toward Yingsha City, they were heavily slowed down.

It would originally take them fifteen minutes to make it back to Yingsha City.

Now, it might take them more than an hour to get back.

“Let's team up and kill Zhang Ruochen, then we'll go back to Yingsha City.”

“This sucks! We're being chased by a young human being! Let's kill him first!”

...

Zhang Ruochen seized this chance as all the beast kings were trying to get back to Yingsha City.

The beast kings were naturally furious. Instead of hurrying on their way, they stopped and took out their ancestral devices to lock the space within a hundred square miles around them.

“I’ll lock the space. Let’s see how long you can last.” Teng Snake Beast King made a cold voice.

Zhang Ruochen was standing in the spacious desert. He was holding a sword in one hand and the heir stamp in the other, gazing into the distance at the ancestral devices.

He could feel a suffocating and deadly power exerted on him.

“It’s been an hour. How are things in Yingsha City going?”

Zhang Ruochen decided to try his best to win another fifteen minutes.

“Hou!”

A deafening dragon sound blasted in the clouds, after which Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon emerged, flying slowly above Zhang Ruochen.

“No! Those beast kings have frozen the space using their ancestral devices. Zhang Ruochen won’t be able to make it out. If Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon makes an attack at Zhang Ruochen, he’ll have to resist it directly.”

All the human monks were worried.

They knew that the biggest trump card Zhang Ruochen had was the power of space.

Only with that power could Zhang Ruochen obstruct all the beast kings as a mere level-seven half saint.

But now, he had lost the power of space already. Nobody knew how many attacks from Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon Zhang Ruochen could ward off.

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon said, “Honestly, the power you showed is indeed amazing. Even during the Taigu era, I haven’t seen a human being as strong as you. If we were at the same level, I don’t think I’d be your match.”

“Really?”

Zhang Ruochen took a deep breath, trying to look calm.

Actually, Zhang Ruochen had been injured when he tried to stop all the beast kings. However, he tried to suppress his injuries completely as he didn't want to show his weaknesses.

He intended to look tough, so he needed to be like that all the way.

Which was why some heroes would still stand even after they were killed. Their bodies alone were enough to intimidate their enemies.

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon said, “However, you don't have the chance to get to my level anymore. You can die now!”

“Hong Long.”

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon pressed down, and all the Holy Qi gushed away. Even the space structure was cracked.

The attack from the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon was already as powerful as that of a lower-class saint.

“Sword Five.”

Zhang Ruochen infused his Abyss Ancient Sword with Holy Qi inside him.

Inscriptions emerged from the sword, and black sword light gushed out like a pillar, surging to the sky.

All the one thousand inscriptions were triggered, and Destruction of the Thousand-patterns burst out.

“Hua!”

Zhang Ruochen merged with the Abyss Ancient Sword, and he had reached state of Human Sword. He stepped on the ground, turning into a light shuttle and clashing with the dragon claw falling from the sky.

Chapter 1093 - Ten Thousand Miles

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“Does he really think he can fight Lord Demonic Dragon with Destruction of the Thousand-patterns? Doesn't he know that the dragon claw of Lord Demonic Dragon is stronger than Thousand-pattern Saint Weapons?”

“Just wait and see. Lord Demonic Dragon will end his life with one hit.”

...

The beast kings knew how terrific Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon was. Within State of Saint, only creatures who were ranked top twenty on 'Half-Saint Rank' and 'Half-Saint Outer Rank' could fight it.

As for other creatures, it was amazing for them to resist its attack at full strength.

The beast kings all smiled as they could imagine the Time and Space Descendant smashed into blood mist.

Peng!

The sword light shuttle surging from the ground clashed with the dragon claw that was as big as a palace. They were in a stalemate for a moment.

The sword Qi and dragon Qi spread everywhere, leaving holes in the ground.

After a short while, Zhang Ruochen's sword light became bleaker. It dived and hit the top of a dune a thousand feet tall.

That dune caved in and formed a deep valley in the shape of a cone.

Zhang Ruochen knelt down deep in the dune. He supported himself with his left hand open. He held the sword handle with his right hand, and the blade kept shaking, making a humming sound.

There was some blood at the corner of his lips. He was obviously injured.

Impressive power. No wonder it's a hegemon level creature from Taigu era, Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon, Zhang Ruochen thought.

Zhang Ruochen confronted Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon because he wanted to see its real power.

Zhang Ruochen reckoned that he could only fight Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon directly when he became a level-eight saint. Even so, he needed some other special skills to level the playing field.

Actually, Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon was a creature from Taigu era. However, its ancestor had used a special technique to seal the dragon egg, and buried it under the ground so that it could absorb the essence from the world.

After millions of years, the dragon egg cracked, and Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon was born in a brand-new era.

Almost all the Taigu Remains had absorbed the chaos Qi when the Heaven and Earth were separated, and they had also absorbed the essence from Kunlun's Field. They were half-innate creatures, much stronger than acquired creatures.

As for Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, it was a pinnacle creature among Taigu Remains. No matter how hard acquired creatures refined themselves, they couldn't match him.

The heirs from the human race were able to contend with Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon all because of Empress Chi Yao, who gave them lots of rare saint herbs, and even divine herbs.

The Abyss Ancient Sword pierced through a scale on the claw of Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon in that clash, and a drop

of dragon blood dripped.

The power from the dragon blood was immense. It started to burn in the sky, turning into a gigantic ball of flames with a diameter of eight feet. It only lifted after it fell to the ground.

“You’ve mastered such an exceptional weapon that it can pierce through my dragon scales.” Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon was fascinated by Zhang Ruochen’s Abyss Ancient Sword.

Ever since Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon was born, the Abyss Ancient Sword was the first weapon that could break its scale.

Zhang Ruochen used the handle to help him stand up. He looked up at the sky, unyielding.

“If I kill you, I can erase a threat to savage beasts, and I can get a weapon that might grow into a divine weapon.”

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon was confident that it could kill Zhang Ruochen.

It could tell that Zhang Ruochen was severely injured, and it was only pretending to look chill.

It should be able to kill him within three moves.

“Are you really confident that you can kill me?”

Zhang Ruochen took a leap forward and rushed out of the valley, landing on the ground again.

“The space has been frozen by sixteen ancestral devices. Do you really think you still have a chance to run away?” Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon said.

Zhang Ruochen said, “Who said I’m running away?”

“Are you saying you have some other trump card? Actually, I don’t care what kind of trump card you have. I’ll kill you anyway.”

Before Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon finished speaking, an enormous dragon claw scratched down, and the energy ripples from this move were stronger.

None of the creatures thought Zhang Ruochen could resist that attack.

“Carnivorous Holy Flower.”

Massive amounts of holy Qi gushed out of Zhang Ruochen’s back, and then, a long green vine emerged from the holy Qi.

The vine of Carnivorous Holy Flower was as thick as a bucket, and there was metal luster on the vine. It was as sharp as a divine sword.

Pa!

The long vine whipped forward in the space, clashing with the dragon claw, knocking off three scales from the dragon claw, forcing Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon back to the clouds.

The force from Carnivorous Holy Flower was bizarre. It was a mix of death and vigor.

“How did this happen?”

All the beast kings at the periphery were shocked as they were curious what Zhang Ruochen had used to knock off the scales on Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon.

They saw a long green vine growing to the sky. At the top of the vine was a gorgeous flower with white light, which looked like a gigantic magic lamp floating in the sky.

The scene couldn’t be more bizarre. Nobody expected Zhang Ruochen to have such a fierce trump card.

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon flew out of the clouds in human shape. It looked serious and said, “Carnivorous Holy Flower is so amazing after blossoming. I’m curious, what kinds of techniques did you use to domesticate it?”

“I won’t tell you,” Zhang Ruochen said calmly.

Kui Bull Beast King yelled in the distance, “Lord Demonic Dragon, do you need us to help you suppress the Carnivorous Holy Flower with our ancestral devices?”

“No need. You guys just keep using the ancestral devices to freeze the space to prevent him from running away.”

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon was confident in its power that Zhang Ruochen was still not its match even if he had domesticated the Carnivorous Holy Flower.

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon took out dragon bones from its belly. Meanwhile, it kept infusing its dragon Qi into the dragon bones. After a short while, all the seven hundred dragon bones started to gleam.

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon was finally starting to get serious.

Peng Peng.

Dragon bones and the Carnivorous Holy Flower were fighting fiercely, and the space structure kept being shattered. There was black dust being kicked up in the desert.

Zhang Ruochen's original plan was to run away after stalling all the beast kings for fifteen minutes, yet he now found himself trapped in the battle.

Gradually, other beast kings joined the fight. They utilized their ancestral devices and hit them toward Zhang Ruochen so that they could finish the battle as soon as possible.

Zhang Ruochen immediately swallowed a drop of Day Spirit Dew to quickly recover the Holy Qi he'd consumed. He was holding the heir stamp. The emperor Qi coming out of the heir stamp condensed into a layer of solid body-protecting reticle.

Meanwhile, he was holding a sword technique with his other hand, using the Abyss Ancient Sword to fight back against the beast kings.

Zhang Ruochen wasn't confronting the beast kings head-on. Otherwise, he would've been killed several times already.

He was fighting and retreating at the same time. He moved among different spots so that they couldn't encircle him.

All the other three directions had been occupied by beast kings, so Zhang Ruochen had to retreat back to Yingsha City.

All the human monks had already gotten out of Yingsha City.

Some savage beasts rushed out of the city to chase after the fleeing humans while some stayed in the city to guard it.

“Look! Lord Demonic Dragon and all the beast kings are coming back!” a half-human and half-beast savage beast yelled.

Another level-six savage beast rushed forward and said, “Beast kings, the human monks have broken our encirclement and rushed out of Yingsha City, running northwestern...”

Peng!

Before that level-six savage beast could finish talking, a repercussion from the heir stamp crushed it into a lump.

Zhang Ruochen landed from the sky, standing beside the body of that level-six savage beast. He couldn't stop bleeding, and he was severely injured. He couldn't even stand straight.

Even though Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon was held up by Carnivorous Holy Flower, Zhang Ruochen still needed to fight more than ten beast kings. It was a miracle that he was still alive.

Zhang Ruochen performed Great Spatial Move, and he even used the saint decree, yet he still wasn't able to escape it.

Kui Bull Beast King had a mind power ancestral device, which was incredible and could cover an area of hundreds of square miles.

Whenever Zhang Ruochen performed Great Spatial Move, the mind power ancestral device would make mind power attacks. Although the mind power ancestral devices couldn't kill Zhang Ruochen, they could check him and prevent him from running away.

This was a dangerous situation Zhang Ruochen had never faced, as there was a chance that he wouldn't be able to make his way out.

No wonder both Chi Wansui and Beigong Lan were defeated. Those beast kings are indeed impressive, Zhang Ruochen thought.

‘Half-Saint Rank’ and ‘Half-Saint Outer Rank’ made by Saint Lady weren’t completely precise, but they had great reference value.

Most of the beast kings were on the ‘Half-Saint Outer Rank’.

Aside from those, Kui Bull Beast King was also a Taigu remains on ‘Half-Saint Rank.’ This was considerably weaker than heirs.

Zhang Ruochen had indeed underestimated their power at first.

“Now that those human monks have fled, that Time and Space Descendant has to die.”

All the beast kings were furious. If it weren’t for Zhang Ruochen, they would’ve killed all the human monks in Yingsha City already.

If they couldn’t kill Zhang Ruochen, other beast kings from Blue Dragon Void World would definitely make fun of them.

Beast kings kept walking out from the desert. They looked cruel, furious and frantic. They kept approaching Zhang Ruochen, wanting to tear him apart.

Even though he was trapped in such a dangerous position, Zhang Ruochen didn’t have any regrets. Instead, he became ferocious and swallowed three drops of divine dew at the same time. Masculine Qi gushed out of his pores and became fire. He yelled, “I’ll kill at least five beast kings before you kill me.”

Zhang Ruochen wouldn’t regret anything as long as he wasn’t guilty to his heart, even if he had committed heinous crimes. He would fight until he bled the last drop of his blood.

He was going against God’s will, so he had to pay the price.

Chapter 1094 - Kill a Beast King

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

After drinking three drops of sun energy dew and Holy Qi he consumed, he quickly recovered. Zhang Ruochen's mind and consciousness were full of vigor again.

All the beast kings were bummed. That Time and Space Descendant was obviously so injured that he might fall down at any moment. However, he was more aggressive and robust than everyone.

In the other direction, Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon finally managed to injure Carnivorous Holy Flower using seven hundred and twenty-eight dragon bones.

Carnivorous Holy Flower ran quickly with its root musts and retreated back to Zhang Ruochen's side. There were cracks on its vines, and the white flowers at the top of the vines were knocked off. All the petals fell on the ground.

Teng Snake Beast King stood near, turned back to the human shape and became a beautiful woman in black armor. She licked her mouth and said, "Zhang Ruochen, even if you domesticated Carnivorous Holy Flower, you're still no match for Lord Demonic Dragon."

"Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon isn't invincible. As long as I get more nutrients, I can totally match it."

Carnivorous Holy Flower was filled with pride. It didn't admit defeat.

Its hundreds of root musts grew quickly, and they looked like long snakes as thin as the hair of cows. They moved in the

sand tens of miles away.

“Chi Chi!”

All the rust moots pierced through the bodies of level-six savage beasts and half saints, absorbing the saint power from those bodies.

Under the nurturing of the saint power, the vines of Carnivorous Holy Flower started to glow again, giving off emerald light. At the top of the vines, flowers started to blossom, and the flowers became larger than before. The holy light from it became brighter.

Carnivorous Holy Flower didn't absorb enough nutrients right after it blossomed, so it wasn't at its best status before.

But now, it absorbed all the saint power from hundreds of level-six savage beasts and half-saint bodies. It was finally properly fed.

All bodies became drier, dry like mummies.

The force from Carnivorous Holy Flower became stronger.

Pa!

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon splashed out its dragon bones. They were combined into a bone whip, dashing toward Carnivorous Holy Flower.

Carnivorous Holy Flower emanated a trace of mind power, which gave out a tender voice. “Great! I'm going to eat a dragon today!”

Lightning engravings emerged on the surface of the vines, clashing with the bone whip.

And then, the vine grew rapidly, winding around the bone whip, extending toward the arm of Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon. The petals opened, trying to swallow it.

The battle between Carnivorous Holy Flower and Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon started again, shaking the space continuously.

Meanwhile, all the beast kings on the ground wielded their ancestral devices, trying to attack Zhang Ruochen.

“Ready,” Zhang Ruochen bellowed, wielding his Abyss Ancient Sword.

The black sword floated in the sky, and the powerful sword intent spread to a thousand miles away like ripples.

All the weapons around Yingsha City were shaking.

Thousands of weapons detached from the ground, flying toward Abyss Ancient Sword and merging with it.

The engravings on Abyss Ancient Sword became more and more thickly-dotted, and the light from the sword became brighter.

“It’s able to refine other weapons. That sword Zhang Ruochen has is indeed a divine weapon.

A beast king got greedy. A pair of giant wings grew from its back. It flapped its wings and flew up, approaching the Abyss Ancient Sword, trying to take it.

Zhang Ruochen pinched his fingers against each other into a sword technique, and he squeezed a word out of his mouth: “Die.”

Around two thousand inscriptions emerged from Abyss Ancient Sword, letting out Destruction of the Thousand-patterns.

And then, the sword hit toward that beast king like a trace of black light, carrying a cold wind.

That beast king realized that it was in danger. It immediately utilized an ancestral device, triggering the wild ancient force inside the device, trying to resist the attack from the Ancient Abyss Sword.

Both of them were Thousand-pattern Saint Weapons, yet the destruction triggered by two thousand inscriptions was way stronger than that triggered by one thousand.

At this moment, the Abyss Ancient Sword triggered two thousand inscriptions, so the destruction was more than twice as powerful than before.

Hong!

Abyss Ancient Sword hit the ancestral device, striking both the ancestral device and the beast king underground.

That beast king wasn't dead yet. It still had some life ripples.

This was the moment Zhang Ruochen was waiting for.

“Die!”

Zhang Ruochen rushed to its side at his fastest speed. He knocked twelve palm prints and disintegrated the body of that beast king.

Right before that beast king died, it performed its hidden technique and hit Zhang Ruochen in his chest. Zhang Ruochen's chest caved in and started to bleed.

Fortunately, Zhang Ruochen's body was sturdy enough to resist it, otherwise, he would've died with the beast king.

“Triggering two thousand inscriptions consumed sixty percent of my Holy Qi.”

Zhang Ruochen felt a bit tired. He then took out two drops of day energy dew and swallowed them.

It was easy to absorb the strength from day energy dew. They could be transformed into Holy Qi in the shortest time possible, making up for the consumption from battles.

Zhang Ruochen was able to use Destruction of the Thousand-patterns seven to eight times after triggering one thousand inscriptions.

However, he could only use Destruction of the Thousand-patterns once after triggering two thousand inscriptions.

The more inscriptions he mobilized, the more Holy Qi he needed to consume.

The power exerted by the Abyss Ancient Sword was impressive after two thousand inscriptions were mobilized. One attack was enough to severely injure a beast king.

That attack gave Zhang Ruochen a chance to kill the beast king.

Right after, the Abyss Ancient Sword refined that ancestral device. It then flew to the sky, absorbing other weapons and trying to increase the inscriptions in the sword to three thousand.

For any Thousand-patterns Saint Weapon, its power would be improved to a different level for every thousand inscriptions it obtained.

“He killed Loose Leaf Beast King.”

“We have so many beast kings attacking him at the same time, yet he still managed to kill a beast king. This is a shame to all of us.”

“No need to fear him. He’s now more injured than before. He’s not going to persist for long.”

...

The battle was tragic as Zhang Ruochen didn’t have any power to fight back. He could only keep retreating.

Even Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon wasn’t able to ward off the attacks from more than ten beast kings, not to mention Zhang Ruochen.

Eventually, the Abyss Ancient Sword successfully refined all the weapons around it.

There were now three thousand one hundred and forty-two inscriptions on the sword.

Zhang Ruochen reached out his arm and grabbed the space. Abyss Ancient Sword flew back to his hand.

At this moment, Teng Snake Beast King dashed toward Zhang Ruochen, performing a mysterious pace that formed twelve phantoms.

“Last strike. Time for you to die, Zhang Ruochen!”

The eyes of Teng Snake Beast King started to gleam with green light. Scales the size of nails grew on her long arm, hitting toward Zhang Ruochen’s head.

Ten circles of black holy light were formed around her arms, gathering toward her finger tips, making thunder sounds.

Teng Snake Beast King used her divine power, which made her attack thirty-five times stronger than herself, and she wanted to kill Zhang Ruochen with this strike.

Though Zhang Ruochen was severely injured, he didn't try to dodge it.

“Hua!”

A thousand inscriptions emerged on the body of the Abyss Ancient Sword, giving out circles of black destruction.

The sword shadow blinked and swept across Teng Snake Beast King.

Teng Snake Beast King yelled in agony and bounced away. Sword Qi cut off her arms, and blood gushed out of her arms.

Zhang Ruochen wouldn't let her get away as he had severely injured her.

Zhang Ruochen caught up with her, raised his sword and slashed her again.

The edge of the blade scratched the left ear of Teng Snake Beast King, cutting off almost half of her head.

“You'll die painfully, Zhang Ruochen!” Teng Snake Beast King yelled in a shrill voice. She turned back to her true self, which was a black python. She dived into the sand.

Teng Snake Beast King couldn't be more terrified, and she just wanted to get away.

Hong Long.

Zhang Ruochen who was chasing her slapped on the ground. A dragon shadow hundreds of feet long dashed underground.

A blood-curdling scream burst out from the desert. Teng Snake Beast King got struck again.

Although more than ten beast kings were chasing after Zhang Ruochen, trying to save Teng Snake Beast King using all their attack techniques, Zhang Ruochen completely ignored those attacks. He used his mind power to freeze the space around Teng snake, opening a space crack.

Pu Chi!

The space crack dived three thousand feet underground, cutting Teng Snake Beast King in half.

Finally, the life force on Teng Snake Beast King was gone completely. She died underground.

Another beast king dead.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen paid a huge price killing Teng Snake Beast King as he withstood the attacks from more than ten beast kings.

He had ten more wounds on his body, and his body looked rugged. Countless bones were broken, and almost half his blood was bled.

Zhang Ruochen still hadn't fallen. He held the long sword in his hand, fearless.

The death of Loose Leaf Beast King and Teng Snake Beast King intimidated all the beast kings.

They were supposed to be at such an absolute advantage that they could easily kill the human being in front of them.

None of them had expected this to happen.

The man looked so fragile that he could fall at any time, yet it seemed that he would never fall.

“Who wants to die next?”

Zhang Ruochen looked pretty sharp. He glanced around the beast kings, and he looked as aggressive as before.

“You're dying, yet you still dare be so arrogant? Let me kill you!”

Mud Deer Beast King could tell that Zhang Ruochen was already feeble, and he was just trying to look tough.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen behaved too ferociously before, so it didn't dare approach him. Instead, it only made remote attacks.

Mud Deer Beast King raised his two front iron heels. He then stepped on the ground rapidly.

Followed by a rumbling sound, piercing cold air gushed toward Zhang Ruochen along the ground. There was a smashing sound in the cold air, and more than two hundred ice blades raced in the mist.

A long shadow flew toward Zhang Ruochen from afar, forming a circle of broken phantoms.

All the phantoms merged with each other, forming the body of Huang Yanchen.

Huang Yanchen was standing straight. She looked cold and wielded the divine sword in her hand, forming large scales of sword shadows, crushing all the ice blades.

The beast kings were all dazed as another fearless human being showed up.

Chapter 1095 - Every Dog Has Its Day

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen stared at Huang Yanchen's back with mixed feelings. He said, "You shouldn't have come here."

Huang Yanchen took two steps back, standing right beside Zhang Ruochen, glaring at the beast kings vigilantly in front of her, "Since we're together, we'll be together forever. Not even death can separate us."

"If that's the case, I'll kill you both."

Two green light pillars gushed out of the antlers of Mud Deer Beast King, surging to the sky and forming a cyan cloud.

There were layers of cyan clouds, covering the sky above Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen, as if they were cyan threads sheltering the sky and land.

The light pillars that gushed out of the antlers had the power of light, resonating with the rules in Blue Dragon Void World.

The beast kings immediately retreated after seeing this scene as they knew that Mud Deer Beast King was about to perform an impressive divine technique. They would be in danger too if they were too close to it.

Just as they stepped away, they also stationed themselves at several other spots, encircling Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen to prevent them from running away.

"Apocalyptic Demonic Light," Mud Deer Beast King yelled.

The cyan clouds spun in the sky, forming a whirlpool.

Fierce wind started to blow several hundred square miles around them. Green mist pressed toward the ground from the sky, making humming sounds.

A cyan light pillar shot down from the center of the whirlpool, hitting the ground.

The energy ripples emanating from the cyan light pillar were as powerful as Destruction of the Thousand-patterns. If it hit the ground, it would level a city with guarding formation as ordinary guarding formation wasn't powerful enough to ward it off.

“Black Tortoise Holy Divination.”

Huang Yanchen waved her divine sword, and the phantom of a black tortoise as large as a mountain showed up, covering her and Zhang Ruochen.

There was an ancient divination mark on the back of the phantom of the black tortoise.

The divination mark kept spinning, and a cyan light pillar surged to the sky.

Hong Long.

Two cyan light pillars clashed.

Two powerful forces neutralized each other, and they formed a layer of green air waves three thousand feet above the ground.

“I can't believe she's able to resist the Apocalyptic Demonic Light from Mud Deer Beast King. That woman has some power,” Shizu Bird Beast King said.

Although Mud Deer Beast King was weaker than Golden Scorpion King and Kui Bull Beast King, it was definitely ranked top five among the beast kings.

Apocalyptic Demonic Light was an innate saint spell inherited from the ancestors of mud deer. It was invincible, and it was not an easy task to ward it off.

The so-called ‘innate saint spells’ were some of the most powerful saint spells passed on by the ancestors of savage

beasts. They were branded in their bloodline so that they could be passed down for generations.

The descendants of that race inherited the bloodline of their ancestors, and when they reached a certain level, the refined techniques of saint spells would emerge in their heads.

“That woman is extremely powerful. Mud Deer Beast King might not be able to take her down soon. Let’s team up again and kill them both,” Kui Bull Beast King said.

The beast kings breathed out Holy Qi from their mouths, infusing it into their ancestral devices so that they could end the fight as quickly as possible.

This was a war that should’ve been ended a long time ago.

Another unexpected thing happened. A golden Emperor Qi spread from the west.

The Emperor Qi was potent, swallowing the cyan clouds. Each curl of Qi was in the shape of a golden dragon, making earth-shattering dragon sounds.

An heir stamp was covered at the center of Emperor Qi. That heir stamp was as large as a small city.

The heir stamp fell from the sky, hitting toward several beast kings.

And then, Beigong Lan descended, stepping on a divine sword. She said, “Sister Huang, leave with Zhang Ruo Chen now. We’ll take it from here.”

Another heir stamp arrived from another direction. It also triggered Emperor Qi and knocked away three beast kings.

Chi Wansui walked out from the heir stamp, standing there like a God of War, wearing armor.

Chi Wansui was indeed weaker than Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon. However, he was more than enough to fight ordinary beast kings.

After leading the human monks out of the encirclement, Beigong Lan and Chi Wansui came back.

Chi Wansui shot Zhang Ruochen a cold glance and said, "What you did today is impressive, and it's worth me saving your life. However, after today, the grudges between us will still need to be settled."

Zhang Ruochen put on a faint smile without exchanging any courtesies.

Today, all the human monks had to unite against their mutual enemies. That was the only way for them to survive.

After today, Zhang Ruochen and Chi Wansui would still be foes, and there was no way that they would become friends. Nothing could ever change that.

There weren't many people who were pure evil. It was subjective as people belonged to different teams.

There weren't many people who were good. People teamed up because they could share benefits.

The fact that Chi Wansui came back to fight the beast kings meant that he wasn't totally evil. He still had some principles, and he deserved the identity of an heir.

Huang Yanchen also wielded her heir stamp, making the most powerful attack and knocking away Mud Deer Beast King.

As Chi Wansui and Beigong Lan held the beast kings up, Huang Yanchen opened a saint decree. She took Zhang Ruochen and flew away.

Mud Deer Beast King was hit by the heir stamp, which caused a bloody hole on its head. It was injured and struggled to get up.

"She's also a human heir."

Mud Deer Beast King breathed out a golden antler, enduring the pain on its head.

The golden antler was an ancestral device of the mud deer race. It could trigger the power of an ancestor so that the user could be as fast as a saint.

"Don't you dare run."

The golden light emanating from the antler enveloped Mud Deer Beast King. It raced toward Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen like a golden light shuttle.

Huang Yanchen triggered her saint decree four times. After flying four times, she made it tens of thousands of miles away.

They stopped flying as Huang Yanchen found that Zhang Ruochen was severely injured. If he wasn't treated properly, his life might be in danger.

Actually, Zhang Ruochen had already hit his limit. If Huang Yanchen hadn't gotten there in time, the attack from Mud Deer Beast King would have killed him.

Zhang Ruochen fell into the arms of Huang Yanchen as he couldn't go on anymore.

“Don't fall into sleep! If you do, you might never be able to wake up again.” Huang Yanchen pressed the back of Zhang Ruochen, infusing him with her Holy Qi.

Zhang Ruochen was pale like a piece of paper, but he was still smiling. He said, “I was finally saved by others for once. I feel fantastic! How will I fall asleep? Haha!”

Zhang Ruochen kept coughing after talking.

Even though Zhang Ruochen was almost coughing his heart out, he didn't cough out any blood, as there wasn't much blood in his system already.

“Stop flaunting your power. Do you really think you're unkillable?”

Huang Yanchen looked concerned.

Zhang Ruochen stopped smiling and said, “If I don't push my limit, how will I know my potential? I need to work harder as the situation is just going to be worse. If I can't get stronger, those around me will keep dying. I don't want to see that day come, and besides, if I don't put in enough effort, how can I catch up with her? How am I supposed to kill her?”

Huang Yanchen looked confused, yet Zhang Ruochen was too weak to sense that.

She asked, “Who is she? The empress?”

Zhang Ruochen nodded and closed his eyes.

“Don’t close your eyes. Keep talking to me about what happened between you and the Empress.” Huang Yanchen took out a Withered Pill. Zhang Ruochen took the pill, and Huang Yanchen kept infusing him with Holy Qi.

She was worried that Zhang Ruochen might be put into a slumber.

Zhang Ruochen recovered a bit after absorbing the efficacy of the Withered Pill. He then kept talking to Huang Yanchen about what had happened more than eight hundred years ago.

After a near-death experience, Zhang Ruochen started to open up to Huang Yanchen about the stories and people he was the most reluctant to share.

Mud Deer Beast King caught up with them shortly after Zhang Ruochen started sharing.

“You can’t run anywhere.”

Mud Deer Beast King arrived like a golden light shuttle. It hit the ground, which sank.

Huang Yanchen stood up, flexed her fingers and held the heir stamp on her palm, staring at Mud Deer Beast King.

Zhang Ruochen supported his body with his arms and sat up. He smiled at Mud Deer Beast King. “I can’t believe you’re stupid enough to walk into your own death.”

“My own death?”

Mud Deer Beast King guffawed, “You can’t even stand up, yet you still dare be so arrogant? That woman is not my match at all.”

“What about me?”

Blackie raced toward them, landed on the ground and retracted its wings.

Zhang Ruochen had sensed Blackie a long time ago, so he knew Blackie was nearby.

Other than Blackie, there were others coming to help.

“And me, Sikong One.”

“Me, Sikong Two.”

“And me, Sun Dadi. We should be more than enough to fight you.”

Sikong One, Sikong Two and Sun Dadi all performed physical techniques and raced toward Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen from the horizon, encircling Mud Deer Beast King.

“You, you humans... You’re sly! If you dare, then fight me one to one.”

Mud Deer Beast King realized that it was at a severe disadvantage now. Its face turned green and it kept stepping back.

Where did all these human great beings come from? How did I become the one who was encircled?

Every dog has its day, but this just happened too quickly.

Chapter 1096 - Qingtian Crown Prince

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Mud Deer Beast King wanted to get away by using the saint power from its ancestral device, and it was knocked down by the heir stamp used by Huang Yanchen.

The more Holy Qi there was in the heir stamp, and more powerful the stamp became. When the strength of an heir stamp was fully utilized, it could suppress a lower-class saint, not to mention a beast king.

Huang Yanchen consumed more than half of her saint power, so she didn't strike again.

Sikong One, Sikong Two and Sun Dadi rushed forward, encircling Mud Deer Beast King, performing their saint spells, attacking the beast king.

Mud Deer Beast King was indeed forceful, yet it didn't have the speed and the ability to transport like Zhang Ruochen did, so he couldn't resist the attacks from several great beings.

After a short while, it was suppressed.

"If I'm going down, you're going down with me."

Mud Deer Beast King clenched its teeth, mobilizing the Holy Qi inside it, which raced toward the lower abdomen. It tried to explode itself so that everyone would die along with it.

"I'm not going die with you."

Sikong One wielded a golden Buddhist staff like a golden pillar, hitting the head of Mud Deer Beast King.

The golden Buddhist staff was not only an ordinary Buddhist device, but a special one passed to Sikong One from Master Yintuoluo. There was mysterious power of saints and Buddha inside that staff. Even beast kings with divine beast bloodline couldn't resist it.

“Peng.”

A cracking sound came from the head of Mud Deer Beast King, and three blood-red inscriptions emerged. It staggered a bit before falling onto the ground.

“Did it die?”

Blackie rushed to the side of Mud Deer Beast King like a trace of black light, checking its force.

Sikong One took back its staff and laughed, “I only knocked it unconscious. I never kill.”

“Thank God you didn't kill it, otherwise, we would've lost another beast king. Its cultivation is already at pre-saint level, and it has the bloodline of divine beasts. It's still mighty.”

Blackie nodded. It inspected the head and the belly of Mud Deer Beast King, after which it confirmed its cultivation level.

As long as it could put the beast tamer inscriptions into Mud Deer Beast King, Blackie was certain that it could use it as a fighting beast for itself.

Worried that other beast kings might catch up with them, they took the unconscious Mud Deer Beast King and left immediately.

...

...

The power of Carnivorous Holy Flower was at the same level as Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon. Neither of them could defeat each other, so Carnivorous Holy Flower got away easily.

It dived into the ground after getting away.

Carnivorous Holy Flower travelled tens of thousands of miles far before it found Zhang Ruochen. It drilled out of the

ground, rushing into his body.

“Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon is terrific. It’s only a level-nine half saint, yet it’s already powerful enough to kill a saint. If it passes the first trial of pre-saint, even I won’t be able to fight it.”

Carnivorous Holy Flower transmitted its voice into Zhang Ruochen’s head.

Zhang Ruochen sat on the ground, healing himself while talking to Carnivorous Holy Flower. He said, “When will your power be strengthened again?”

“This is the first time I blossomed, and my flowering period is around one year. My power won’t improve drastically within this year. In a year after I wither, I can absorb nutrients again, and my power will be improved.” Carnivorous Holy Flower said.

“It’ll take a year?” Zhang Ruochen frowned.

“That’s right. In a year, I can absorb nutrients again, and I can bear a divine fruit. As soon as the divine fruit matures, I can deal with Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon even if it passes all three pre-saint trials.” Carnivorous Holy Flower was confident in itself.

Zhang Ruochen needed consider another problem, “How many nutrients does Carnivorous Holy Flower need to bear a fruit and for the fruit to mature.”

It took an entire saintly source for it to blossom, and it also absorbed hundreds of bodies of level-six savage beasts and half saints. It would only take more nutrients for the holy fruit to mature.

Also, it would take Carnivorous Holy Flower a year for it to bear fruits.

Zhang Ruochen opened Universe Spiritual Map, walked in and brought Carnivorous Holy Flower in a medicine garden.

And then, Zhang Ruochen temporarily planted Carnivorous Holy Flower in this medicine garden so that it would only take it around a month to pass the flowering period.

When Zhang Ruochen walked out of the Scroll World, he found that Blackie and Zhao Shiqi were standing beside Mud Deer Beast King, carving beast tamer inscriptions on the giant body of the beast king.

The two claws of Blackie gave out black light, and Blackie was carving on the eyeballs of Mud Deer Beast King. It said, “The body of Mud Deer Beast King contains some blood of divine beasts. Ordinary beast tamer inscriptions are not going to work on it as they’ll be melted by the blood of divine beasts. Only the beast tamer inscriptions I give you are powerful enough to control a descendant of divine beasts.”

Zhao Shiqi stood aside, taking notes of the beast tamer inscriptions taught by Blackie, looking humble.

“The beast tamer inscriptions you have are indeed extensive and profound, teacher Blackie. Do you have the beast tamer inscriptions that can control Taigu remains?”

Zhao Shiqi bowed with an admiring smile on his face, calling Blackie his teacher.

Blackie shot a glare at Zhao Shiqi and its large and round eyes. It said, “Taigu remains are all exceptional creatures, having absorbed chaos Qi. Do you really think it’s that easy to control them? You haven’t even mastered the inscriptions to control descendants of divine beasts, not to mention Taigu remains.”

Zhao Shiwu feared that he wouldn’t be able to learn more sophisticated beast tamer inscriptions if he upset Blackie. He immediately said, “You’re right, teacher Blackie. I won’t aim too high from now on.”

There were different levels of ordinary savage beasts, from level one to level nine.

Above the ordinary savage beasts were descendants of divine beasts and Taigu remains.

There was an upper limit to the power of ordinary savage beasts.

For example, a level-six savage beast would stay at half-saint level forever, no matter how hard it refined itself, unless it

could find some rare divine medicine. Only after that it could reach level seven and become as powerful as a saint.

As for descendants of divine beasts and Taigu Remains, they didn't have any upper limit. Just like human beings, they could reach the state of saint, or even the state of Saint King if they put enough efforts.

Also, even at the same level, the power of descendants of divine beasts and Taigu Remains was much stronger than that of ordinary savage beasts.

Mud Deer Beast King had the bloodline of divine beasts. It had only passed two pre-saint trials, yet its power was at the same level as human saints, as it could match ordinary savage beasts who had passed three pre-saint trials.

Mud Deer Beast King was a formidable one among all the beast kings as it was in 'Half-saint Outer Rank'.

Blackie went on, "There are, of course, methods to control Taigu remains. I'm skilled enough to know some inscriptions, and I know ways to suppress Taigu remains."

Zhao Shiqi went on to butter Blackie up.

Huang Yanchen walked toward Zhang Ruochen while staring at Blackie and Zhao Shiqi. She said, "You should just stay in Scroll World. I've got the outer world covered."

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and said, "Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon didn't kill all the human monks, and it lost several beast kings and a large number of savage beasts. It'll definitely get furious, and it might take revenge on us soon."

"You're afraid that it might find us here?" Huang Yanchen asked.

Zhang Ruochen said, "There are some gifted savage beasts. Some of them have acute hearing, some of them have great vision, and some of them have astounding olfactory. Although we think that we've erased all the traces, we might still leave some clues."

Zhang Ruochen thought that they had to be extremely cautious, otherwise, they would be trapped in a near-death

situation again.

Just as Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen were talking with each other, they heard a cold voice coming from Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, “Listen up, all the creatures in Ingmar Desert, do everything you can to find Zhang Ruochen, Time and Space Descendant. Anyone who provides me with accurate clues will be awarded a saintly source.”

Sky-swallowing used a sound wave technique, and the sound it exhaled formed circles of sound waves, spreading so far that those ten thousand miles away from it could still hear it.

After a short while, all the creatures in Ingmar Desert, savage beasts, immortal vampires and mutant creatures, were all simmering with excitement.

Ingmar Desert was very large. It was hundreds of thousands of miles long and wide, and all kinds of powers gathered here, including humans, savage beasts, immortal vampires, ghosts and aboriginals from Blue Dragon Void World.

There were almost one hundred savage beast clans, and only thirty of them joined the war in Yingsha City.

There were all kinds of power in Ingmar Desert. All the powers and clans competed with each other, trying to seize the valuables in the desert. Places outside Yingsha City were also overwhelmed by wars.

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon was generous enough to make a saintly source a reward for the traces of Zhang Ruochen, which made exhilarated all the creatures in Ingmar Desert.

It was a saintly source, which stood for an opportunity to become a saint! Everyone wanted that.

There was an oasis planted with golden trees thirty thousand miles away from Yingsha City.

Three layers of invisibility formation were deployed around the oasis.

It looked like a barren desert from the outside, but within the invisibility formation was a prosperous land where there were

vigorous creatures. It was definitely a great place to refine.

There were lots of immortal vampires in the oasis, amounting to a thousand. All of them were powerful beings, and they all had bloody flesh wings on their back. It was a considerable power.

A handsome young man was sitting under a golden tree, holding a book. He looked elegant.

He had pale and smooth skin. He closed his book using his long fingers, giving a faint smile, “Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon is stingy. It only wants to reward one saintly source for those who find Zhang Ruochen.”

He was the crown prince of Qingtian clan, one of the top ten clans of immortal vampires. He was ranked seventh on ‘Half-saint Outer Rank’.

Three immortal vampires stood around the crown prince.

One of them was a bony old man, one of them was a hot woman, and one of them was a bulky man with two heads and four arms.

“Zhang Ruochen has a lot of valuables himself. That heir stamp is priceless, much more valuable than some saintly source.” That bony old man smiled and said.

That old man was called Zuotian. He was a blood saint in Qingtian clan. He used a special ancient method to suppress his cultivation under the state of saint. He had immense fighting power, superior to ordinary beast kings. He was a force to be reckoned with.

Qingtian crown prince shot a glance at that bulky man with two heads and four arms. He asked, “Has ghost fog come back from following Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen?”

Chapter 1097 - Ghost Fog

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Many immortal vampires for Qingtian Crown Prince and Qingtian Tribe hid in Yingsha City. They were the backstage manipulator.

They were part of the war between savage beasts and human monks.

However, the way they were involved was very subtle. They were like a ghost, manipulating everything in the dark.

They were partly responsible for the falling of Yingsha City wall.

That was the immediate cause of the first war between humans and savage beasts, which led to countless deaths on both sides.

A while ago, immortal vampires who hid among the savage beasts gave a suggestion to Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon that it hold thousands of human monks captive to force the human monks in Yingsha City to fight the savage beasts.

The immortal vampires hiding in Yingsha City inflamed and agitated people, which led to the third war between human beings and savage beasts.

That war also killed all the human monks in Yingsha City. If it weren't for 'Zhang Ruochen', Qingtian Crown Prince's plan would have succeeded.

"Use the savage beasts to annihilate human beings." This was what Qingtian Crown Prince had been doing all along.

After Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen escaped Yingsha City, Qingtian Crown Prince sent Ghost Fog to follow them to

find where they were so that he could catch them all in one draft.

Ghost Fog was one of the four masters working for Qingtian Crown Prince. He was ranked ninety-second on 'Half-saint Outer Rank'. He was skilled in hiding, tracking and assassination.

Ghost Fog used his assassin skills to injure a human saint before getting into Blue Dragon Void World.

Although he didn't succeed, he managed to leave without being caught, not even by that human saint. It could be told the power of that immortal vampire.

The bulky man with two heads and four arms had a loud voice. He said, "Ghost Fog isn't back yet."

Qingtian Prince frowned. Though he had faith in Ghost Fog, he was still worried. He said, "Chang Wan, follow the signals left by Ghost Fog and see how it's going. Be quick."

"Yes."

The bulky man with two heads and four arms made a bow with hands folded in front.

And then, he opened the bloody wings on his back and flew to afar like a red cloud.

Blood Saint Zuotian stood behind Qingtian Crown Prince. He said with a hoarse voice, "Are you worried that Ghost Fog might be in danger, your highness?"

"Haha."

They heard a laughter like silver bells.

A beautiful wearing a silver-white armor and said, "Even Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen cooperate, they won't be able to detain Ghost Fog. Besides, Zhang Ruochen is severely injured, and he can't do anything. What kind of dangers will Ghost Fog be in?"

The bewitching woman was beautiful. She had bright and spotless skin. She was exquisite.

However, she was wearing in a sexually-provoking way. The silver-white armor only covered some of the most private parts of her body.

White skin was revealed where there was no armor covering it. Her breasts were half shown on the chest area, and her buttock was also half revealed. She was a girl of sensual charm. Every human monk would feel horny when they saw her.

She was the wife of Qingtian Crown Prince, and she was also a princess from Qitian Tribe.

Princess Yanxin.

Qitian Tribe was the top tribe among immortal vampires. It had immense power. Princess Yanxin herself was a top-tier great being, and several powerful beings followed her. Because of her power, even if Qingtian Crown Prince didn't like some of her customs and behavior, he couldn't control her at all.

The royal members of Qitian Tribe and Qingtian Tribe got married for every generation, so even Qingtian Crown Prince was a talented man with great potential, there was nothing he could do to change that.

As long as Princess Yanxin didn't do something way out of line, Qingtian Crown Prince would tolerate her forever.

Blood Saint Zuotian knew that Qingtian Crown Prince didn't like Princess Yanxin, so he changed and topic and asked, "How's your cultivation, your highness?"

"I have already sanctified one hundred and twenty-two apertures. I only have twenty-two more to go before I can become a saint." Qingtian Crown Prince said.

Qingtian Crown Prince obtained great power by refining his body. However, the more powerful he got, the more resources he needed to sanctify an aperture as it was more difficult to sanctify apertures.

Those without great perseverance would never be able to sanctify their bodies.

Half Saint Zuotian was moved. He said, “With your power, you should at least be at top three on ‘Half-saint Outer Rank’, instead of number seven.”

“People change, but the rank doesn’t.”

Qingtian Crown Prince’s eyes were gleaming. He looked up at a saintly fruit grown in the golden tree. He smiled and said, “If it matures faster, it’ll help me sanctify one more aperture.”

“Zhang Ruochen also has lots of valuables. If we can catch him, we can help you sanctify at least ten apertures.” Blood Saint Zuotian said.

Qingtian Crown Prince nodded and said, “Zhang Ruochen is exceptional. My sixth brother is a genius, yet he still got killed by Zhang. We need to be extra careful if we want to confront him. At our first strike, we need to crush him hard enough that he doesn’t have a chance to fight back.”

‘Sixth brother’ Qingtian Crown Prince said was the sixth prince of Qingtian Tribe, who was also the fourth disciple of Sword Saint Xuanji, Feng Han.

What Qingtian Crown Prince didn’t know was that the second prince of Qingtian Tribe was also killed by Zhang Ruochen.

Qingtian Crown Prince ordered Blood Saint Zuotian to lead a group of immortal vampires to head toward Yingsha City to collect as many human and savage beast bodies as possible.

The blood in the bodies could help immortal vampires greatly improve their cultivation.

The more dead bodies of humans and savage beast were there, the more powerful immortal vampires could become.

...

...

Zhang Ruochen had a smile on his face and said, “Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon is so furious that he’s willing to reward a saintly source for traces of me. It seems to have lots of saintly sources.”

Saintly sources were valuables even saints would treasure, and they were willing to bleed to get saintly sources.

Qing Mo walked toward Huang Yanchen and whispered at her.

Huang Yanchen frowned. Her eyes glinted aggressively.

“What happened?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Huang Yanchen said, “Qing Mo sensed an immortal vampire near us, and he’s trying to find us.”

“Qing Mo is better sensing things than us?” Zhang Ruochen was confused.

Even though he was severely injured and wasn’t in a good mental state, normal great beings couldn’t escape his sensing. Why couldn’t he and Huang Yanchen sense him?

Was Qing Mo too perceptive?

Huang Yanchen explained, “Qing Mo is a saint vine, so it has great sensing ability. Any danger within a hundred square miles around her could be perceived by her.

Qing Mo had been growing for more than forty thousand years. She had been countless dangers, and she was way better at sensing than human monks.

Zhang Ruochen nodded and said, “Around the tent was an invisibility formation arranged by Blackie. Nobody can see through it within State of Saint.”

“Which means our enemy has been following us, tracking the traces we left. And he’s only nearby.” Huang Yanchen said.

Zhang Ruochen looked down.

He had long suspected that the war between savage beasts and human beings were provoked by others. That immortal vampire verified his assumptions.

Zhang Ruochen called Sikong One, Sikong Two, Blackie and Sundi, giving each of them a task and arranging traps. He told them to kill that immortal vampire at all costs.

Ghost Fog did follow the traces left by Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen, and he was close to them. However, the

invisibility formation set up by Blackie was too brilliant for him to find the particular location of Zhang Ruochen.

After half an hour, Ghost Fog got into a killing formation set up by Blackie.

“Hong Long Long.”

Inside the formation was lightning and thunder, and all the terrific attacking techniques burst out, enveloping Ghost Fog.

Before Ghost Fog could get out of the formation, he was already severely injured.

His body was burnt black, and there were not flesh and blood intact. He looked like a human-shape charcoal.

Blackie walked out and sneered, “The killing formation set up by me is powerful enough to severely injure a lower-class saint. I can’t believe you can escape the formation. Impressive.”

“Damn it.”

Ghost Fog glared at Blackie, disintegrated his body and turned into a cluster of black mist, rushing underground.

“No! This guy has some special skills. He’s great at Invisible Concealing Art. Let’s strike together to kill him.” Blackie squalled, waved its claws and hit toward where the black mist withered.

And then, Sikong One, Sikong Two, Sun Dadi and Huang Yanchen all made attacks, destroying the ground and turned it black.

However, they didn’t find the body of Ghost Fog.

Blackie sighed and said, “I should’ve been more careful! Normal monks can’t successfully complete Invisible Concealing Art. That immortal vampire is definitely on ‘Half-saint Outer Rank’.”

Qing Mo said, “He’s Ghost Fog, who is ranked ninety-second on ‘Half-saint Outer Rank’. Only Ghost Fog has such brilliant invisibility skills and concealing art. Ghost Fog is a master

from Qingtian Tribe. If he showed up here, that means the crown prince from Qingtian Tribe is also nearby.”

Zhang Ruochen didn't join the fight. He stood afar and said, “We have to leave.”

It was not an easy job to find a safe place to inhabit in Ingmar Desert.

Zhang Ruochen thought of the blood-red Gobi he unintentionally trespassed. It was the center of Blue Dragon Void Space, and there were lots of space cracks and chaos zones.

Even if Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon and Qingtian Crown Prince found that place, Zhang Ruochen and the others could also leave using transfer formation.

Zhang Ruochen got back into Scroll World to recover after bringing everyone to the blood-red Gobi and settling down. He needed to get back to his prime state as soon as possible.

The situation in Blue Dragon Void World was unfavorable to Zhang Ruochen. Qingtian Crown Prince and Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon were like two mountains, giving him mountains of pressure.

Only after he reached a different level could he change the situation.

If Zhang Ruochen became a level-nine half saint, he could totally be proactive instead of trying to hide all the time.

Power.

He needed to improve his power.

Chapter 1098 - Launch An Attack

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen was severely wounded and needed at least two days to recover with the help of the Withered Pill.

Zhang Ruochen decided to meditate in seclusion in the following days to improve his cultivation.

I've cracked the 36 apertures in my chest. After I finish refining the divine blood, or the Divine Dew of White Tiger, I will sanctify my apertures. Once I've sanctified all my 36 apertures, my body will become stronger.

Either refining divine blood or the Divine Dew of White Tiger could exercise his body and sanctify his apertures. But the outcome might be different.

There were strong divine power and blood Qi contained in the divine blood.

Refining divine blood could not only sanctify the apertures, but also absorb the understandings of deities to improve his own cultivation.

Comparatively, the power contained in the Divine Dew of White Tiger was purer than that in the divine blood. Although it could only sanctify apertures and exercise his body, it was much easier for him to absorb.

I have to improve my cultivation as soon as possible. I'd better refine divine blood.

Zhang Ruochen took out a jar of divine blood and placed it before him. White Holy light came out from his hands. He

poured the Holy light into the wooden jar.

Zoom—

Almost 1000 drops of divine blood flew out of the wooden jar, giving out extremely strong Qi. They hung over Zhang Ruochen's head, like sparkling blood stars.

The blood light given out from the divine blood had slices of extremely thin threads, which spread up to connect with other drops of divine blood and covered the space in the area of 300 meters in diameter.

The threads were actually the rules contained by the divine blood.

Because of the very complicated rules, monks could improve their cultivation after refining the divine blood.

Zhang Ruochen used the Sixth Layer Play of the Emperor Ming Nine-sky Scripture to open all his 100,000 pores and to breath in and out the power given by the divine blood.

Now Zhang Ruochen was only at the primary stage of the Seventh Level Half-Saint and was full of potential.

Three months had passed in just a blink.

The 36 apertures in Zhang Ruochen's belly and waist had all been sanctified and connected with the 36 apertures in his arms to become a cycle.

Zoom.

After the blood flowed quickly for a circle, all 72 apertures in his belly, waist, and both his arms gave out white light.

I've sanctified 72 apertures out of 144 apertures of the human body. Even if I didn't use Holy Qi, I could fight ordinary Ninth Level Half-Saints with my bare hands.

Zhang Ruochen's clothing had already been burned down. His upper body and fit figure of noticeable, but not overly strong, muscles could be seen.

The light given off from his back, chest, belly and both arms connected together to become a strange pattern.

It had cost Zhang Ruochen more than 2000 drops of divine blood to sanctify the 36 apertures in his chest and belly. And his cultivation had been directly improved to the Seventh Level Half-Saint.

Were it not for the gap between the Seventh Level Half-Saint and the Eighth Level, taking in such a huge amount of divine blood could help him reach the Eighth Level Half-Saint.

Now he was confined to the state of Seventh Level Half-Saint and was burning like a furnace. The power inside his body found no outlet and had to jostle around to expand his body to the limit, as if his body was about to explode.

He must take an Eighth Grade Divine Origin Pill to reach the Eighth Level Half-Saint in this case. By cracking his state to resolve the exploding power inside him.

Of course, there was another way, which was to crack the barrier of the state through a fierce fight in order to reach the Eight Level Half-Saint and consume the violent power inside him.

Both ways were to crack his state.

But the former was gentler, the latter was more radical, which needed the constant stimulation and suppression to crack the shackles of his state.

Since I don't have the Eighth Grade Divine Origin Pill, I have to choose the latter. Zhang Ruochen said to himself.

Fight.

He must fight.

To fight, he must choose a very powerful opponent. Otherwise, it wouldn't be enough to push him.

After a cautious thought, he finally decided to choose the Crown Prince from the Qingtian Tribe as his whetstone to the Eighth Level Half-Saint.

After half an hour, Zhang Ruochen walked out of the Universe Spiritual Map with Qingmo. They went to the outer area of the blood-red Gobi.

Other monks stayed in the Scroll World to practice and improve their cultivations.

Qingmo had a pretty face and was about the age of 10. She looked like a little girl who was waiting to blossom.

Fear showed on her white face. She asked with worry, “Lord Zhang, are you really going to find the Immortal Vampires of the Qingtian Tribe by yourself? Isn’t it too dangerous?”

“I wouldn’t go if it were not dangerous.”

Knowing his journey would be risky, Zhang Ruochen appeared to be calm and smiled at ease.

If it was not dangerous, how could he force himself to reach the Eighth Level Half-Saint?

Actually, anything could be risky. It depended on whether the thing was worthy enough for you to take the risk.

Apparently, to reach the Eighth Level Half-Saint, it was worthy regardless of the risk.

For a long time, the Immortal Vampires had hidden in the dark and intensified the conflict between human and savage beasts to collect endless blood of the highest quality.

Why should they take advantage of it?

Zhang Ruochen made up his mind to launch an attack on them. Although he couldn’t touch the Qingtian Tribe on his own, Zhang Ruochen would at least force them to come to the light and stop them from taking advantage.

Qingmo lowered her head and bit her lips. She said, “There are many powerful figures in the Qingtian Tribe. Even an ancient sect wouldn’t dare to attack them. We two are going to die there, aren’t we? It’s too dangerous, let’s return! If the princess knew that I had taken you to the base of Qingtian Tribe, she would definitely kill me.”

Zhang Ruochen was surprised. He stopped and stared at Qingmo.

Qingmo saw Zhang Ruochen’s eyes and looked away immediately. She was a little diffident and said, “Lord

Zhang...What...What's wrong?"

Zhang Ruochen was confused and said, "You are a 40,000-year-old Saint Vine of Qingmo and your cultivation is higher than that of Senior Sister Huang. Although she's the one who has brought you to the Kunlun's Field, you shouldn't be so scared of her. Aren't you equal?"

It was known that a Saint Vine of Qingmo that had lived for 40,000 years had the cultivation no less than a lower saint.

Even if Qingmo didn't have contact with people and was timid, she didn't have to fear a Half-Saint.

Qingmo's fingers kept stretching her clothes and was extremely nervous. She murmured, "I'm not afraid. I...I just think that she should be worried about us taking the risk."

"Why should she know it if neither you nor I tell her about it?" Zhang Ruochen laughed.

Qingmo had a sharp intuition to detect the slightest trace. Zhang Ruochen could only find the base of the Immortal Vampires with her help.

Qingmo didn't let Zhang Ruochen down. In one day, she had found the oasis where the Qingtian Tribe chose to hide themselves.

The formation masters of Qingtian Tribe had arranged a giant Concealing Battle Formation to envelop the whole oasis.

Even Zhang Ruochen could only find the traces left from the arrangement after he approached the oasis.

"Zhang Ruochen, there is an Attack Formation arranged inside the oasis. It's very dangerous...Let's go back!" Qingmo was a little afraid of accidents.

Zhang Ruochen asked, "Since you can see through the inscriptions of the Attack Formation, can you crack it?"

Qingmo nodded and then shook her head.

"What do you mean?"

Zhang Ruochen was puzzled, not knowing whether she could crack it or not.

Qingmo nodded at last, and said, “I have a special fire to cook food and to burn the inscriptions of battle formations. I can directly vaporize the inscriptions.”

She paused and added, “In theory I can do it. But I’ve never tried before.”

Zhang Ruochen always regarded Qingmo as less stable than Blackie. He feared that she would go wrong at a critical moment, so he asked, “What fire?”

Qingmo reached out a little white hand and spread open her fingers. A cloud of green fire appeared in her palm.

When the fire appeared, Zhang Ruochen was scared stiff and took a step back.

The temperature wasn’t high. But it still made people feel terrified.

“Wuliang Divine Fire.”

Zhang Ruochen was shocked and looked at the innocent girl before him again.

It was said that the Wuliang Divine Fire could burn saints and melt Thousand-pattern Saint Weapons. It was surely a rare kind of fire.

It was shocking to see that a seemingly weak girl had mastered such terrible fire and taken it into her body.

Adding to Zhang Ruochen’s confusion, she only used the Wuliang Divine Fire to cook.

Since she had the Wuliang Divine Fire, it would be easy for Qingmo to crack the Attack Formation in the oasis.

Actually, Zhang Ruochen could crack it with his spatial power. But once he fell into it, anything could happen to him and he might not have time to cope with it.

Qingmo stayed outside the oasis and could help him at critical moments.

Now in the oasis, all important figures of Qingtian Tribe gathered under an old Gold Tree to discuss important issues.

Prince Qingtian sat at the top. He was tidy and handsome, looking royal and graceful.

Only a truly powerful figure had such a look.

Princess Yanxin, Blood Saint Zuotian, Chang Wan, Gui Wu and other Ninth Level Half-Saints all stood beside Prince Qingtian.

None of them were weak. They were all influential figures in Kunlun's Field. And yet none of them dared to look at Prince Qingtian.

Prince Qingtian's strength was so terrible that it was one or two levels above theirs.

Prince Qingtian looked at Gui Wu first, and said, "Gui Wu, have you recovered?"

"Taking in the Saint Blood Pill rewarded by Your Highness, I have fully recovered and improved my state." Gui Wu was very respectful to Prince Qingtian. He held his fists and bowed to his front.

Then Gui Wu added, "Although I have failed the mission, I've found out something about Zhang Ruochen. There are at least four powerful figures at the state of beast kings around him. He must have a powerful force."

Brilliance came out from Prince Qingtian's eyes. He said, "Could he be the Crown Prince of the Sacred Central Empire from 800 years ago? Has he collected his old subordinates to his side?"

The Immortal Vampires had deep hatred against the Sacred Central Empire. It was Emperor Ming who had refined the Immortal Vampires on an isolated island for 800 dark years.

Hearing Gui Wu's words, Prince Qingtian was very concerned.

Princess Yanxin's fingers touched her long red hair and laughed seductively. "If he were the Crown Prince of the Sacred Central Empire, wouldn't it be better? I can capture him to suck up his blood, take his Five Elements Chaotic Body and God's Destiny. Hehe."

The voice of Princess Yanxin was beautiful and seductive.

Those powerful Immortal Vampires there looked at her beautiful face, curved figure and white skin, hearing such a tempting voice, and were all aroused. Evil fire was lit in their lower bellies.

Chapter 1099 - Zhang Ruochen is Here!

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

It was no secret that Zhang Ruochen had the Five Elements Chaotic Body and the God's Destiny. It had shocked the forces before.

Immortal Vampires surely could take the ability of the man when they drank his blood.

It was fair to say that any strong young talent's blood was very precious to Immortal Vampires, and was comparable to a human-shaped saint herb.

Chang Wan's eyes opened widely like wine cups, especially his two blood-red pupils. He said in a low voice, "It's a shame that Zhang Ruochen has disappeared and can't be found."

"If his traces are found, I will be the first one to fight him and chop off his head to give it to Your Highness and the Princess," said a Ninth Level Half-Saint Immortal Vampire.

All Immortal Vampires felt regret; if Gui Wu hadn't exposed himself, they might have already gotten Zhang Ruochen's blood. A cup of it would have improved their bodies greatly.

But now it was too late to say things like that. Zhang Ruochen had disappeared. Half of the living creatures in the Ingmar Desert had searched for him for several days and found nothing.

Boom.

A loud sound was heard from the side of the oasis.

The earth underneath the Immortal Vampires made a violent shake.

Then a giant handprint flew to the oasis. Behind it was a green dragon's shadow, which had destroyed the Concealing Battle Formation enveloping the oasis.

The more than dozens of kilometers long oasis showed up completely.

The destruction of the giant handprint was so terrible that it had pushed down a large range of Gold Trees in the oasis. In just a minute, golden leaves were all over the space, whistling.

At the same time, dozens of powerful Immortal Vampires screamed while they were thrown back.

Only 8 Immortal Vampires at the state of Half-Saint barely survived. Other Immortal Vampires at the Fish-Dragon Realm all exploded and became bones.

The Immortal Vampires who had followed Prince Qingtian in the Blue Dragon Void World had at least the cultivation of Ninth Change of the Fish-Dragon Realm and would be likely to become Half-Saints with high grade blood.

“Who's there?”

Prince Qingtian's eyes were bright like fire. Flames came out from his pupils.

Chi chi.

Two scarlet red light columns of fire flew out from his pupils to more than dozens of kilometers away to attack the young intruder.

The apertures of Prince Qingtian's eyes had been sanctified. As long as the apertures were open and blood Qi of his whole body poured to there, the light projecting from his eyes would be enough to cause the destruction of Saint Spells.

Seeing that Prince Qingtian had used the Holy Eyes of Fine Fire, all Immortal Vampires showed fear and retreated, in case their bodies were penetrated by the fire.

Bang!

To their surprise, the fire failed to hit the young man but was reflected onto the base of Immortal Vampires.

The destruction of the fire was terrible. It hit the ground and cracked the earth, leaving two giant pits more than 30 meters long.

Rocks and soil melted around the giant pits.

A dozen Immortal Vampires failed to dodge and had been turned into dust.

How could it happen?

People looked there and saw a translucent round light shadow, whose diameter was about 9 meters, looking like a giant mirror.

The fire was reflected from it once it hit on it. Then it flew a different way.

“This is the Time and Space Descendant, Zhang Ruochen. He used the spatial power to twist the space, and moved Your Highness’s attack toward another direction,” said Gui Wu.

Gui Wu sensed fierce spatial waves from Zhang Ruochen.

Prince Qingtian closed his eyes to put away the Holy Eyes of Fine Fire at once, in case he would cause more damage to Qingtian Tribe.

Dozens of kilometers away, Zhang Ruochen put his hands away. The round light mirror disappeared right away to blend with the surrounding space.

The method he’d just used was the latest spatial art called the “Spatial Mirror.”

In fact, the spatial mirror was not a powerful spell. It was just a part of the Spatial Twist.

Spatial Twist was the base. As Zhang Ruochen improved his cultivation, his spiritual power became stronger and his control of the space had been improved greatly.

To make a special platform out of the twisted space would form a spatial mirror.

Any attack which landed on the spatial mirror would be refracted or reflected. Of course, if the power was strong enough, it could also go through the spatial mirror.

All Immortal Vampires in the oasis were shocked. They had been regretful that they couldn't find Zhang Ruochen, but now Zhang Ruochen paid them a visit, himself.

“He looks handsome and attractive.”

Princess Yanxin pressed his red lips and put on an enchanting and beautiful smile. Her eyes turned into the shape of crescents, showing great interest in Zhang Ruochen.

Or, she was quite interested in Zhang Ruochen's blood.

Gui Wu and Blood Saint Zuotian appeared to be very cautious. They let their spiritual power out to detect the outer area of the oasis immediately.

To their disappointment, they didn't find any powerful humans other than a girl.

Maybe the powerful humans had used a special method to hide themselves?

They didn't believe that Zhang Ruochen could have come by himself. There must be many powerful humans in the outer area of the oasis, who might have surrounded them already.

Zhang Ruochen stepped into the oasis and stood on the golden leaves on the ground. He said, “Prince of Qingtian Tribe, you are really calculating. You have collected lots of high-grade blood from the fight between humans and savage beasts, haven't you?”

There was a giant blood pond in the base, like a small lake.

All blood inside the pond had been collected from Yingsha City. The worst portion of it was the blood of the Heavenly Realm monks. And there was also some blood from Half-Saints.

More than 100 Immortal Vampires were sitting at the side of the blood pond, taking in the blood Qi to improve their cultivations.

It was clear that Prince Qingtian had wasted no soldier to obtain a large number of resources. With the blood in the blood pond, the overall power of the Qingtian Tribe would be improved greatly.

Prince Qingtian still sat on the top, and said indifferently, “The fight between savage beasts and humans was always irreconcilable. What does it have to do with me? I’ve just sent members to collect the blood from the battlefield. That’s all.”

Prince Qingtian didn’t believe that Zhang Ruochen would have come here alone. He felt that there were many powerful figures hiding in the dark. So when he spoke, he tried to be careful and flawless, not wanting to turn himself into the target of humans and savage beasts.

Prince Qingtian just wanted to be a low-key profiteer, not wanting to show off or push himself to the toughest spot.

Zhang Ruochen came into the Golden Forest and walked to the blood pond.

“You’d better stop now. Otherwise, you will be killed,” scolded a ruthless Immortal Vampire Half-Saint with a low voice.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t respond to him, but sped up. Fire came out from his whole body. He patted to his front.

Those Immortal Vampires had already made many Combined Blood Formations. Some of them were made up of ten Immortal Vampires, some were made of 100 Immortal Vampires.

Boom.

The strong palmprint landed and split up a small Formation of ten people.

Even the formation made by ten powerful figures together couldn’t resist one strike of Zhang Ruochen.

Four Immortal Vampires of the Ninth Change of the Fish-Dragon Realm died pathetically onsite. Only six Immortal Vampire Half-Saints survived and ran into other Blood Formations with their wounded bodies.

Zhang Ruochen kept attacking and slaughtering, and rushed to the blood pond.

The blood pond must be destroyed, in case the overall strength of the Qingtian Tribe would be improved greatly.

Just in the oasis, the number of powerful figures of the Qingtian Tribe could compare with that of the union made up of Blood God Sect, Cai Family and Shangguan Clan.

If their strengths were improved further, it wouldn't be good for all living creatures in the Blue Dragon Void World.

In just several breaths, Zhang Ruochen had killed dozens of powerful figures of Immortal Vampires.

“Is Zhang Ruochen crazy? Does he want to challenge the whole Qingtian Tribe by himself?” An Immortal Vampire who was a Ninth Level Half Saint put on a furious face.

Princess Yanxin laughed softly. “Zhang Ruochen dared to challenge 19 beast kings by himself. What else would he not dare to do? What a domineering and charismatic man. His blood must be tasty.”

“Go to hell.”

A dozen Ninth Level Half Saints spread open their blood wings on their backs and turned into blood-red mist to dash toward Zhang Ruochen.

Prince Qingtian didn't move and stayed on a jade chair. He released all his senses to detect the outer area of the oasis.

According to his collected materials, Zhang Ruochen was not a reckless person. He couldn't attack the whole Qingtian Tribe without preparation.

It would be the same as hitting a stone with an egg. Strong as he was, he couldn't shake the foundation of the Qingtian Tribe and would be killed.

Zhang Ruochen launched an attack first. Maybe he just wants to disrupt my arrangement. The old subordinates might hide in the dark and be prepared to fight, Prince Qingtai thought.

In this way, Prince Qingtian didn't act in response. He wanted to figure out what Zhang Ruochen was going to do in the next moment and get prepared.

A dozen Ninth Level Half-Saints charged in four giant Blood Formations and ten small Blood Formations.

Adding a Ninth Level Half-Saint to the Blood Formation, the power increased greatly.

Even a small formation could fight several rounds with Zhang Ruochen.

The whole oasis was covered by blood mist. The deafening battle noises were heard constantly.

The fight inside the oasis was about that of saint fights, shaking the spiritual Qi violently and passing to more than thousands of kilometers away.

All forces in the area were disturbed.

“Why is there another big battle? Are there any new treasures found?”

Some savage beasts, human monks, ghosts and evil spirits heard the noise and raced to the oasis, wanting to find out what was going on.

Chapter 1100 - The One Behind It

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The oasis was a little lower than the horizon. There were three tall sand hills to it. They piled up, like a plateau.

The wind cracking noises sounded one after another in the air.

Savage beasts with wings, descendants of large sects and some human shaped ghosts and evil spirits came here constantly and landed on the ground.

Although all forces were enemies and would fight without any reason, they didn't fight now, but formed different camps and kept distance from each other. They all looked to the oasis.

The oasis was totally enveloped by the blood red mist, which kept rolling. Powerful waves gushed out from them with deafening noises, shaking the desert within about a 100 kilometer area like a giant blood monster.

The power was so terrible that no living creatures dared to go closer.

Blood Ants and Shizu Birds were the savage beasts that had arrived.

They had been searching for Zhang Ruochen's traces in the vicinity when they felt the strong battle wave. Shizu Bird Beast King and Blood Ant Beast King led lots of the Half-Saint beasts in their clans to come here immediately.

One Half-Saint Beast was a blood red ant of the size of an elephant. It said, "It's weird. I just passed this place not long ago, and I didn't see this oasis before."

“I flew over this place two days ago, and didn’t see the oasis either.” a Shizu Bird flew in the sky, speaking human language.

There were also some human monks who had passed here before and found no oasis.

Wan Huayu was in the Fire Phoenix Saint Armor, standing among the crowd. Because of her strong cultivation and pretty face, she was outstanding and quite noticeable.

She saw the difference and sniffed. “What a strong smell of blood. There could be many Immortal Vampires gathering inside the oasis. If I’m right, outside the oasis, there used to be a super Concealing Battle Formation, which had escaped the detection of all monks.”

“What? Lots of Immortal Vampires are hiding here? What do they want?”

“It’s less than 15,000 kilometers from here to Yingsha City. Their purpose might not be simple or kind.”

Some clever monks came to the realization immediately.

“Coveting gains ahead, unaware of the danger behind. While humans and savage beasts fight hard, they could collect endless high graded blood.”

“Worse. I suspect that Immortal Vampires might be the ones to have intensified the fights between humans and savage beasts. It should be known that after the fight several days ago, the number of dead pre-saints and beast kings reached dozens. Dead savage beasts and human monks were around dozens of thousands,” Wan Huayu put on a cold face and said coldly.

“I remember it! Before the fight, some people inside Yingsha City shouted that we should fight savage beasts with our lives to avenge our dead, and that we should die on the battlefield rather than hide in the city. I thought they were reasonable then, but now, I feel like they were agitating people on purpose, forcing the two Heirs to lead human monks to fight savage beasts. If Zhang Ruochen didn’t stop all beast kings later, perhaps all human monks in Yingsha City would have died out.”

All human monks onsite gave it a careful thought and sweated out of fear.

There were some clever savage beasts thinking about it that recalled the several weird places. It seemed that someone did manipulate them.

At first, savage beasts had made the plan to surround human monks inside Yingsha City and stop them from robbing the heavenly treasures.

But violent war burst out later. The number of dead savage beasts was two or three times more than that of human monks. Some clans even died out.

If they could choose not to fight, who wanted to struggle to fight?

It was surely irreconcilable between savage beasts and human monks.

But the feeling of being used enraged all savage beasts.

Were it not for this fight, they couldn't have found out the truth and would be hidden in the dark.

“Who is it fighting the Immortal Vampires inside the oasis?”

Both savage beasts and human monks were curious about it.

The pheonix-like eyes of Wan Huayu glowed with scarlet red flames like two saint fire flowers. She saw through layers of blood mist and finally saw the battle scene inside the oasis.

“It's him again?”

Wan Huayu was surprised and filled with disbelief.

Zhang Ruochen had just fought a dozen beast kings on his own and almost exhausted himself. Several days later, he came to challenge the whole Qingtian Tribe.

Was he Mars?

Wan Huayu respected this Time and Space Descendant very much. Each time he would make big news and great achievements. He was not just bold.

Other monks who could achieve one thing that he had achieved would be known by the world and remembered throughout history.

“Zhang Ruochen is like my father. I’m far from standing together with them!” Wan Huayu sighed silently.

Wan Zhaoyi had done many shocking deeds in the past, or he wouldn’t have earned the name “Wan Zhaoyi of the Nine States of the Central Region”.

The whole Nine States of the Central Region had only produced the legend of Wan Zhaoyi himself in the recent 100 years.

Whereas Wan Zhaoyi was with the imperial government and had to obey many rules and regulations, Zhang Ruochen had no restrictions and could do whatever he wanted to do.

Comparatively speaking, Wan Huayu admired Zhang Ruochen more.

Other human monks exclaimed after seeing Zhang Ruochen, “Zhang Ruochen is bold and has won my respect.”

Wan Huayu grasped the sword with her right hand, feeling the hot sword intention and strong will to fight.

She had almost died in the fight several days ago, but also gained much and improved her cultivation.

Now, without borrowing the power of the Fire Phoenix, she could fight beast kings.

“Your Highness, please don’t.”

The Old Man in Purple stopped Wan Huayu, not wanting her to take the risk.

“Zhang Ruochen saved me once in Yingsha City. I can’t stand by and watch him fighting Immortal Vampires on his own.”

Most of the human monks had escaped from Yingsha City and were grateful to Zhang Ruochen. They planned to stand out and give him a hand.

The Old Man in Purple tried to advise, “The Immortal Vampires gathering in the oasis come from Qingtian Tribe. I

believe Your Highness is clear how powerful a tribe can be. Us rushing to it will be like moths flying to the fire and won't make any difference. We should wait and see. When Zhang Ruochen retreats, we will help him and stop the Immortal Vampires chasing after him.”

Wan Huayu was a very clever woman. She thought carefully for a while and took the saint sword back.

With Zhang Ruochen's own power, he couldn't touch Qingtian Tribe. Wan Huayu guessed that Zhang Ruochen must have just used the fight to force the Immortal Vampires to come to the surface.

Now his plan had worked and he would soon retreat.

In the oasis.

Zhang Ruochen's Qi was extremely powerful. He raised his arms and the blurring shadows of green dragons and green elephants showed up, giving out roars of dragons and elephants.

Bang bang.

He displayed the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm and threw his palms quickly, bursting out the attack of almost 40 times.

It was known that Zhang Ruochen had reached the peak of Seventh Level Half-Saint and almost doubled his power, bursting out 40 times of attack. It was imaginable how terrible his power should be.

With three palms in a row, the blood red formation pattern was smashed.

Ten Half-Saints in the Formation retreated simultaneously.

Except for the Ninth Level Half-Saint, other Ninth Level Half-Saints all spit blood out of severe wounds.

It was horrible!

The Combined Battle Formation had combined the power of ten people, including a Ninth level Half-Saint.

Such a strong Blood Formation could compare with Pre-Saints and couldn't resist the three palms of Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen chopped askew with one hand. He hit the neck of a Fourth Level Half-Saint Immortal Vampire, chopping his body in two.

The life of Immortal Vampire Half-Saints was strong. As long as they could drink blood, they could be resurrected from being chopped in two.

But the strike of Zhang Ruochen had shattered his saintly source, leaving him no chance to come back to life.

Bang!

Puff!

...

Zhang Ruochen kept attacking and killed seven Immortal Vampires Half-Saints in a row. When he was about to kill the eighth, he was stopped by a giant Blood Battle Formation.

“Zhang Ruochen, you are too proud. I will crush you.”

A bawl was heard in the giant Blood Formation.

The light given out by the giant Blood Formation condensed into a 3-kilometer-tall mountain, making people feel pressed. Inside the formation, 100 powerful Immortal Vampires stood there. More than half of them were Half-Saints.

A leak of its power had crashed the space with thick cracks.

The power of such a Blood Formation was terrible. If it was in the Kunlun's Field, lower saints would have to dodge it.

But in the Blue Dragon Void World, Immortal Vampires dared not to display all their power, but kept it under control. Once the space broke, they would pay dearly.

An Immortal Vampire at the peak of Ninth Level Half-Saint standing at the center of the Giant Blood Formation transferred the power of the Battle Formation to lift the 3-kilometer-tall Blood Red Mountain shadow to crash into Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen didn't move, nor did he use the Void Ancient Sword. He just released the Space Domain to envelope the whole Blood Formation.

Crack!

Violent spatial wave passed from above the Giant Blood Formation. A hole of dozens of meters in diameter showed up immediately, cracking the space to form the chaotic belt.

Some Immortal Vampires were quick enough to run out of the Giant Blood Formation.

But dozens of Immortal Vampires didn't run fast enough and were taken in the broken space. Their bodies were ripped into pieces.

It was apparently unwise to use Combine Battle Formation to deal with Zhang Ruochen.